



ABSOLUTE CHOICE

BOOK 02

Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Absolute Choice

(Jue Dui Xuan Xiang)

(绝对选项)

by

Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

(梨落秋溪)

Synopsis

A world filled with heroes with superpowers. A world attacked by calamity fiends. A modern world filled with wonders and dangers.

Shi Xiaobai, a child from normal Earth, walked into such a world, proclaiming to be its king. But at the first signs of danger, he is forced to make a choice, one which he cannot refuse for time would repeat, making him face the choice again.

He is not humble nor is he modest, but neither is he delusional. Yet, the Absolute Choice seems to make fun of him. Will the joke be on him or will he laugh at his opponents? There will be many watching his escapades, and there will be some joining him in his adventures.

To see through the world and to grasp its truth, that is the destiny of the King.

Copyright by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rex @ [Wuxia World](#)

Translation Edits by Lucas @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or

dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101: This Problem Is Problematic!

As he looked at Shi Xiaobai raise the short knife up as though he was about to stab at his own heart, the Arch-Cardinal's eyes turned moist. Tears nearly streamed down.

He was just an ordinary lowly employee in San Francisco, United States. He turned numb towards his daily life as he was often blamed by his superiors. Back at home, he would receive the incessant nagging of his wife.

Occasionally, he would recall the touching moments during the beautiful period of back when he was in school. He regretted being playful and did not strive for excellence. As such, he would always be wasted after a meal. He would then hide in an alley to cry to himself, lamenting the distant dream that he had long abandoned.

He had once thought of committing suicide, hoping to be released from his mundane and uninteresting life that repeated itself day after day. However, he lacked the courage. It was not because he could not bear leaving his son that was becoming naughtier, nor was it because he would miss his wife that was becoming uglier. Only his self-indulging fantasies had kept him alive in his intolerable life.

He thought he would end up living the remainder of a decadent life of sorrow until he met the Bishop of Virtuality. From then on, his life changed completely. His laughable and lamentable fantasies turned true, giving him genuine satisfaction.

In the Church of Virtuality, he was just subordinate to one and had thousands under him. All the parishioners of the Church of Virtuality treated him with absolute respect. He could easily trample on the dignity of anyone.

He won the Bishop of Virtuality's favor and obtained the power to ravage through most of humanity. He could enjoy the struggles of so-called geniuses as he begun yearning to see geniuses despair. He reveled in destroying those elites who led an extraordinary life.

There was no doubt he felt bliss.

However, his bliss was coming to an end at this moment. Letting Xiao Xiao escape was already something he would be punished for. If Shi Xiaobai were to succeed in committing suicide, then he would receive a severe punishment.

Having disappointed the Bishop, he would lose his status as Arch-Cardinal. If he was lucky, he could become an ordinary practitioner who had to bear hardship without complaint. If he was unlucky, he might be assigned to become a suicide bomber in the next terrorist attack.

If Shi Xiaobai were to commit suicide, he would lose everything he had.

“No, no, don't die!”

“I implore you not to commit suicide!”

The Arch-Cardinal immediately raised his head and said with a sorrowful voice. It was rather touching.

A sacred and solemn voice echoed right after he finished speaking with a voice filled with grief and pain.

“Human, are you begging This King?”

The Arch-Cardinal was stunned as he looked down and saw the knife Shi Xiaobai had raised lowered back at his chest. It was as though he was in no rush to commit suicide.

The Arch-Cardinal slightly heaved a sigh of relief and pondered over Shi Xiaobai’s words. His frown gradually eased up.

With his identity, how could he humble himself to implore a scum at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?

That’s not right.

If this guy were to commit suicide, then everything he had would come to naught. Not only would he lose his status, he might even lose his life!

No, I have to humble myself and think of a way to stall him and make him turn careless.

The Arch-Cardinal spent three seconds to come to a conclusion before he said with eased eyebrows, “Yes, great King, how can the formidable you commit suicide? This lowly one begs you to live on!”

Shi Xiaobai sneered and said, “Heh heh, do you think a few flattering words can make This King become careless and forget your sinister goals?”

The Arch-Cardinal broke out into cold sweat. With the current situation, it was indeed true that he could not bluff his way through.

“For that, you got the right idea.”

Shi Xiaobai interrupted the Arch-Cardinal’s thoughts and said in all seriousness, “Hurry, hurry up and continuing flattering This King.”

The Arch-Cardinal’s brain froze immediately. All the words he was planning to say seemed stuck.

His brain could not keep up!

Shi Xiaobai suddenly said, “That’s right. Since your power is given to your by your whatever Bishop, can the whatever Bishop give anyone power?”

The Arch-Cardinal’s eyes lit up when he heard this. With a good

idea, he hurriedly said, “Yes, His Grace Bishop of Virtuality can bestow infinite power to anyone who obtains his favor. His Grace does not want to harm you because he has seen the greatness in you. He wishes to invite you to join the Church of Virtuality and give you the power that is worthy of your status!”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai hesitated as though he was in a dilemma.

The Arch-Cardinal immediately clenched his fists.

An opportunity. This was an opportunity!

“As long as you join the Church of Virtuality, with your esteemed status, you can definitely be on equal footing with His Grace. The world would be awed by you as you become a King of this world!”

The Arch-Cardinal felt as though this was a turning point in his future. Yes, no one could resist the temptation or power and status. This little kid who had not seen the world and indulged in fantasies would definitely lose himself in this fictional beauty. As long as he grasped the opportunity when Shi Xiaobai turned inattentive, he could let the stirring undead legion tear him to bits!

“Well, joining the Church of Virtuality seems like a pretty good choice.”

Shi Xiaobai began muttering to himself.

The Arch-Cardinal nearly burst out laughing as he found the appearance of bliss too sudden!

“But!”

The Arch-Cardinal’s eyes stared and immediately tensed up. There was still a but!

Shi Xiaobai solemnly said, “However, there is a good saying, ‘you never fear having a god-like opponent, you only fear having a pig-like teammate’. If the Church of Virtuality is filled with people with pig brains, wouldn’t This King be falling into a trap? So, This King plans on testing your intelligence. If even the Arch-Cardinal is an idiot, then there are probably not many in the Church of Virtuality that are clever, right?”

The Arch-Cardinal was infuriated hearing this but he did not dare reveal his true feelings. He obsequiously said, “That’s right, what you said makes absolute sense! I wonder how you plan on testing this lowly person’s intelligence?”

“Simple. You just need to answer a question.”

Shi Xiaobai said seriously, “Listen carefully. Once upon a time, a house had only two people, a hubby and his wife. One day, the wife was bathing in the bathroom when suddenly she heard a knock on the bathroom door. The question is, who was the one knocking on the door?”

The Arch-Cardinal was stunned. There were only two people, and one of them was bathing. The question was who was knocking on the door?

This question...was too f*cking simple?

“Hub...Hubby?”

The Arch-Cardinal found the question too simple and was afraid that there was a trick to it. As such, he whispered the simple answer with uncertainty.

“What? Louder!”

Shi Xiaobai placed his hands by his ears, as though he did not catch it clearly.

“Hubby!”

The Arch-Cardinal shouted his answer loudly.

“Did you not eat? Louder again!” Shi Xiaobai roared.

“Hubby!”

The Arch-Cardinal strained his throat and shouted again.

“Do you dare to act like a man? Shout the answer loudly one more time!” Shi Xiaobai shouted once again.

Shi Xiaobai was feeling excited. For a C-level reward, he had chosen the Absolute Choice of getting the Arch-Cardinal to shout “Hubby” three times. After thinking hard, he finally thought of this silly approach.

Now, the Arch-Cardinal had already loudly shouted “Hubby” twice. As long as he shouted this obvious answer once more, he would be able to finish this darn Absolute Choice!

However, the Arch-Cardinal did not shout “Hubby” a third time as Shi Xiaobai wished. At this moment, he was quite shocked as great wonder and fear consumed him.

He had already shouted so loudly, why was this bastard asking him to shout louder again?

This bastard was giving him a chance!

Hubby was not the answer!

That’s right. If the answer was Hubby, the question would be too simple. It could not even test one’s intellect. This question definitely had a twist that he had missed.

There was only the couple in the house, while the wife was in the bathroom bathing. Who could be at the door in front of the

bathroom?

The Arch-Cardinal pondered with a frown as he constantly racked his brain, as though he was considering an abstruse philosophical question. Countless brain cells died at that very moment.

“It’s not Hubby!”

The Arch-Cardinal’s eyes lit up as he excitedly slapped his palms and laughed with glee. He finally thought of the answer. This question that appeared simple actually had a catch. Indeed, it was a great test of intelligence!

The Arch-Cardinal’s mouth suffused a smile as he looked at Shi Xiaobai and said with full confidence, “The answer is not Hubby!”

“But...Old Wang from next door!”

...

Chapter 102: Eyes Have Changed

United States, Washington DC. Washington S-class Hospital Central, Intensive Care Unit, Ward 1014.

A beautiful blond girl lay on the bed and as she leaned on her pillow, she held a thick ‘Teachings of the Saints’ in her hands. She was reading it with great enjoyment.

A young girl dressed in a nurse uniform walked in with a thick book in hand.

“Miss Wendy, this is the book you want.”

The young nurse placed the book on the desk beside the bed and said with a good-fashioned smile, “You really can’t keep your hands off books twenty-fours a day.”

Wendy looked up from the book she had her head buried in. She smiled gently at the nurse before lowering her head down in silence. Quickly, she immersed herself back in the world of books.

The nurse was accustomed to this. However, when she glanced at the ‘Teaching of the Saints’ held in the girl’s hand and the ‘The Origins and Evolutions of Life’ on the desk, she found it quite odd.

One was a dull and uninteresting religious bible while the other was abstruse biological theory. She could even be addicted to reading such a book?

What an odd child.

The female nurse examined the beautiful girl's pretty contours and lamented how the heavens were fair but cruel. The heavens had given her perfect beauty but had taken away her ability to walk.

From the age of six, she had stayed in this ward for ten years. Almost no one came to visit her during the past decade, so other than having conversations with the intensive care nurses that were regularly, she spent most of her life in the company of books.

She must be very lonely, right? She was so lonely that she relished reading those boring books.

The nurse felt her heart ache, but she was also somewhat helpless. She wanted to be get closer to the girl, but if she took that additional step, she would lose her job the next day.

She just needed to regularly bring the girl books and her three meals to receive a wage ten times more than a typical nurse. Naturally, she did not want to lose this relaxed and high-paying job.

The nurse sighed before she turned and walked out the ward.

The girl was the only person remaining in the ward. Immediately, it turned extremely silent with only the sounds of

pages being gently flipped.

Suddenly, an extremely clear voice that could not be pinpointed resounded in the room.

“Found you.”

The girl’s hand which was flipping the pages turned slightly stiff.

.....

.....

“The answer is Old Wang from next door!”

The Arch-Cardinal’s tone was extremely resolute. Other than her hubby knocking on the door of a wife, the only other possibility was her lover. Since this question was bound to be odd, the answer definitely could not be hubby!

Hence, the person knocking on the door was definitely the secret lover of the wife, Old Wang, from next door!

The Arch-Cardinal silently bemoaned the complexity of the question after he figured out the twist. He was also impressed by his own intellect.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned and could not understand the Arch-Cardinal's logic and line of thought.

The answer was clearly hubby, why didn't he understand such a simple question?

“The couple has no neighbors!”

Shi Xiaobai gave it a thought and added some additional information to perfect his question.

The Arch-Cardinal immediately stared with widened eyes. No neighbors?

If there was no neighbor, and it was not the hubby, then who else could it be?

“I know, it's a calamity fiend!”

Calamity fiends could break through spatial dimension walls and enter the human world.

“Wrong!”

Shi Xiaobai stared angrily at the Arch-Cardinal.

The Arch-Cardinal was stunned.

That's right. Why would calamity fiends knock on the door. They could break through the door directly and then...

This question was really f*cking difficult!

After a minute, the Arch-Cardinal's eyes lit up and shouted, "I know, the answer is the Hero, One-Pun!"

Rumors had it that the Hero, One-Pun, had the ability to do instantaneous teleportation with 'God's Guardian'. As long as the wife was the target of protection, everything made sense.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned.

Why did uncle baldy appear?

He could only gnash his teeth and say, "Wrong!"

The Arch-Cardinal's breathing faltered as he figured out the reason for his mistake.

The God's Guardian would appear within a radius of one meter from the target of protection. If One-Pun used God's Guardian while the wife was bathing, then there was no need to knock on the door. He could directly...that scene was too perfect as he began fantasizing...

This wasn't right, and that wasn't right. What is the answer!?

...

...

After about ten minutes, the Arch-Cardinal, who had consciously eliminated the correct answer of “hubby”, naturally could not answer it correctly. His answers were denied again and again. Soon, the Arch-Cardinal's patience reached his limits.

“Are you mocking me? This question does not have an answer at all!”

The Arch-Cardinal yearned to tear the bastard in front of him apart.

“Are you dumb? You got the answer right from the beginning. Think carefully about your first answer. You must trust your first instinct!”

Shi Xiaobai found himself exhausted. He never expected for the Arch-Cardinal to be able to think of so many different answers to such a simple question.

“Hub...Hubby?”

The Arch-Cardinal muttered softly.

Hubby was really the correct answer?

“What? Say it louder!”

Shi Xiaobai pretended not to hear it once again. There was no other choice. The Absolute Choice required him to “loudly shout”.

“Hub...”

The Arch-Cardinal subconsciously shouted out half the word before suddenly coming to a stop. He finally realized that something was amiss.

“Your true goal is to actually get me to loudly shout the word ‘hubby’?”

The Arch-Cardinal’s expression gradually turned cold after he gave it a moment’s thought. All the suspicious points linked up to reveal the critical truth. The reason why the bastard suddenly did not choose to commit suicide, the reason why he pretended to show interest in joining the Church of Virtuality and the reason of asking this strange question...

Shi Xiaobai dryly smiled. He did not expect the Arch-Cardinal to be somewhat clever after all.

Alas, he had been seen through.

“That’s right. Resign yourself and obediently shout out ‘hubby’ and This King will join the Church of Virtuality.”

Shi Xiaobai decided to change his plan. Since his scheme had been uncovered, he could only coerce him to do it.

However, the Arch-Cardinal was completely dumbfounded hearing this. This bastard wanted him to shout “hubby”?

Holy shit! I’m straight!

That wouldn’t do. How could he be at the mercy of such a pervert’s domination?

As a man, regardless of how shameless he was, the Arch-Cardinal could not force himself to shout “hubby” to another man. The more he thought, the more annoyed he became. His eyes turned colder.

With his change in mood, the undead legion that surrounded Skeleton soldiers appeared like they could not control their urge to kill. The skeleton soldiers took a few steps forward while the skeleton archers nearly released their bony fingers that held their arrows.

“Don’t move. If you move, This King will commit suicide!”

Shi Xiaobai's shout jolted the Arch-Cardinal. He hurriedly calm the undead legion down. He was feeling extremely unpleasant. With this undead legion that could swarm the world, he could have torn this pervert bastard to shreds in a second, yet he was threatened by this pervert's suicide threat.

The Arch-Cardinal was adamant as he said, "Other than that request, I'll agree to anything. But it is impossible for me to shout that word!"

Shi Xiaobai was perplexed over how the Arch-Cardinal was willing to die than surrender.

Was shouting "hubby" that difficult?

Shi Xiaobai began to rack his tiny brain. In the present situation, violence was certainly unfeasible. He could use small tricks but now with the Arch-Cardinal seeing through his motives, he could only use other means...

During the moment Shi Xiaobai was in deep thought, a strange voice resounded in his mind.

"Who?"

Shi Xiaobai jumped in fright, but as he heard what the strange voice had to say, a weird smile appeared on his lips.

If what this voice said was true, then...

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's eyes changed.

The Arch-Cardinal also noticed the change in Shi Xiaobai's eyes. It was as if a cunning fox had transformed into a ferocious tiger. His heart thumped as a strong foreboding spontaneously arose in his heart.

Chapter 103: You Sure Were Naughty

Battle arena cafe, [Gaia] branch, viewing hall.

The gigantic screen was just snow white as it constantly produced the sound of static. After Shi Xiaobai said the three words, “Pig Slaughtering Knife”, the virtual system was crippled. The spectator mode system also broke down as a result.

Although the audience was unable to know what had happened in the virtual world, it was easy to guess what the outcome of the two people left in that virtual world would be. After all, the Arch-Cardinal had intruded into it and successfully crippled the virtual system. They could only feel sympathy and silently pray for them.

Most of the audience sitting in the viewing hall had already left by now. Not everyone would convert their compassion into action since for most of them, wasting their valuable weekend to stare at a white screen in the viewing hall was something unpleasant. They chose to learn of the final outcome through the news in the future.

The people who remained behind were fans of Princess Xiao Xiao, while a portion were DogLeading fans who were completely impressed by Shi Xiaobai moments ago. They were praying that the duo would eventually be rescued.

Despite there being no picture on the screen, or how the commentators fell into a prolonged silence without knowing what to say, they were still willing to wait there. They wanted to wait for the final outcome and for the screen to produce other colors

again.

As hardcore fans of God DogLeading, Wang Qiang and Kevin did not leave. Yang Yang, who had some form of relationship with Shi Xiaobai, naturally did not leave either.

In fact, in the viewing halls of the other branches, IAmNoPig, the three-man team and even WindWithoutTrace were sitting amongst the audience and did not leave.

Xiao Xiao, who had just awoken from her virtual immersion, had also rushed to a viewing hall the moment she awoke. She sat in the first row and stared intently at the snow-white screen. Although she knew that committing suicide allowed them to escape the virtual world, she was still worried that an accident would happen.

Everyone was waiting for the final result and for Shi Xiaobai's ultimate fate.

Suddenly, the snow-white screen flickered twice without any warning. The familiar yet unfamiliar colored scenes were suddenly restored.

In the screen, a dense legion of undead surrounded Shi Xiaobai. The Arch-Cardinal was standing in front of the undead legion, as though a simple order would allow him to tear Shi Xiaobai to pieces.

Shi Xiaobai was in dire straits!

Everyone's heart skipped at that moment. Although spectator mode had been restored, this situation that provided no means of escape was not something they wanted to see.

At this moment, a voice extremely familiar to the audience came from the screen.

“Obediently shout ‘hubby’. Don’t force This King to make his move.”

This voice was naturally Shi Xiaobai's, and the person he was referring to was apparently the Arch-Cardinal.

What did his words mean?

Threatening the Arch-Cardinal to shout “hubby” at him?

The audience was stunned as Xiao Xiao covered her mouth. Her eyes were filled with disbelief.

This scene was just f*cking wrong!

...

...

“Obediently shout ‘hubby’. Don’t force This King to make his move.”

Shi Xiaobai raised his knife and pointed at the Arch-Cardinal. His eyes appeared like a ferocious tiger.

The Arch-Cardinal felt an inexplicable sense of ominous foreboding, but also found the situation ridiculous and annoying.

There were thousands of densely-packed skeleton soldiers surrounding him and there were more than a hundred bone dragons circling the skies. Where did this bastard get the courage to threaten him?

Although he felt disdain, the Arch-Cardinal was still afraid of Shi Xiaobai’s Pig Slaughtering Knife. That knife technique seemed to be strong against his Barrier of Darkness. The defensive favor he was bestowed was only limited to the Barrier of Darkness. If Shi Xiaobai attacked him when he wasn’t paying attention, there was still a slight threat.

The Arch-Cardinal hesitated for a moment and used “Void Floating” to rise up and reached a height dozens of meters in the air, ensuring his safety.

“Oh? Do you think by flying into the sky, This King can’t stop you?”

Shi Xiaobai’s sarcastic voice was heard once again. “Hurry up and

shout ‘hubby’ or you will face the consequences.”

The Arch-Cardinal could not believe that Shi Xiaobai would still threaten him under such circumstances. He could not help but taunt, “Since you are so powerful, why don’t you follow me up in the sky?”

“Boom!”

Just as the Arch-Cardinal said that, Shi Xiaobai flew up into the sky abruptly like a jet rocket. He arrived immediately to the height where the Arch-Cardinal was.

The Arch-Cardinal gaped in shock.

He really f*cking flew?

However, amidst his shock, the Arch-Cardinal was still somewhat pleasantly surprised because after flying into the sky, Shi Xiaobai had arrived at a spot where numerous bone dragons encircled him. One of the bone dragons could even just reach out its talon to tear Shi Xiaobai to pieces.

“Rip him apart!”

The Arch-Cardinal hurriedly shouted, afraid that he would miss this golden opportunity.

“Roar!”

The bone dragons that filled the sky made deafening roars but they did not charge at Shi Xiaobai. Instead, they turned their heads to look at the Arch-Cardinal.

“What happened? Quick, rip him apart!”

The Arch-Cardinal shouted another two times, but he was surprised to realize that not a single bone dragon obeyed his commands.

The Arch-Cardinal’s ominous foreboding grew more intense. He hurriedly looked at the skeleton archers on the ground and shouted, “Bone arrow corp, hurry up and shoot. Shoot him to death!”

The moment he said that, all the skeleton archers suddenly changed directions and aimed at the Arch-Cardinal.

“Door of darkness!”

The Arch-Cardinal hastily waved his hand, but where was the door of darkness?

No, what had happened?

Why did this happen?

“Kneel!”

Suddenly, a commanding voice resounded from the sky.

The undead legions that filled the area immediately knelt down before the booming voice. One after another, the skeleton soldiers knelt down and hissed. The sound was deafening and it was an extremely spectacular scene.

The bone dragons circling the skies also descended and flew beneath Shi Xiaobai's feet. They held a humble posture in mid air as they issued gentle calls one would expect from a subject. It was as though they were bowing before a dragon king.

Shi Xiaobai's shouting of “kneel” caused the undead legion to respond in veneration.

“No, impossible!”

The Arch-Cardinal could not believe the scene in front of him. As he shouted “impossible”, he fell into madness.

“There is nothing This King can't do.”

Shi Xiaobai gently smiled as he raised his hand and pointed at the Arch-Cardinal. Every member of the undead legion looked up as intense killing intent locked onto the cassock that appeared

extremely lonely.

The Arch-Cardinal's courage cracked as he attempted to flee. However, as he was flying in mid air, his body suddenly stiffened, causing him to fall from the sky. His limbs flailed desperately in the air as though he was drowning. Following that, he began plummeting to the ground and was even shouting "save me" as he fell.

A bone dragon caught the Arch-Cardinal and then forcefully flung him to the ground. He plopped into the midst of the skeleton soldiers and was immediately raised high up by the skeleton soldiers.

Shi Xiaobai descended from the sky and landed in front of the Arch-Cardinal. Other than the skeleton soldiers holding the Arch-Cardinal up, the other skeleton soldiers, as well as the bone dragons that had landed, prostrated themselves as they trembled in fear!

The Arch-Cardinal was lifted high up and the cassock that hid his appearance fell off slowly. The face of an extremely ordinary-looking middle-aged man appeared. His expression was that of complete fear and was as wretched as one could imagine.

Shi Xiaobai took a step closer to the Arch-Cardinal.

"You sure were naughty. Wouldn't it be fine if you just obediently shouted 'hubby'?"

Shi Xiaobai's voice landed in the Arch-Cardinal's ears as though they were the evil cackle of a devil.

Chapter 104: You Might Not Believe It If I Told You

When Shi Xiaobai gave the order, causing the undead legion to prostrate themselves, it stunned the audience who saw this scene into silence.

When the Arch-Cardinal fell from the sky and was brought to Shi Xiaobai by the skeleton soldiers, the audience immediately applauded. Even the aloof Xiao Xiao could not help but pump her fist and shout “nice” in English.

However, when Shi Xiaobai said the sentence, “You sure were naughty. Wouldn’t it be fine if you just obediently shouted ‘hubby’?”, everyone was petrified. This...this was too f*cking hard core?

The Arch-Cardinal had already revealed his ugly middle-aged man face. The fantasies of some people imagining the Arch-Cardinal as a great beauty had been completely shattered.

It was unbelievable how harsh it would be on the ears when the Arch-Cardinal succumbed and said the word “hubby”.

Many people closed their eyes at that moment.

Well, you ask why didn’t they cover their ears?

This was because they were curious if the Arch-Cardinal would really shout “hubby”, but they found that scene revolting. They could only close their eyes and hear the voices, and then beautify the scene in their minds...

...

The Arch-Cardinal was already completely dumbfounded.

For an unknown reason, all the favor he previously enjoyed had suddenly disappeared. Having lost the Bishop of Virtuality’s powers, he was just an ordinary person at the fifth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. How could he have the courage to resist the massive undead legion?

Furthermore, the entire virtual system was apparently controlled by the pervert in front of him, preventing him from quitting the game. Under the current circumstances, he was just a prey waiting to be slaughtered.

For the Arch-Cardinal, dignity was nothing compared to his life. After being coerced by Shi Xiaobai numerous times, and how he was promised to be “spared”, he finally conceded. He was prepared to shut his eyes and shout the word.

Wasn’t it just taking the foe as a husband?

The Arch-Cardinal opened his mouth.

Just as the jarring scene was about to happen, something happened.

“Wait!”

The person who interrupted the Arch-Cardinal was Shi Xiaobai. A cold sweat droplet oozed out of his forehead as his intuition told him that if he made the Arch-Cardinal shout the word “hubby”, he would end up in a miserable state.

What was going on?

Shi Xiaobai vaguely sensed that someone was watching him from somewhere, as though the person was very dissatisfied with his actions.

Shi Xiaobai frowned and pondered.

What did he do wrong?

The Arch-Cardinal noticed Shi Xiaobai’s dilemma and hurriedly said, “Great King, how can this lowly person be worthy of your love. To call you “hubby”, this lowly person...”

“Hold on, when did This King ask you to call This King ‘hubby’?”

After a moment of hesitation, Shi Xiaobai suddenly understood what had happened.

Oh no, this was a huge misunderstanding!

“Ah?”

The Arch-Cardinal was stunned.

“You are mistaken. It isn’t what you think!”

After Shi Xiaobai said those words in a righteous manner, he immediately felt that displeased gaze on him reduce. Immediately, he heaved a sigh of relief. So that person watching him was disgusted at this bizarre misunderstanding?

Shi Xiaobai felt lucky. If not for that unknown hidden gaze, he would have been “passionately” called “hubby” by a middle-aged man. Just thinking of that gave him goosebumps.

Shi Xiaobai did not dare think any further. With a roll of his eyes, an idea came to him.

Shi Xiaobai scanned the skeleton soldiers kneeling in front of him, before he pointed to a skeleton soldier and said, “You, get up. Come here.”

The skeleton soldier immediately stood up and walked towards Shi Xiaobai. Under Shi Xiaobai’s guidance, it stood in front of the Arch-Cardinal.

Shi Xiaobai said in a formal manner, “This King shall specially betroth you to this skeleton soldier. From today, you will call him your hubby and stay loyal. Cough Hurry up and call ‘hubby’. Remember to do it loudly!”

Upon hearing this, the Arch-Cardinal stared with widened eyes of disbelief at the skeleton soldier who even had a few bones broken.

Shi Xiaobai said, “The bones of the condemned can eventually become a king. Your luck isn’t bad. This skeleton soldier will eventually become a Skeleton King!”

The skeleton soldier appeared to understand his words and raised his head to utter a strange growl.

“No, no...please, I beg of you...anything but this...”

The Arch-Cardinal was already beginning to stutter.

“Pa!”

The skeleton soldier suddenly reached out its bone claws and smacked the Arch-Cardinal in the face. It then turned to face Shi Xiaobai and respectfully growled a few times.

Shi Xiaobai seemed to understand the meaning behind the growls and solemnly nodded and said, “Yes, you can. Since This King has

already betrothed him to you, you can teach him a lesson as you please. This King permits your request!”

The skeleton soldier once again looked up and growled. It then walked towards the Arch-Cardinal and let out a “quacking”-like laughter.

The Arch-Cardinal was completely dumbfounded. How could these members of the undead have their own thoughts? This was clearly an act directed by that devil, but...

Upon seeing this, the audience was also dumbfounded.

This could also f*cking work?

Arch-Cardinal, you have encountered a true devil.

...

With the threat of receiving the skeleton soldier’s punishment, the Arch-Cardinal very decisively closed his eyes and shouted “hubby” three times. After shouting, he suddenly felt like he lacked the will to live on. He nearly burst into tears.

And as a result, Shi Xiaobai completed his Absolute Choice mission. A voice echoed in his head to indicate the completion of the mission.

“Absolute Choice completed. Congratulations on obtaining a ‘C-level reward’—Poison resistance greatly increased. Able to filter out 80% of toxins.”

The moment it said that, Shi Xiaobai felt as though his body was being scanned. It did not feel too painful but felt somewhat itchy.

Moments later, the itch disappeared and Shi Xiaobai exhaled. However, his mind turned active again. The Absolute Choice’s rewards were too good. If he could cultivate Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement realm, wouldn’t he get another B-level reward?

Shi Xiaobai never had any resistance when it came to rewards offered for quests in games. Sometimes, for a quest, he would be willing to run half the world map or even raid a boring dungeon numerous times.

“How can This King miss a B-class reward?”

Shi Xiaobai looked at the undead legion that filled the lands. Immediately he beamed. Apparently, cultivating Crab Steps wasn’t that difficult.

...

The next thing that happened made it unforgettable for everyone in the audience.

Shi Xiaobai had actually ordered the undead legion to frantically attack him!

For this, Wang Qiang and Kevin cheered.

God DogLeading is magnificent! God DogLeading is invincible!

The three-man team cursed.

The bastard was indeed crazy.

Biscuit and Sweets expressed that this was the first time they had seen such a wonder in the many years of being commentators. They could do nothing but be awed.

Xiao Xiao fell silent for a long while before she directly headed for the archery training room. She planned on entering reclusive training for about half a month.

Far away in the United States, Gino joked and said to Roy, “I think for the sake of our country, we should send a strike team to China to get rid of this kid.”

Roy did not laugh but instead said with fiery hot eyes, “His Crab Steps is about to reach the ‘Dominating Refinement’ realm. I’ve now seen China’s Yaris.”

...

...

Washington S-class Hospital Central, Intensive Care Unit, Ward 1014.

Wendy snapped the ‘Teachings of the Saints’ book in her hand and said softly, “Not a bad child, just a little naughty. However, he is resolute, brave, kind and has amazing talent. I look forward to his future.”

After saying that, Wendy turned to look at the uninvited guest who was sitting by the bed. It was a girl, or to be precise, she was a purple-haired girl wearing a gothic-style long dress.

Wendy could not help but admit that this purple-haired girl was very, very pretty. It was the most beautiful existence she had ever seen.

At the same time, she had to silently agree that this purple-haired girl was very, very strong. It was the most powerful existence she had ever seen.

This was an existence that was not supposed to exist.

“So this child...”

Wendy pondered over her words before asking, “This child is a

good seedling you are optimistic about? Is he your descendant? Or is he the successor you selected?”

The purple-haired girl faltered slightly when she heard this. She slowly blinked and rescinded her distant gaze. She then turned to look at Wendy. With a moment of hesitation, she suddenly gave a playful smile.

“You might not believe it if I told you. He is my...boyfriend.”

...

Chapter 105: Let Us Go Home

“You might not believe it if I told you. He is my...boyfriend.”

After Kali said those words softly, she suddenly felt embarrassed. Although she had lived for eons, she had never been exposed to the love between a man and woman. Saying the word “boyfriend” on a whim immediately made her turn embarrassed.

Her heart began to race slightly when she recalled how she had become Shi Xiaobai’s girlfriend on the first day they met.

However, she did not regret her decision. Shi Xiaobai’s heart had indeed moved her during that very moment. For that, she was willing to sign his so-called lovers’ pact.

Although she had not fallen in love with Shi Xiaobai as they had not known each other for long, she had placed Shi Xiaobai in a very, very important spot in her heart. It was a spot that no one had managed to reach.

Wendy did not know any of this, and even if she knew, she would not be able to understand it. She dryly smiled and said, “Your joke isn’t funny at all.”

A little kid at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm was still an earthworm crawling in the dirt, no matter how heaven-defying his talent was.

As for the purple-haired girl in front of her, she was a phoenix that flew high above the nine heavens.

Maybe there would be a day the phoenix suddenly sensed that the earthworm had the potential to be a flood dragon and gave him some opportunities, but there was no way it would fall in love with an earthworm, much less be the earthworm's partner.

Wendy could only take Kali's words as a silly joke.

In response, Kali only smiled and gave no explanation. When the day the earthworm became a flood dragon, no one would think the flood dragon unworthy of the phoenix.

Both of them fell silent, having nothing left to say.

Moments later, Wendy suddenly asked, "How do you plan on punishing me?"

"Punish?"

Kali lightly laughed and said, "He isn't injured, so why would I punish you? Oh, because you are the Bishop of Virtuality?"

Wendy faltered before giving a bitter laugh. She said, "Yes, because I am the Bishop of Virtuality."

"What a joke."

Kali said, “A small terrorist organization is not worth me making a move. Furthermore, from my point of view, so-called evil might not be evil. So-called justice might not truly be justice. If I really want to mete any punishment out, America’s Intelligence Agency, who chose to be oblivious, will be first to be razed.”

Upon hearing this, Wendy fell into a daze for a moment before she revealed a heartfelt smile.

“Thank you.”

Kali glanced at Wendy and said softly, “Besides, I think highly of you. To establish the Church of Virtuality at the age of six and develop it to its present scale in ten years. As a human being, you are truly outstanding.”

Wendy could not help but smile, as she said, “If it’s possible, I would rather be mediocre. But this is my destiny and my life. There is no way for me to resist it, so I can only go with it and do my best.”

Kali shook her head and said, “Destiny is in your own hands.”

Wendy lowered her head slightly and did not retort. She did not want to meaninglessly debate over this pointless topic.

“I have a question that I’m not sure if you are willing to answer.”

Wendy suddenly thought of a question.

Kali nodded and said, “Go ahead and ask.”

Wendy pondered over her words before saying, “With your abilities, you could have ended this farce right from the beginning. Even a virtual world cannot resist your coming. Why did you choose to make me transfer power to the child at the very last moment?”

Kali was slightly surprised upon hearing this. She could not help but laugh, as she said, “If he were my student or a descendant I think highly of, I would have removed all of the Arch-Cardinal’s power from the beginning and gave you some warnings.”

“However, he is my boyfriend, so I wish that he can look me as his equal. If I help him whenever he encounters difficulties or even use my own strength to make him someone strong, then how is he to get along with me? Will he think he owes me? Will he be unable to be his true self in front of me? Will he begin to form a reliance on my strength?”

“I don’t want that. I don’t want there to be any differences in our standing or give him any reason to feel gratitude. So, I will not help him solve his problems or give him any strength. Only as a last resort would I use methods he has no way of realizing to give him a little help.”

“This time, he did very well. He did not need any of my help to perfectly tide through this round of difficulties. If not for that

misunderstanding at the end that disgusted me, I would not have requested you to transfer your power.”

Kali paused and then gave a self-deprecating smile. “This is really the first time...I wish someone will treat me equally as an ordinary person.”

After Wendy heard this, she fell into a prolonged silence.

“I am beginning to slightly believe that he is your boyfriend,” Wendy said as she blinked her eyes. “He is truly lucky.”

Kali shook her head and said, “Actually, I am the lucky one.”

.....

.....

Back when Shi Xiaobai’s Crab Steps passed through the door of darkness and saved Xiao Xiao, he had in fact broken through his limits. He was just a tiny step away from reaching the Dominating Refinement realm. As such, when he ordered a number of the undead legion to manically attack him, he just took about half an hour to completely break through to the Dominating Refinement realm.

The familiar system’s voice resounded in his head.

“Absolute Choice completed. Congratulations on obtaining a ‘B-level reward’—‘Filthy Turtle Divine Technique’. This divine technique consists of three major systems—Body tempering technique: ‘This Turtle Is Hardest’, endurance technique: ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’, fist offensive skill: ‘Turtle-speed Divine Punch’.”

After that, knowledge surged into his brain and after having a momentary headache, he knew the body tempering art of “This Turtle Is Hardest” and the endurance art of “Unleaking Turtle Aura” by heart. He also obtained the proficiency of Grasped Basics with “Turtle-speed Divine Punch”.

Shi Xiaobai was immediately satisfied. Although he found the name Filthy Turtle Divine Technique somewhat odd, it was still a B-level reward, so it couldn’t be that bad.

After completing the Crab Steps mission, a profuse sense of exhaustion overwhelmed him. The sleepiness that he had forcefully repressed immediately shattered his will the moment he relaxed.

Shi Xiaobai used the system privileges that the Bishop of Virtuality had given him and left the virtual world immediately. As for the Arch-Cardinal, Shi Xiaobai had fulfilled his promise of “sparing” him. However, with the Arch-Cardinal’s looks completely exposed, his future was not something Shi Xiaobai needed to worry about.

Waking up from his virtual immersion, Shi Xiaobai got up from the virtual immersion cabin and stumbled over to the bed and

plopped down into it.

He was too tired. After seven consecutive days of intense Crab Steps cultivation, he had relied purely on his will. He even encountered the unexpected situation with the Arch-Cardinal, so it was a miracle that he did not suffer a mental breakdown. Now with everything coming to a perfect end, it was time for him to rest.

“This King has created a miracle!”

Shi Xiaobai buried his head into the pillow as he inarticulately grunted. With his eyes shut, he fell into deep sleep.

A bright light suddenly flashed in his private room, with Kali appearing by his bedside.

Her gaze were especially gentle, like the bright and pure moonlight.

“Let us go home.”

...

Chapter 106: I'm Back

In a blink of an eye, three days had passed.

A few news agencies had reported on the virtual competition that could only be described to be full of twists and turns, but it did not stir up much of a storm. It could even be said that it did not even set off any waves in China.

This virtual competition was indeed filled with impressive highlights. Be it IChooseDogLeading, who managed to cultivate his Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement realm at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm or the appearance of the Arch-Cardinal and the mutiny of the undead legion, it should have been something that became the talk of the town.

But nothing could be further from the truth. The number of people that discussed this matter was simply miserable. This was because there was zero credibility to the reports in the eyes of the common populace.

For some unknown reason, the recordings for this competition had been wiped out, so all the relevant videos were destroyed.

In addition, the American Intelligence Agency denied that they had apprehended the Arch-Cardinal.

It was as if the battle arena cafe's [Gaia] branch was barred from revealing any information. Hence, IChooseDogLeading's identity

was undisclosed.

As such, there was no evidence left to prove the veracity of the matter.

The people who watched competition naturally knew the reports were true and bore in mind the various incidents that God DogLeading had done, but these people were only a trivial fraction of the overall population.

Most people who did not witness the incident immediately dismissed the story after listening to it. When they learned that there was no evidence to prove this matter, all they did was scoff. It was common for people to hear of strange anecdotes, so they did not have any interest in talking about unproven events.

However, even if a few reports were falsely accused of being fake, it should have caused some sensation. Unfortunately, it ran into a bigger news item that completely drowned it out.

People were discussing a matter of national concern for the past few days. There was a conflict between academia and organizations to the point of the National Hero Association needing to step in for mediation. Finally, it was decided on a practical contest between the different factions.

This was actually an ongoing debate that had lasted a century—should one enter university to continue their studies or join a hero organization to gain practical experience after nine years of compulsory education.

These two choices naturally had their assenters and dissenters which resulted in the two factions. The school faction was led by brand-name universities, Pehua University, Fudan University and ZJ University. The organization faction was formed by famous organizations like Zeus, Muses, Thor and Darkness, etc.

These two factions had clear conflicts of interest which result in their incompatibility. Controversies were often sparked off between them, and it had turned extremely intense due to something that had happened recently.

The transcendent National Hero Association had to mediate, eventually making both sides come to a consensus that strength was the deciding factor.

As such, a contest completely organized by the National Hero Association came to the forefront.

The contest was expected to have the National Hero Association investing lots of resources for the training of twenty people.

The school faction would send ten freshmen while the organization faction would send ten rookies. These twenty people would come together to enter collective training that would be both open and intensive. Finally, they would compete in a competition that could be watched by the entire nation. The victor would win the priority to recruit talent for a year.

This sort of intense and open factional contest naturally attracted

the attention of everyone.

The common citizens were naturally interested to watch the ensuing mayhem.

As for many freshmen and rookies, they placed their minds on one of the twenty spots. It was a collective training which the National Hero Association would be investing heavily in, so it was a rare training opportunity.

Furthermore, this collective training would give them greater exposure. With the entire country as witnesses, the participants' reputation would greatly increase.

Hence, when the school faction publicly announced that the ten spots would be open to all universities in the country, every freshman turned excited. There was a steady stream of people that applied. No one wanted to miss this golden opportunity even if most of them would be eliminated during the auditions.

The organization faction also began their selections, but it was private. Every third-tier Hero organization and above were given a certain number of recommendation tickets. The recommended people would then undergo a massive selection before ten would be finally chosen to participate in the collective training of the two factions.

[Gaia] was once a first-tier organization that was now second tier. It was only given four recommendation spots which

happened to match the four divisions of [Gaia]. After a lot of deliberation, they decided to have an internal selection and recommend one person each.

If any of [Gaia]’s rookies could be one of the ten to represent the organization in this matter of national concern, or even obtain excellent results during the collective training, it would no doubt improve the reputation of the organization.

[Gaia]’s four Division Ministers naturally did not dare be lackadaisical. They immediately began a divisional internal selection process in an attempt to choose the most outstanding rookie from their own divisions.

.....

.....

Noon.

A helicopter slowly descended onto the metallic roads of Steel City. A beautiful girl with a single ponytail walked out from the helicopter and looked extremely excited.

“Wow, I’m finally back. I’m not going to take on such a large-scale mission in the future anymore. Those Hero points or whatever can go to hell!”

Riko carried her luggage and was in an excited mood. Having left Steel City for half a month, she had participated in a team-based Hero mission with friends she had known for years. Although they had encountered some danger, they managed to survive narrowly, giving them the chance to obtain quite a lot of Hero points.

During Southern Gold City’s meteor shower, she had happened to catch the latter half of the disaster and had killed a few F and E Class Astral Calamity Beasts, raising her ranking slightly.

In summary, her experience outside for half a month was nothing memorable but there was nothing unpleasant either. Other than missing the carefree life in Steel City, there was nothing much to complain about.

However, the moment she came back to Steel City, Riko felt like it was a long-awaited homecoming.

“Sigh, I’m really not suited to be a Hero. Earning Hero points is just too tiring. Staying in Steel City is more in line with my values and life philosophy.”

As Riko walked home, she would occasionally exchange greetings with passers-by. Most people in Steel City knew her since she was the daughter of the Minamiya family and an Oceanic Pontus.

“I wonder how Xiaobai is like now.”

One of the major reasons why Riko was yearning to return home was because she was worried about Shi Xiaobai.

Would he be ostracized and bullied by others with him constantly calling himself ‘This King’? His foundation was terrible, so would it be tough for him to participate in the rookie training? With him living alone, will he be able to have his meals or have someone to take care of him if he fell sick?

Riko could not help but feel worried. She was after all his rookie counselor. Furthermore, she was the one who had recruited him into [Gaia], and not to mention, she was a member of that so-called Xiaobai’s Hero Squad.

Riko felt that she had the important responsibility of taking care of Shi Xiaobai.

“Alright, I’ll do this. I’ve decided to take care of Shi Xiaobai and let him stay here permanently in Steel City. I shall not be leaving for the time being. Hmph, it’s not because I’m being lazy to earn Hero points.”

As Riko walked, she arrived in the district where her apartment was.

She immediately felt a little bit of anticipation.

“I wonder how strong Xiaobai is now.” Would he have reached the second level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in half a month? Would he have achieved the Grasped Basics proficiency of a few F Class combat skills?”

“Right, that will a bit difficult. Although Xiaobai is a genius, it is still difficult.”

“I hope he doesn’t disappoint me. I’m looking forward to it.”

Riko came to the door and took out her keys. A smile with a trace of anticipation suffused from the corner of her lips.

“Shi Xiaobai, I’m back!”

...

Chapter 107: Where The King's Blade Tip Points

Above an endless expanse of desolate plains was uncountable people in genuflection. Their bodies were covered in a golden aura but their faces were fuzzy. Their heads were lowered as though they were subjects bowing in respect. They resembled golden wheat fields that covered the lands.

In the middle of this golden wheat field stood a black-haired youth. The youth wore a golden crown and was in a black and white robe. A simple move of his gave a majestic feel to him.

“Thou shalt vow to be This King's swords forever!”

The youth said softly, but it appeared as deafening as thunder.

“Yes, my Lord!”

The golden subjects responded in unison. The resulting sound boomed as it thundered throughout the world.

“Born to be the sword!”

“Body as metal, blood as fire!”

Thousands, or maybe millions of golden humans swore in unison

while in genuflection. The world seemed to change color in response to their thunderous voice. Fog slowly hid the sun as the world fell into darkness.

“Serving beside the King.”

“Fighting across countless battlefields undefeated.”

“Never to suffer defeat.”

Thunder rumbled through the sky as raging winds howled, but it was all drowned out by the resounding voices, like a small river being swallowed by the sea.

“Where the King’s blade tip points is where our hearts aim!”

The moment this was said, golden beams shot out from the countless humans into the sky as they transmuted into a golden pillar of light which pierced through the heaven and earth. The world was lit up as the dark clouds that shrouded it was penetrated.

“We swear that in this life, for all eternity, we are ready to be the King’s sword! Slaying the King’s enemies!”

The deafening voices echoed through the clouds as countless golden beams suddenly contracted into thin lines before they disappeared without a trace.

Above the vast desolate plains, there was only the youth with the crown left. As for the countless golden people, they had disappeared, and what remained were swords that filled the plains!

All sorts of enchanted swords were embedded in the ground. There was nothing but a sea of swords as far as the eyes could see!

“Swords, come!”

As the youth summoned, all the swords began to violently tremble as they shot into the sky.

Numerous swords gathered in the middle of the sun as they began fusing into each other, forming a sword handle with an invisible blade!

This sole sword that was formed from millions of sword fell from the sky and floated towards the crowned youth.

The youth reached out his hand to grab the sword handle as a clear ring from the sword resounded. The ring was filled with respect and joy.

The sword was shapeless but it had heart!

“Heaven Opening! Earth Rupturing!”

The youth held the sword handle with two hands and raised it past his head. As his body leaned sideways slightly, he suddenly slashed diagonally at the heaven and earth!

The sword was raised and then lowered.

The lands immediately ruptured at the fall of the sword, forming a deep abyss ten miles wide and several thousand miles long.

The sky was suddenly split into two, half of it was light, while the other half was darkness.

The youth pulled back at the sword handle and watched the distant horizon calmly, as though he was watching another world.

Suddenly, a vibrant voice resounded in the world.

“I’m back! Shi Xiaobai hurry up and get up to welcome me back!”

The youth was stunned as his unperturbed eyes suddenly flickered with a beam of light.

“The sun is already shining high up in the sky to burn your ass, and you are still sleeping! Shi Xiaobai, you are such a pig!”

The voice that filled the heavens resounded once again as the crowned youth frowned.

“If you don’t wake up, I’m going to punish you!”

The youth opened his mouth slightly and kept turning around to look at the sky, his eyes flashing in panic.

“Hmph, you are forcing me to make a move!”

The moment the voice fell silent, the entire world suddenly began to quake. The youth raised his sword in the stance of a cleave but he suddenly felt his nose itch. As he gave a loud “sneeze”, the world turned into darkness, and he could not help but open his eyes.

After he opened his eyes, he saw through his hazy eyes a fair hand holding onto a flower petal, gently disturbing his nose with the petal tip.

“Hmph, you have finally woken up, little lazy pig.”

As he turned his head sideways slightly, what came into view was a face with delicate features and a black ponytail that he had not seen for a long time.

“Violent Girl?”

Shi Xiaobai was gradually recovering from his half-conscious sleep paralysis.

When Riko heard the words “Violent Girl”, she was slightly stunned before she habitually raised her fist and smacked it into Shi Xiaobai’s forehead.

Shi Xiaobai had already cultivated Crab Steps so much for the past few days that it had become instinctual to dodge, so how could he miss such a simple punch? With a slight tilt of his head, he easily dodged the blow.

Riko was slightly surprised when she missed. Without much thought, she muttered, “Yo, having not seen you for half a month, you have even learned how to dodge.”

Originally, Riko wanted to bicker with him, but she saw Shi Xiaobai slowly reveal a smile.

“Welcome back, This King greatly misses you...”

Shi Xiaobai’s voice was ever so gentle.

Riko’s pupils contracted slightly as she felt her heart petrify.

She never expected to have such a feeling after returning to the words “welcome back, I greatly miss you” after having busied herself away from home. It was a bit sour yet sweet. It had a tinge of bliss.

“you...r cooking.”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and waved his hand to urge her. “Hurry up and cook. This King is a little hungry.”

The blissful smile that had bloomed froze immediately. The gaze that was turning soft immediately froze as well.

“Shi! Xiao! Bai!”

Riko fumed, “Hurry up and return me my feelings!”

...

...

Thirty minutes later.

“Go ahead and eat, little lazy pig.”

Riko placed a bowl of rice in front of Shi Xiaobai as the corner of her mouth curled into a smile. Regardless of anything, she felt a small sense of achievement that Shi Xiaobai enjoyed her cooking.

Well, just a bit.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the four dishes and the bowl of soup placed on the table and could not resist wolfing them down. As he was too

tired mentally from being in seven consecutive days of virtual immersion, he had slept for three straight days. This resulted in him being famished.

“Aiyah, how hungry have you been? Don’t eat in such a hurry. It’s not good for your stomach.”

Riko smiled as she watched Shi Xiaobai wolf down the food. After that, she picked up her cellphone and began reading news articles from the past few days.

She had not been able to pay any attention to current affairs previously, but now, she had finally found time to do so.

Riko scanned through the headlines that were mostly not of any interest to her.

The hottest news was of course the collective training for the two factions. As the news was earth-shattering, Riko had already learned about it from others even though she did not pay attention to the news.

She was no longer considered a rookie, so it did not concern her. The only rookie she was familiar with in [Gaia] was Shi Xiaobai, but in her opinion, regardless of how much a genius Shi Xiaobai was, he was too behind on his training, so it was unlikely he could even pass the internal division selection, much less be selected to join the collective training to represent the organization faction.

As such, Riko did not pay much attention to the two faction's collective training.

Suddenly, Riko's swiping fingers paused slightly.

A news headline imprinted itself in her eyes.

“China's Yaris, a man of God who cultivated Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!”

Chapter 108: This Is A Monster

“China’s Yaris, a man of God who cultivates Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!”

When Riko saw such a title, she could not help but mutter, “This must be click-bait.”

Riko naturally did not believe that anyone could cultivate Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement realm at only the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, so she naturally came to the conclusion that it was a fake title meant to bait people into clicking. The content would have definitely lacked any authenticity.

Riko greatly disliked such click-bait tactics.

She continued flipping through the headlines when she suddenly saw another eye-catching headline.

“So what if you are an Arch-Cardinal of the Church of Virtuality? Psionic Mortal Realm youth forces Arch-Cardinal to shout ‘hubby’!”

Immediately, a gloomy cloud appeared over Riko’s forehead. Why do people these days like to use such obviously fake titles? Don’t they know not to cross the limits?

Riko cursed in her heart as she continued swiping downwards before she was suddenly stunned.

“A prediction of strength, battle arena cafe’s [Gaia] branch’s “IChooseDogLeading” would one day shock the world!”

Riko hesitated for a moment before she clicked the news. There was no other reason other than the title having the word “Gaia”.

However, after she clicked and read it, Riko was left completely flabbergasted.

This f*cking person at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm cultivated Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement who forced the Arch-Cardinal to shout “hubby” was named “IChooseDogLeading”, and apparently he was a customer of the battle arena cafe’s [Gaia] branch?

Then wouldn’t he be living in Steel City?

“Phew, I almost believed in it.”

While Riko was reading the detailed information in the article and the narration of events, she nearly fell for this extremely absurd story. When she flipped to the comments section, she was completely disappointed. Nearly all the comments were negative, accusing the report for being fake. Many people pointed out how the article lacked any bit of evidence.

“As I said, how can such a ridiculous thing happen in this day and age. Such an awesome character? Even if there is one, he definitely can’t be in [Gaia].”

Riko was acutely aware of [Gaia]’s decline. In the recently recruited batch of [Gaia] rookies, other than Shi Xiaobai, who had heaven-defying talent, and the other rookie with the S-Class evaluation being able to considered to be above average, the other rookies were just remnants of those who were eliminated from first-tier organizations.

“Unfortunately, Shi Xiaobai has fallen back by so much. However, he will eventually be able to chase up and even surpass others.”

Riko smiled as she looked at Shi Xiaobai, who was still wolfing down his food. She was rather confident of Shi Xiaobai’s talent.

He would soon cultivate to the second level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, right?

She had to urge him to work hard.

With this thought in mind, Riko suddenly asked, “Xiaobai, if you want to have superpowers earlier, you need to cultivate to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm quickly.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai could not help but recall Riko’s demonstration of “High Frequency Vibrokinesis”. It immediately

switched on an intense flame in his eyes.

Be it Riko's High Frequency Vibrokinesis, Hisith's Underworld Poker or Dan Liang's Death Hypnagogia, they were all powerful superpowers that went as far as one's imagination.

And as someone who possessed S Class superpower potential, he would be able to completely awaken his superpower once he cultivated to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

"This King will reach the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm soon."

As Shi Xiaobai swallowed the food in his mouth, he said with a tone filled with confidence.

He was already at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, so how far could the fourth be?

However, Riko was stunned hearing this.

This little lazy pig sure is confident. Has he already cultivated to the second level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?

To be able to break through two levels in less than twenty days was blazing fast.

Riko hesitated for a while and decided to remind Shi Xiaobai not

to be too complacent and slack off, hence, she said, “Cultivating to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm isn’t an easy task. After all, the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm is one of the two major steps in the Psionic Mortal Realm.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask, “Two major steps?”

Riko was startled before she laughed and said, “You have already been in rookie training for more than ten days, yet you don’t know this common piece of knowledge?”

Shi Xiaobai gave an awkward smile. He had only participated in one day of rookie training that had gone on for more than ten days. He had played truant so it was indeed a sin...

Riko rolled her eyes at him and patiently explained, “The Psionic Mortal Realm has two major barriers. The first is the barrier from the third level to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. The other is the one from the ninth to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Hence, we call the fourth and tenth levels the two major steps of the Psionic Mortal Realm.”

“These two major steps are very influential. It can be said that the difference in strength between the first level to the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm isn’t that great, but when facing someone at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, the pressure is immense. The gap in strength from the fourth to the ninth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm isn’t great either, but against a person at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, one can only shy away by taking a detour.”

“These two major steps are very difficult to cross. You might take one year to rise five levels from the fourth level to the ninth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, but the time it takes to go from the ninth to tenth level might take more than a year.”

“Hence, the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm isn’t difficult to attain, but breaking to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm is extremely difficult. You have to work hard at it!”

Riko emphasized what she had said, with the intention to warn Shi Xiaobai that cultivation was not as easy as he thought.

Shi Xiaobai digested Riko’s words. Thinking of how his Wavelet Shield had previously been shattered by Wang Lin in a single punch and how the three-man team was instantly killed by Xiao Xiao, he finally understood what Riko meant.

In short, going from the third level to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm was extremely difficult. It was a hurdle, a major step.

Shi Xiaobai silently ate another two mouthfuls before he suddenly found the food was not as delicious as before.

Just thinking of how he could possess superpowers at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm and how he would be stuck in the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm for a period of time, he immediately lost his appetite.

Without a superpower, how different was he from a dead salted fish?

“This King is full. This King will be entering Cogitation!”

Shi Xiaobai put down his tableware and stood up. His facial expression looked extremely serious.

Riko was left in a daze but she was very pleased with Shi Xiaobai’s positive attitude.

“Hold on, let’s test your current cultivation progress first.”

Riko was still wondering if Shi Xiaobai had already cultivated to the second level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before nodding. He still had that bit of time to spare.

Riko smiled and headed to her room.

Not long later, she took out a metallic device that looked like a dynamometer.

“Hold on to it and release your Psionic Power. The device will indicate the strength of your Psionic Power.”

Riko handed the Psionic Power measurement device to Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and held onto that Psionic Power measurement device that was made of some special metal. He began to fully release the Psionic Power in his body towards his palms as he stared intently at the numeric display.

Riko also paid close attention to the display. Could Shi Xiaobai have exceeded her expectations and cultivate to the second level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?

The numeric display numbers jumped before it eventually fixed onto a surprising number—4.1.

“Holy shit! Fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!?”

Riko was stunned agape....

Chapter 109: A Teammate That Accidentally Harms You

The numeric display numbers jumped a little, but it eventually came to a stop at “4.1”. This number represented the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

“Is the device broken!?”

After Riko let out a tiny invective, she gradually calmed down. To go from an ordinary person to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in less than twenty days was something no f*cking person would believe!

Riko grabbed the Psionic Power measuring device and released all her Psionic Power. However, when she looked at the display numbers, she was immediately stunned.

“The device...isn’t broken.”

Riko swallowed a mouthful of saliva with great difficulty. From the result of her own tests, the device was not malfunctioning. In that case, Shi Xiaobai had truly reached the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?

To rise four levels in less than twenty days and even cross a major cultivation step?

“How did you do it?”

Riko’s gaze was riveted to Shi Xiaobai. She had just exaggerated about how difficult it was to reach the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, but it ended with Shi Xiaobai giving her a huge surprise. That’s not right, this wasn’t a surprise, Riko was already beginning to doubt life!

Shi Xiaobai was also wondering why he had broken through to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

Wasn’t there supposed to be a major step?

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart.

Indeed, as a King, life was just a flat plain, so how can there be any steps?

Upon hearing Riko’s question, he could not help but say in a high-spirited manner, “There is nothing This King can’t do!”

...

...

After Riko’s “interrogation by torture”, she finally found out that Shi Xiaobai had already reached the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm after his first deep Cogitation that lasted ten

consecutive days. As for when or how he broke through to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, Shi Xiaobai expressed that he had no idea either.

In this regard, Riko felt the impulse of turning his delicate-looking face into a pig's head.

She considered herself a genius. Not only did she possess a B Class superpower, the speed at which she cultivated was one of the best amongst her peers, but compared to Shi Xiaobai...

Alright, this is a monster. Comparing to him was just asking for trouble!

“Since This King has already reached the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, does that mean that This King can use superpowers?”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly thought of the matter. Didn't reaching the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm mean that his superpowers would be awoken? Why didn't he feel anything?

Riko was stunned. Supposedly, Psykers who broke through to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm would fall into a deep sleep for a short period of time. They would experience an awakening dream, in which they would instinctively awaken their superpowers and then learn from the dream the effects of their superpowers, as well as the superpower's conditions and limitations.

Since Shi Xiaobai had already reached the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, he should have experienced this awakening dream.

Hold on...awakening dream!

A bead of cold sweat oozed out of Riko's forehead as she asked with a shiver, "Erh, Xiaobai, just now when I woke you up, were you having a dream. And it was an extremely clear one, a dream that you can still remember very well up to now?"

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai could not help but recall the dream with millions of golden people turning to enchanted swords. It was indeed very clear, so he immediately nodded.

"Sob, I'm sorry, I have harmed you."

Riko was close to tears. She could never have expected Shi Xiaobai to reach the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in such a short period of time. If she had known better, she wouldn't have been so excited when she got home to wake Shi Xiaobai up on a whim.

The awakening dream was only experienced once by a Psyker. If the dream was interrupted midway, then one would only have a vague understanding of their own superpowers. It required constant trial and error to fully understand the effects, limitations and conditions for the superpower that had been awoken.

If superpowers were described as high-tech products, then the awakening dream was the indispensable manual.

By missing out on the awakening dream, it was equivalent to proceeding forward blindly. It could be said to be catastrophic for Espers.

...

Riko hurriedly called her teacher, One-Pun, for help. If Shi Xiaobai was unable to use his superpowers because of something she did on a whim, she would never be able to forgive herself.

After a phone call that lasted more than ten minutes, Riko finally calmed down. This was because One-Pun said that there was still hope even if the awakening dream was interrupted!

“The awakening dream can be repeated, but it will not be a perfect repeat. Only a portion of it can be repeated, while the remaining will have to be figured out by you.”

Riko gave her deepest apologies to Shi Xiaobai. “It’s all my fault. I will do my very best to help you work out your superpower blueprint. If...you still choose to trust me.”

A superpower blueprint was considered the most important secret of every Psyker because it contained every single aspect of the Psyker’s superpower. But now, Shi Xiaobai had to reveal his superpower blueprint because of the need for a trial and error.

Riko hoped that she could become the subject of Shi Xiaobai's experimentation because she would spare no effort in helping him figure the superpower blueprint out. Furthermore, she would rather die than reveal the secrets to Shi Xiaobai's superpower.

Of course, this was all wishful thinking on her own part. The main issue was if Shi Xiaobai was still willing to trust her.

He probably wouldn't believe in her ever again, right?

"This King believes you. You are a member of my Xiaobai's Hero Squad, and you belong to This King. This King will not doubt your loyalty and sincerity." Shi Xiaobai said matter-of-factly. He knew that Riko had unintentionally awoken him from the awakening dream, so he naturally did not blame her.

Riko responded with a gentle "uh". This was the first time she felt that joining the Xiaobai's Hero Squad was quite a good thing.

"Then let us begin. First, you need to enter a specific form of Cogitation. When that happens, I will instruct you on how to reproduce your awakening dream. The reappearance of it will be very short and would even be a bit blurry. You must do everything to gather as much information about your superpower. Every bit of information is critical."

...

Minutes later, under Riko's guidance, Shi Xiaobai completed the specific form of Cogitation.

Riko took a deep breath and said, "Now, look around you. Do you see a pure white door? That is the Door of Superpower. Walk in there, and it will bring you to the world of the awakening dream."

Shi Xiaobai was currently immersed in his imagined world. He was surrounded by a beautiful world but when he heard Riko's words, he looked around and immediately found the pure white door Riko mentioned.

However, beside the pure white door, he also saw a pure black door of the same shape and size.

"Enter the white door?" Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask.

"Yes, enter the white door!" Riko answered.

Shi Xiaobai's consciousness came in front of the white and black doors. Suddenly he quivered as he felt like something inside the black door of darkness was calling out to him. It had an intense desire.

As for the white door, it seemed to have a soft aura to it that attracted him to enter.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment but decided to trust Riko. He took a step towards the pure white door, and immediately, the

pure black door suddenly issued an angry roar.

Shi Xiaobai struggled for a moment before he finally decided to step into the pure white door. And when he did so, he immediately felt a sense of weightlessness, as though he had fallen through the void.

Immediately following that, gigantic swords suddenly appeared in front of him as they flickered in the dark.

After that, thunderous voices after voices began to boom.

These voices were of both men and women, young and old. Their voices were clear, but the words they said were unintelligible.

Shi Xiaobai had no idea what bird-speak they were saying!

...

Chapter 110: Strength Comes From

“Phew!”

Shi Xiaobai exhaled the deep breath he had held in as he gradually opened up his eyes. The first thing he saw was Riko’s beautiful but nervous face.

“How is it? How much information did you get?”

Riko was feeling uneasy since the repeat of the awakening dream was brief. It only skimmed the surface, so the information gained about the superpower would be greatly lacking.

However, the amount of information obtained would determine how difficult it was to reproduce the entire superpower blueprint.

Shi Xiaobai answered, “This King roughly knows what his superpower is.”

“Really?”

Riko was delighted as she asked, “Quick, tell me about the information you gathered.”

Shi Xiaobai said, “Strength. This King can obtain the strength of others.”

Riko was surprised as she asked, “Huh? Anymore?”

Shi Xiaobai cocked his head and gave it some thought before he threw up his hands and said, “That was it.”

Riko stared widely.

What do you mean that was it?

Riko gave a faint sigh. Although she should not have expected to obtain much information from the repeat of the awakening dream, she had never expected that all he got was such vague information.

To be able to obtain powers from others meant that it was the effect, but what about the condition to obtain strength? What sort of limitations would there be to obtain strength from others?

To be able to use his superpower freely, he had to be extremely clear of the three rules, namely, effects, conditions and limitations. A complete superpower blueprint was extremely important.

The information Shi Xiaobai had obtained was just a tip of an iceberg, it might even not be able to amount to the tip of an iceberg.

However, Riko knew it was not the time to grumble over this. It was all her fault, so she had to restore Shi Xiaobai’s perfect superpower blueprint or she would never feel at ease.

“Do you know how to obtain powers from others? For example, must you do a specific move or do certain things?”

Riko made an attempted guess.

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily taken aback before he pondered for a while. Then, he nodded and said, “This King seems to know how.”

Indeed, he had a vague idea how to obtain the strength of others in his mind.

“Really?”

Riko was pleasantly surprised to hear this. As long as the method to use the superpower was known, she could figure out the superpower blueprint by constant experimentation. She hurriedly said, “Then quick give it a try! Well, you can use me as the target. Obtain your power from my body!”

It was actually a very dangerous thing to be the target of a superpower experiment. Only the Heavens knew what strength really meant. It was unknown if it would harm her body if her strength was taken away or if her strength could be restored or if the superpower could be returned.

However, Riko could not care so much. She blamed herself for everything that had happened, so she believed she had the

responsibility to become Shi Xiaobai's experimental subject. She had to take responsibility for this matter, regardless of the price.

“Are you sure?”

Shi Xiaobai asked with knitted brows. He had a nagging feeling that the method to obtaining power was somewhat...

Riko felt a thump in her heart upon hearing this. She knew that with Shi Xiaobai's character, it was unlikely he would ask such a question. Being direct was his style, but with him asking, it proved that the usage of the superpower was extremely damaging to the target.

There was a struggle in Riko's eyes but it quickly calmed down. She took a deep breath and said seriously, “I'm sure. Come on!”

Riko puffed up her chest, indicating that she did not mind sacrificing herself.

“Alright, then This King won't stand on ceremony.”

Shi Xiaobai did not hesitate any further. Being direct was definitely his style.

Shi Xiaobai slowly reached out his right hand towards Riko.

While Riko looked at the right hand that was gradually

approaching her, she could not help but feel nervous. Even though she told herself that she was willing to sacrifice herself, it was common for humans to fear the unknown.

Riko closed her eyes with a bit of apprehension. She began cheering on herself in her mind.

Come on, even if it will result in excruciating pain when strength is extracted, that is the responsibility you have to bear!

Riko closed her eyes tightly as she held her breath. She nervously waited for Shi Xiaobai to use his superpower on her.

Suddenly, Riko was horrified to find her perky, left breast being grabbed by someone!

That holy ground of softness had been grabbed gently with five fingers making full contact with it. A numbness immediately spread throughout her body!

“Ah!”

Having her breast attacked, Riko gave out an instinctive yelp as she hurriedly jumped back and covered her chest with her hands. She stared in disbelief at Shi Xiaobai’s wandering hands that had yet retracted from its grip.

“Why!?”

Riko looked at a blinking Shi Xiaobai that had a completely pure expression. She could not believe that he had used such a shameless method to desecrate the holy land that no one else had ever touched!

Riko's face blushed red as her eyes began to slightly swell in redness.

“I have always thought of you as a good person. I never expected you to be such a Shi Xiaobai!”

Riko was both embarrassed and furious. Even if she had made a mistake, it was unintentional. Besides, she had been doing her best to make up for it.

Why did he treat her like that? Why did he use such a humiliating way to take his revenge on her?

“Strength!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly reached out his hand as he pointed at Riko's covered chest. He calmly said, “Didn't you allow This King to obtain strength from your body? Strength is in there!”

Upon hearing this, Riko stood open-eyed and agape with speechless astonishment. Shi Xiaobai's superpower usage target was female breasts?

...

...

Minutes later, after Shi Xiaobai's perplexing explanation, Riko finally managed to calm down. However, her cheeks were still as red as an apple.

"So, the strength you want to obtain is in my...*cough*, there?"

Riko was so embarrassed that she could not even bring up the matter. She had yet to engage in the worldly pleasures, and she was even a pure and innocent girl who had never even dated. So how could she bring up the matter for discussion after having her sensitive spot grabbed?

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, "That's right."

"Hu, why didn't you tell me earlier!" Riko began knitting her eyebrows.

"You didn't ask." Shi Xiaobai said matter-of-factly.

Riko was stunned silent.

Indeed, she did not ask in her nervousness, but don't you know that you need to ask for someone's opinion if you were grabbing that spot? Do you know what is sexual harassment?

Hmph, this bastard must be doing it on purpose. He is nothing but a young pervert!

Riko cursed in her heart as she said with a bitter face, “Must... you grab there to be able to use your superpower?”

Wasn't this superpower limitation too f*cked up? It could only be used by grabbing a girl's breast?

If that was the case, how was she to become his experimental subject...?

She had nearly suffered a mental breakdown when her breast was grabbed without any warning. If they had to repeat the experiment, wouldn't she die of embarrassment?

Shi Xiaobai thought for a moment and said, “It seems like it just needs to be close.”

“What!?”

Riko stared widely as she boomed angrily, “Then why did you grab my boob...there!”

Riko reached out her hands to press down on Shi Xiaobai's shoulders, her eyes burning with flames.

“Because...This King was very curious!”

Shi Xiaobai said in dead seriousness.

...

Chapter 111: Oppai Is Also Justice

Shi Xiaobai remembered his former roommate, Yang Wei, say to him, “White Eventide Heretic King, do you know what is justice? Justice is a babe’s oppai! Oppai is the softest existence in the entire world. It is multifarious, as it warms the world and feeds people! Justice is the noble goal of our lifelong pursuits. So for our dreams, we must grasp babes, and grasp their oppai!”

Shi Xiaobai had been skeptical when he heard this, but he never had an opportunity to put it into practice. But at that moment, with a perky oppai held out in front of him, he could no longer repress the curiosity in his heart, which resulted in him...

“Sigh, This King is greatly disappointed. This is not justice at all.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes were filled with disappointment. After grabbing oppai, other than it being soft and somewhat springy, there was no other feeling. This—was not the justice he wanted!

“Shi! Xiao! Bai!”

Riko gnashed her teeth as she bellowed. She pounced at Shi Xiaobai like an enraged lioness.

In fact, when Shi Xiaobai noticed Riko’s embarrassed expression, he had realized he had done something wrong. So with some hesitation, he did not use Crab Steps to dodge.

As a result...the tragic scene of an enraged beautiful girl ravaging a cute youth came to play. The large scale of the tragedy, the epic loss of humanity, the moral turpitude...please imagine it yourself.

...

Ten minutes later, Riko, who had finally managed to calm herself down, reluctantly stopped wrecking Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai, who had been pinched blue and black, could only draw a cold gasp and reflect on his plight.

“This King pursues justice, but was it wrong? Was it wrong? Was it wrong?”

Shi Xiaobai firmly said in his heart, “This King was not wrong, it is the world.”

...

Riko calmed her feelings down and said, “Another time. This time, you are only allowed to go close. You are not allowed to touch there, or else...Hmph!”

Although Riko was overwhelmed with unwillingness, there was no other way. She had to help Shi Xiaobai figure out his superpower. This was a responsibility she could not shirk.

The fault that was hers, she had to see through it even if she had to walk on her knees!

After Riko said that, she released the hands that were holding her chest. She once again slightly puffed her perky chest up.

“Be careful, you are not to touch it!”

This time, Riko did not dare close her eyes. She stared with her eyes with a look like she was about to weep. It was an appearance that people could not help but want to take a bite out of her.

Shi Xiaobai nodded as he gradually reached out his right hand. His hand slowly approached a spot just a few centimeters away from Riko’s breast. Just a tiny motion would allow him to touch it.

Riko’s heart raced but she not dare to breathe too heavily. She was afraid that by moving her chest too much, her chest would end up touching Shi Xiaobai’s palm.

“Hurr...Hurry up!” Riko was close to tears.

Shi Xiaobai began to use his heart to perceive. He could feel an intimate power in Riko’s chest, a power that was resonating with his soul.

Just a bit more, just a bit more, just a bit more!

Shi Xiaobai felt that the power was about to escape from whatever that was binding it to his hand. It was just lacking a tiny bit.

Shi Xiaobai turned anxious as his outstretched hand could not help but move forward a little. Immediately, he felt that soft and elastic sensation.

Shi Xiaobai's hand had once again touched Riko's "justice".

"Shi Xiaobai!"

Riko immediately screamed and jumped backwards. She was on the brink of going mad.

This pervert was definitely doing it on purpose!

"This King did not do it intentionally."

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly waved his hands, afraid that he would once again be ravaged by Riko. He quickly explained the feeling he obtained while using his superpower as well as the feeling that it lacked just a bit.

After hearing his explanation, Riko gradually calmed down. Her mind went into an intense struggle. Her embarrassment and guilt were at odds with each other, but finally her guilt defeated her embarrassment.

“I’ll give you one final chance. You must not touch it, or I’ll give up on you!”

...

Ten minutes later.

“Shi Xiaobai, go to hell!”

Riko held her softness, with eyes filled with despair.

More than a dozen times! No, that’s not right, it was dozens of times!

She would say that it was the final time each time, but every time, her embarrassment could not emerge victorious in her mental battle. Hence, she would give Shi Xiaobai chance after chance, resulting in her sensitive spot being touched time and time again.

Riko was quickly turning numb and she even thought of letting him go to town with his touching, so that she could quickly end this nightmare. However, her reservations as a girl insisted that Shi Xiaobai was to complete the usage of his superpower without touching her.

“This is the last time. Really, this will be the last one!” Riko

sighed. As a Psyker, she knew the great importance of the superpower's rules. Even a F Class Psyker who knew how to flexibly use his superpower could defeat an inept A Class Psyker who did not know how to use his superpower. As such, this made her sink deeper into guilt.

Shi Xiaobai nodded silently as he tried his best not to touch Riko's breast.

Sensing the struggle in Riko's heart, Shi Xiaobai's heart also grew heavy.

She had signed a blood pact with him, so he was her king. A king could not let his subjects feel disappointment and sorrow!

“Come out for This King!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but roar angrily as he sensed the intense resonance of the power!

Suddenly, a purplish-blue light lit up around Riko's chest. It was a tiny purplish-blue circular door!

Shi Xiaobai's hand came to the circular door, and naturally stretched his hand in.

“Uh...”

Riko moaned as she felt her body turn limp, but the sweeping comfort she felt made her involuntarily utter such a moan.

Shi Xiaobai slowly pulled his hand out from the purplish-blue ring, and soon, purplish-blue crystals of myriad shapes and sizes began to attach themselves to Shi Xiaobai's arm. Following that, as Shi Xiaobai gradually pulled his hand out, a stone pillar condensed from the purplish-blue crystals appeared!

Shi Xiaobai only felt a strange force flowing through his body that rushed straight to his head. He raised the crystal column as a golden beam of light shot out, piercing through the ceiling, into the sky!

The purplish-blue crystals suddenly began to pare, like a layer crystal skin that shed, and out of it appeared a dark blue sword!

The golden beam slowly converged at this moment as a sharp shrill from the sword resounded that sounded like a heavenly flute.

Shi Xiaobai's mind flashed with fuzzy images and he saw a young girl with a ponytail in it.

Shi Xiaobai instinctively raised up the dark blue sword and brandished it in the air. Suddenly, everything in the room—the sofa, tables, chairs, chandeliers, floor—began to vibrate vigorously!

Riko was already completely flabbergasted!

Shi Xiaobai had pulled out a sword from her chest?

And the vibrations he caused from a slight swing of the sword seemed like...

“High Frequency Vibrokinesis!”

Riko exclaimed when she realized this!

...

Chapter 112: Whiteology Appearance

“High Frequency Vibrokinesis!”

Riko exclaimed. The intense vibrations created by Shi Xiaobai’s wave of the sword was extremely similar to her superpower, “High Frequency Vibrokinesis”!

Just after Riko yelled, a strong odd feeling suddenly suffused from her heart, as though a naked her was being watched by Shi Xiaobai. It was as though her joy and sadness buried in her deepest memories had made contact with Shi Xiaobai.

It was a feeling as though she had passed everything she had into Shi Xiaobai’s hands.

Riko immediately felt a strong sense of resistance!

“Peng!”

The dark blue crystal sword in Shi Xiaobai’s hands shattered at that moment, transforming into beams of purplish-blue light that shot into Riko’s chest.

“Uh...”

Riko could not help but moan. Her blushing face was even redder now.

Riko took a few deep breaths before she gradually calmed down. She looked at Shi Xiaobai and asked, “Were you using High Frequency Vibrokinesis just now?”

Shi Xiaobai seemed to find it a pity that the sword had disappeared. Upon hearing Riko’s question, he gave it some thought before saying, “This King naturally swung the sword after holding the sword but This King has no idea how to use High Frequency Vibrokinesis. However, there is nothing This King can’t do, so it is nothing surprising.”

Riko rolled her eyes at Shi Xiaobai and attempted to make a conclusion. “From the preliminary results, you can pull out a ‘sword’ from other people’s bodies through the chests of others, well, actually it might be the heart, but that’s basically the gist of it,. This ‘sword’ might very well contain a particular strength of the target’s. For example, my superpower, ‘High Frequency Vibrokinesis’. It might even be possible that the strength you obtain is not limited to superpowers.”

Riko pondered for a moment before a look of horror came over her face as she said loudly, “Heavens, doesn’t that mean you can borrow the superpowers of others? Doesn’t that mean you can very well use a variety of superpowers? This...this sort of superpower is unheard of!”

Shi Xiaobai twitched his mouth and said, “This is the effect of This King’s Crown. The powers of the people in this world are naturally usable by This King!”

Riko helplessly shook her head. She was quite speechless when it came to Shi Xiaobai's king theory. After some thought, she said, "It is after all an S Class superpower, so it is reasonable to have such effects. However, the more powerful the effects, the more stringent the conditions and the limitations are. One of the conditions might be, one, the target has to be female. Two, the 'sword' has to be pulled out from the chest. Three, it needs a certain amount of time for the 'sword' to be pulled out."

"And the limitations clearly have duration as one of them. It just lasted for a few seconds just now. By the way, when you pulled out the 'sword', did you have any special feelings?"

Upon hearing Riko's analysis, Shi Xiaobai nodded in agreement and then said, "After This King pulled the 'sword' out, blurry images flashed pass This King's brain. There was a little girl in it, but soon I felt a resistance and then the 'sword' disappeared."

Upon hearing this, Riko's expression turned slightly strange. Was she the little girl Shi Xiaobai had seen? She had indeed felt the odd feeling of someone peeping at her memories.

As for the resistance Shi Xiaobai felt, it appeared to be a result of her resistance. In that case, the disappearance of the 'sword' was because of her resistance?

"It appears like the limitations are related to the target's mental state of mind. Once the target strongly resists, the 'sword' will disappear."

Riko sighed, “This limitation is quite strict. You have to make the target be willing to lend you their superpower.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai said, “I see. Only the most loyal subjects of This King can become This King’s sword.”

Riko rolled her eyes. Shi Xiaobai’s abilities of distortion made her feel that “whatever he said made sense that I am rendered speechless”.

“Let’s try it again. Remember. Do! Not! Touch! It!” Riko snorted. Even though she was unwilling, she had no choice but to keep jumping into that hole she had dug herself. After all, the investigation of his superpowers needed repeated experiments.

Shi Xiaobai naturally agreed with the suggestion of trying again. He slowly stretched out his arm and stopped a few centimeters away from Riko’s holy grounds. From afar, it looked like it was already stuck together.

At this moment, a figure walked out of the light.

“Xiaobai.”

The person had lovingly called out but when faced with the ambiguous scene, it was as though the person was struck by lightning.

“Her Excellency Kali!”

Riko yelled in utter astonishment when she saw the person who was none other than Kali.

Kali was completely dumbfounded. She knew that Shi Xiaobai was temporarily staying in Riko Minamiya's apartment, but she never believed that such a thing would happen.

Shi Xiaobai was actually touching another girl's breast? Furthermore, it was such an ample oppai that made her full of envy?

“What are the both of you doing!?”

Kali's voice was so cold that it sent a chill down to the marrow.

...

After Riko's careful explanation of the situation, Kali finally understood all that had happened. Although she felt sour in her heart, she had finally managed to calm down.

She suddenly began to regret not monitoring Shi Xiaobai for twenty-four hours a day because of her unnecessary reservations. If she had done so, she could have prevented Riko from disturbing Shi Xiaobai's awakening dream. And most importantly, she would not need to see such an ambiguous scene.

Alright, Kali admitted that she had been a little petty, but, but...

But her heart still felt sour. Was this the legendary sour grapes?

Kali glanced at Riko's extremely well developed chest and then lowered her head to glance at her flat chest. Suddenly, she felt like forgetting everything and destroy the whole damn world.

By the side, Riko's heart was beating as heavily as a drum. This was Her Excellency Kali! Even her teacher, One-Pun, lamented that he was inferior to an existence like her. She had always been her idol!

Riko never imagine to be able to be this close to her idol. It filled her heart with bliss, but the moment she thought of the likely possibility of leaving a bad impression on Her Excellency Kali, she immediately felt upset.

"I have understood the situation. Although you are at fault, it was unintentional. Besides, taking remedial actions after being aware of your mistake is pretty good. As Xiaobai's girl...**cough** As Xiaobai's mentor, I think you have done enough."

Kali did not reveal that she was Shi Xiaobai's girlfriend, mainly because she was embarrassed and secondly, because she did not wish to claim her sovereignty in front of a junior.

She might lose in terms of mammary volume, but she could not lose her magnanimity!

Hmph, how was one to level the world without a level chest!

Kali thought it over before saying to Riko, “You have already done enough. Leave the rest to me. I will help Xiaobai complete his superpower blueprint.”

Riko hesitated for a moment before she nodded in agreement. If Her Excellency Kali was willing to help Shi Xiaobai, she would definitely do a better job than herself.

As for Shi Xiaobai, he also chose not to say anything. He did not even retort Kali’s purporting of being a ‘mentor’. There was no other reason, because intuition told him...that it was best to shut up.

Kali was very pleased with this outcome. She looked at Shi Xiaobai and said, “Then come touch my...No, that’s not right. Come obtain my strength!”

Translator’s Note: Whiteology is the study of the adult visual novel, ‘White Album’, just like how Redology is the study of the number one Chinese classic novel, ‘Dream of the Red Chamber’. In China, it has resulted in Whiteology memes such as ‘how are you this skilled’. You can read a bit about Redology in another novel I co-translate, “[I’m Really a Superstar](#)” [Chapter 285-335](#).

Chapter 113: Why Are You This Skilled

“Then come touch my...No, that’s not right. Come obtain my strength!”

Kali nearly blurted out her thoughts and after she said that, she silently questioned herself.

When did I become this shameless? Hmph, it had to be anger!

Only then did Riko understand that Kali herself would replace her as the experimental subject when she said to leave the rest to her. She immediately wanted to stop her. Her Excellency Kali was such a noble and inviolable existence, so how could she take such a risk? What if the little pervert, Shi Xiaobai, touched that holy spot?

However, when Riko took a glance at Kali’s chest, the thought immediately perished. Well, although it was a faux pas, the little pervert probably would not touch Her Excellency Kali’s holy grounds because...it was a vast plain.

Shi Xiaobai took a few steps towards Kali. Since Kali had taken the initiative to make the request, he naturally would not refuse her.

Shi Xiaobai came in front of Kali and slowly stretched his hand out to the vast flatness.

Kali suddenly felt a bit nervous. This was the first time she had encountered such a situation.

Shi Xiaobai's hand came to a very stable stop a few centimeters from Kali's chest. After Riko's education, he understood very clearly that a girl's oppai was not to be easily touched!

“How is it? I didn't touch it, right!?”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and felt a sense of accomplishment.

However, Kali's mouth curled as she was almost close to tears. She said in sorrow, “Why are you this skilled?”

...

When Kali's “why are you this skilled” entered Riko's ears, Riko immediately felt extremely embarrassed. Shi Xiaobai was so skilled because he had experimented on her body dozens of times!

Riko suddenly felt that she had sensed a sour tone in Kali's words, but she immediately shook her head and rejected such a thought. It had to be an illusion. This was Her Excellency Kali, a god-like existence!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not think too much about it. He was trying his best to sense the power in Kali's body, but he was shocked to discover that he could not feel it at all!

His consciousness felt as though it had been devoured by the boundless Universe, preventing him from feeling a thing. There was no strength in Kali's body, or it should be said that because the strength was too powerful, it was so powerful that it felt like nothing.

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly and could not help but reach forward a bit. His palm tightly adhered itself to Kali's flat but slightly protruded bud.

“Uh!”

Kali let out an embarrassed cry, but she did not move backwards. Instead, she puffed her chest forward, like a little peacock trying to show its dominance of its territory. However, her beautiful snow-white face had already suffused a peach-like pinkness.

Beside them, Riko covered her tiny mouth while her eyes were in complete disbelief.

Her Excellency Kali has...has been violated!

At the same time, Riko felt an immense respect for her.

How great was Her Excellency Kali? For her student, she was willing to make such a great sacrifice!

Ooh, Shi Xiaobai O' Shi Xiaobai, how many good deeds did you do in your past life for you to be able to touch Her Excellency Kali's holy grounds!?

Riko was constantly yelling in her heart because she found it impossible to digest this shocking scene.

After more than ten seconds, Kali could no longer resist her embarrassment. She felt that she would end up going mad if this carried on, so with a wave of her hand, she interrupted Shi Xiaobai and quickly turned her body to conceal her gaffe. Only her slightly trembling shoulders betrayed the chaos in her heart.

“How was it?” Riko asked curiously.

“There was no feeling.” Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders.

“What!”

Kali angrily turned around and stared at Shi Xiaobai.

He actually said that he had no feelings from touching that spot? Did men really like bigger and ampler ones?

“There was no feeling of strength at all.” Shi Xiaobai added more details to his sentence.

Kali was stunned hearing this but she realized she had

misunderstood again. Immediately she lowered her blushing head.

Sigh, she had become so strange.

“Can it be because the strength is too powerful?” Riko analyzed. “The obtaining of strength definitely has limitations. Her Excellency Kali’s strength is too powerful for Xiaobai, so not being able to obtain it should be considered normal.”

Kali could only nod in agreement after hearing this. Indeed, if Shi Xiaobai could directly obtain her strength...then the superpower was probably far beyond SSS Class.

“Looks like I have to do it!”

At this moment, Riko said, “I’ll be the experimental subject!”

Riko was willing to let herself be touched once or twice for Her Excellency Kali’s purity!

However, Kali was stunned.

What was the meaning of this? What do you mean you do it?

Alright, you have all the say with big boobs!

Kali was very hurt.

...

...

Half an hour later, under Kali's stringent supervision, Shi Xiaobai completed nearly ten experiments without touching Riko.

After the experiments, they did not come up with any other theories. The duration of the "sword" indeed depended on the target's mental resistance. Every time Riko strongly resisted, the "sword" would disappear.

Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai could indeed use the "sword" to use High Frequency Vibrokinesis. However, Shi Xiaobai could only temporarily rely on instinct to use it, and not freely use it as he wished.

What made Riko completely speechless that Shi Xiaobai could use High Frequency Vibrokinesis through the "sword" without any conditions or limitations! As for her, she had a lot of conditions and limitations when she used High Frequency Vibrokinesis!

Shi Xiaobai's superpower was indeed a freak of nature. However, it did have quite a bit of conditions and limitations too.

However, as they had only one sample, there were many things that were still uncertain.

For example, must the target only be female?

Would the thing pulled out necessarily be a “sword”?

Would the strength of the “sword” be directly related to a superpower?

Was the duration of the “sword” purely related to the target’s resistance, or were there other determining factors?

All in all, there were still many questions regarding Shi Xiaobai’s superpower, but there was just too few subjects for experimentation, so there was no way to get the exact answer.

...

...

By the end of the last experiment, the sky had darkened. Riko volunteered herself to cook dinner and Kali decided to stay behind for dinner. Although she did not need to eat, she could not sit idle when she imagined the scene of Riko and Shi Xiaobai eating dinner together alone once she left.

“Hmph, Xiaobai and I are boyfriend and girlfriend who have signed a lovers’ pact...”

Kali comforted herself as she looked at Shi Xiaobai with an

unfriendly look.

During the meal, Shi Xiaobai was no longer wolfing down the food as before. However, he did not become restricted because of the two cute girls sitting beside him. He ate as he pleased.

Riko and Kali's gaze also turned soft at this moment.

“Right, since Xiaobai is now at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, is he able to join in the selection for collective training?”

Riko suddenly thought of this matter. Previously, she was of the opinion that Shi Xiaobai had fallen back too much, so she did not carry any hopes. But now, things were different. Shi Xiaobai was already at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Although it was unknown how good his combat skills were, there was still a chance for him to obtain a recommendation ticket for Annihilation division!

...

Chapter 114: Lovers' Pact 2.0

“Right, since Xiaobai is now at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, doesn't that mean he is able to participate in the collective training selection?” Riko suggested the possibility.

“What's the collective training selection?” Shi Xiaobai asked as he continued munching on his food. Having just awoken after sleeping for three consecutive days, he naturally did not know of the news regarding the two faction's collective training.

Riko was momentarily stunned before she explained patiently to him.

Moments later, Shi Xiaobai got a general gist of it and with a thought, he asked, “What are the benefits to joining the collective training?”

Riko rolled her eyes and said, “The Hero Association will definitely invest a great deal of resources in the collective training that they are organizing. It's a chance for every rookie that joins it to become stronger, one that should not be missed out! Besides, this collective training will be witnessed by the entire world, so your reputation will be greatly increased. If you are outstanding during the collective training, you might even have a lot of fans and eventually become a Celebrity Hero!”

This world's star-chasing was different from Earth. The main targets of idolatry would be heroes. Celebrity Heroes were heroes who were recognized as “celebrities” by the media. The

endorsement fees these heroes commanded was enough to last them the rest of their lives.

Most importantly, every word or thing Celebrity Heroes said or did would result in the reverence or support of their fans. For a Hero, wasn't glory, the stage and supporters the most important things?

As such, more than 95% of heroes had becoming Celebrity Heroes as their number one goal. Therefore, the collective training that could be viewed by the entire country was the best opportunity for the rookies to make their debut.

“However...” Riko chuckled and said, “However, it's best you don't bear high hopes. It's not that I'm trying to set you back, but being only at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, the possibility of being selected as one of the collective training's twenty is nearly zero.”

In Riko's point of view, the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm was considered the lowest requirement. There would definitely not be any lack of people at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm participating in this selection process. Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai had not cultivated for long. His combat skills would definitely be weaker than others.

A large number of people at the selection competition would definitely have proficiency levels at the Familiarized Proficiency, and a tiny minority might even be at the Exemplary Mastery realm!

It was unknown if Shi Xiaobai had even reached the Grasped Basics realms of a combat skill or two.

“However, making an attempt is still good. Even if you fail, it is also a valuable experience.”

Riko still hoped that Shi Xiaobai could attempt it. After all, people could only grow through a series of defeats and failures.

Kali snickered when she heard this. In terms of knowing Shi Xiaobai, she was still ahead of Riko after all.

Although Shi Xiaobai was only at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, even Xiao Xiao, who was at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, was powerless against him. Just with his Crab Steps at the Dominating Refinement realm, it was very difficult for anyone in the Psionic Mortal Realm to easily defeat him.

Upon thinking of this, Kali’s gaze turned softer. She had witnessed Shi Xiaobai’s diligence. For him to experience more than 2000 counts of defeat and remain resolute over a seven-day consecutive period without any rest, such a Shi Xiaobai had moved her heart as well as paining her heart.

Shi Xiaobai did not think too much about it. All he did was nod and say, “Then I’ll participate in it.”

His thinking was simple. As long as he could become stronger, he did not put it to heart if he would experience failure or if he would fail to pass the selection.

Before a King could be invincible, he had to first experience countless failures.

Furthermore, he was actually looking forward to the candidates Riko mentioned to give him a terrible defeat. It was best if there was someone like Thomas, who he could not surpass, but someone he could keep chasing after. If that happened, he could exceed his limits again and again.

“Alright!”

Riko immediately became happy when she heard Shi Xiaobai agree to it so candidly. Thinking of ensuring that this matter would be cast in stone, she quickly picked up her cellphone and walked to the corridor.

She made a phone call to ask her father about the time and relevant matters regarding Annihilation division’s selection.

...

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai and Kali were the only two people left in the living room.

Shi Xiaobai was still dining as though nothing had happened.

Kali hesitated for a moment before standing up to walk to Shi Xiaobai's side.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to look at her.

Kali gave a gentle smile and suddenly lifted the white eyepatch that covered her left eye, revealing that beautiful and holy golden pupil.

Shi Xiaobai took a glance at it and felt like his entire being was attracted by the golden shimmer from her pupil. He even forgot to breath momentarily.

The golden pupil seemed to contain the most sacred light in the world. On careful look, there was a tiny black dot in the middle of the golden pupil that could only be seen up close. The black dot was like a black hole that seemingly sucked Shi Xiaobai's soul into it.

That golden pupil and black dot felt as though a black sun that had compressed all of the dark eventide hung in the endless light.

Shi Xiaobai stared widely as he raised his head high. Slowly, his body left his seat as he allowed his eyes to approach the golden pupil.

He wanted to be closer to that eye and see it even clearer.

His forehead touched her forehead.

And very soon, his nose tip touched her nose tip.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai felt his lips being quickly and gently touched by a soft but moist object.

Her lips had touched his lips.

After Kali gave her light kiss, she immediately turned around and as her back that faced Shi Xiaobai trembled, she said, “This...this is Lovers’ Pact 2.0! You...You are not to be a casanova, nor are you allowed to have a change of heart. Do you understand?”

“I...I’ll be going first.”

After Kali said that, she escaped into the light once again, disappearing from the room.

Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes and sighed. “It looks like This King has been slacking recently to not even know that there was a Lovers’ Pact 2.0 version. Sigh, forget it. The next time This King sees her, she will definitely have a taste of the Lovers’ Pact 3.0 created by This King!”

...

...

The next morning, under Riko's urging, Shi Xiaobai woke up early. According to news obtained by Riko, the internal selection for Annihilation division was today!

"You can do it. During the selection, I'll be watching beside you. Of course, don't expect me to be some cheerleader, but I will spiritually cheer on you."

Before Shi Xiaobai left, Riko exhorted, "Go to the training grounds first. I'll be there right after you. By the way, remember to conceal your strength. There shouldn't be anyone who knows that you have broken through to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Tsk, this would be such a huge pleasant surprise!"

After Shi Xiaobai finished his breakfast, he took the taxi Riko got for him to the training grounds. As it was still early in the morning, there were only two people in the training classroom when Shi Xiaobai arrived.

They were unfamiliar faces for Shi Xiaobai, so after taking a glance, he sat down at a random spot and closed his eyes to enter Cogitation cultivation.

During Cogitation cultivation, he could enter his imagined heaven and earth, a world that he created freely by himself. He could also increase his own Psionic Ability realm; hence, whenever Shi Xiaobai was free, he would enter Cogitation cultivation. He had even used Cogitation in place of sleep last night.

Shi Xiaobai was able to enter a meditative state quickly, and in a few seconds, he was already in Cogitation.

Chapter 115: Hisith Wants Some Quietness

After Shi Xiaobai entered his meditative state, the two rookies who were also in the room finally eased their stiff expressions. There was no other way about it. Just seeing the little bastard, Tu Dahei, reminded them of the tragic memories of having their wallets emptied.

“Hmph, this fool is actually still alive? I thought he would have already been sliced into poker cards by Instructor Hisith.”

“I never expected him to dare come after playing truant for ten days. I’m already looking forward to what interesting game Instructor Hisith will play with him.”

“Unfortunately, today will be the selection for our division’s recommendation ticket. It is said that the Division Minister will come personally, so Instructor Hisith likely doesn’t have time to ‘play games’ today. However, if Tu Dahei were to participate in the selection, things will get interesting.”

“That’s right. I’m waiting to see Brother Wang Lin beat up Tu Dahei, hehe.”

The two rookies gloated over Shi Xiaobai’s upcoming misfortune as they looked unfriendly at him. In their hearts, Tu Dahei was a bastard who acted the pig to devour tigers and he was especially shameless. Although they knew that it was impossible for them to beat Tu Dahei, who was at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, it did not stop them from fantasizing how the strongest

rookie in Annihilation, Wang Lin, would trample all over Tu Dahei.

As the two rookies were in the midst of their discussion, droves of rookies entered the classroom. These rookies also naturally scanned the classroom and discovered Shi Xiaobai. Most of them revealed a bit of aghast embarrassment as they recalled of the terror of their wallets being emptied by Shi Xiaobai. However, they soon began to engage in schadenfreudian discussion.

By daring to participate in the collective training selection despite having asked for Instructor Hisith's underwear in public and then play truant for ten days, he was just courting death in a fanciful manner.

They began to look forward to what Instructor Hisith's expression would be when he saw Tu Dahei after entering the classroom, as well as what he would do.

At this moment, a keen-eyed rookie noticed through the classroom door a familiar figure slowly walking over.

“Instructor Hisith is here!”

The rookie shouted and immediately all the rookies leaped up like frightened deer. They hurried back to their seats and sat rigidly in an upright manner. They also immediately shut their mouths.

“Tap, tap, tap...”

Hisith walked into the classroom with his usual coquettish footsteps. The rookies did not dare lower their heads or look directly at Hisith. As such, all of them raised their heads to look at a wall. However, today was slightly special. A majority of people were secretly glancing in a particular direction.

While everyone was sitting up straight and upright, there was one person having his head cocked upwards and leaning on a chair. His eyes were tightly shut and he would occasionally nod, as though he was sleeping very soundly.

Ye Jiaquan, who sat beside him, constantly shook Shi Xiaobai's shoulders, but he failed to wake him up.

“Nice going, Tu Dahei.”

Quite a number people raised their thumbs. At this moment, even though they loathed Tu Dahei, they had to give a Like at how well Tu Dahei was at courting death.

Hisith naturally noticed the rookies' erratic gazes. As such, he similarly saw Shi Xiaobai. His pupils slightly constricted as a coldness suffused from his eyes. Following that, intense killing aura emanated the classroom.

The rookies immediately felt like they were encased in a frozen world while being coldly stared at by dozens of demonic frost

beasts. Their minds were in a constant shiver.

What a terrifying killing intent. How long had Instructor Hisith let his anger brew?

How would he vent the anger that he had suppressed for ten days on Tu Dahei?

The rookies struggled to swallow a mouthful of saliva. They had engaged in schadenfreudian moments ago about the tragedy Tu Dahei would face, but at this moment, they felt a tinge of pity.

Tu Dahei was going to be played to brokenness! He would either die or be crippled!

At that moment in time, Shi Xiaobai was at a critical juncture. He was very quickly about to finish constructing Disney World in his Cogitation world, but he was immediately jolted awake when he sensed the cold killer intent.

Shi Xiaobai slowly opened his eyes and using his instinct, traced the source of the killing intent. He immediately saw Hisith's squinted eyes that were so narrow that they looked like fish-shaped blades.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes immediately lit up and waved his hand at Hisith, saying, "Hi, Instructor Sisi, is there any game prepared that is worthy for This King to conquer?"

Shi Xiaobai had a good opinion of Hisith's games. Ten days ago, that "slightly more difficult" game had not only allowed his Psionic Ability control and Wavelet Shield to reach the Familiarized Proficiency and Grasped Basics realm respectively, but it had also allowed him to succeed in earning 100,000 cash for the Absolute Choice.

Such a game could come by the truckload.

The rookies were completely dumbfounded. Under the current circumstances, Tu Dahei still dared to speak so sarcastically?

Were you actually from an expendable team?

Instructor Hisith...was a devil who would really kill!

Indeed, at this moment in time, Hisith only wished he could tear Shi Xiaobai to pieces and then seal him in an Underworld Poker to be slowly taught a lesson, but he could no longer do so.

After receiving a warning from Kali, he understood that this very uncute little toy was no longer his.

Even if the chances of winning wasn't high against One-Pun, he still dared to engage One-Pun in a crazy battle because One-Pun would have to pay a terrible price to defeat him.

However, against Kali, he did not even have a single ounce of desire to fight her. Hisith was unable to tell what level Kali's

strength was at all. As such, he completely understood that he probably did not even have 0.00...01% chance of winning. It was unknown if he could harm a single hair on Kali even if he threw his life.

Hence, after four out of his seven servants was destroyed by Kali as a “tiny warning”, he had to retract whatever thoughts he had on dealing with Shi Xiaobai.

He could not afford to play with this toy.

As a result, Hisith's anger had brewed over the past few days. Seeing Shi Xiaobai was like seeing the enemy who had killed his servants, and when he heard Shi Xiaobai's taunt, he blew up.

He rarely could not control his emotions, but this time, his body trembled uncontrollably.

When Hisith's anger was dispersed outwards, the rookies immediately sensed the aftershock. They felt an intense trepidation that came right from the bottom of their hearts, one that struck deep into their very souls. They roared in their hearts: Instructor Hisith will definitely kill Tu Dahei. post-haste, immediately, promptly, now!

“Heh... heh.”

Hisith recalled the horrible deaths of his four precious servants, turning all of his killing intent into a stiff sneer. He stretched the

corners of his mouth and said at a blistering pace, “Today is the selection for the recommendation of the collective training. Your Division Minister will come personally, so don’t leave the classroom and stay here.”

After Hisith said, he turned around and walked towards the door. As he was about to leave, he paused and said, “If there’s anything, find me in the instructor’s office.”

Hisith’s mind was in a mess. He was afraid that he would lose control of his wrath if he carried on staying here. As such, he chose to leave, choosing to let it be out of sight, out of mind.

At that moment in time, Hisith only wanted quietness.

Don’t ask him why he wanted quietness.

Also, don’t ask him who quietness was.

Chapter 116: Where Did The Gentle Reminder Go

After Hisith left, the rookies heaved a sigh of relief, but at the same time they could see the horror in each others' eyes.

There was actually a moment in time when the madman, Instructor Hisith, would actually forcefully calm himself down?

What was the reason? Just because His Excellency One-Pun was protecting Tu Dahei?

The rookies kept speculating in their minds, but regardless of how they guessed, there was no way they could come up with the reason—Shi Xiaobai had a white as snow, smooth as silk, beautiful supple powerhouse!

Of course, if they were to know that Shi Xiaobai had signed a lovers' pact and lovers' pact 2.0 with the legendary Her Excellency Kali, and might even upgrade to “schlick, schlick, schlick” or even “pound, pound, pound” versions in the future, they would probably feel like hanging their necks on a noose. Stepping on a stool, they would say with a cry, “Help me kick the stool. Thanks!”

Shi Xiaobai slightly frowned when he sensed he was being the center of attention of suspicion and shock. Just as he was prepared to close his eyes to continue his Cogitation, he suddenly realized something was amiss.

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at Ye Jiaquan and asked, “Where’s This King’s right hand?”

“Ah? Isn’t your right hand on your body?” Ye Jiaquan was dumbfounded.

Wasn’t Brother Tu Dahei’s right hand all fine and dandy?

“This King is asking where did This King’s Snacks go to?”

Shi Xiaobai changed the way he asked his question.

“Me, Me does not know.”

Ye Jiaquan scratched his head with a look of innocence.

“Where is Lingcun!?”

Shi Xiaobai stared at Ye Jiaquan. He finally realized that Ye Jiaquan’s intellect was seriously inadequate. It was fine if he did not understand that his temporary right-hand man was Chen Lingcun, but to not even realize such a superficial title of King of Snacks ¹ bestowed by a King, it was indeed true that one could not play the zither to a cow.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings again and discovered that he could not find Chen Lingcun’s figure, causing him to feel somewhat puzzled.

He had a very, very good impression of this silver-haired youth who was termed the weakest rookie.

This was because every word from Lincun that praised “Shi Xiaobai” had reached the deepest recesses of his heart!

“Lingcun...Lingcun has left.”

Ye Jiaquan’s expression turned somewhat bleak. His voice became somewhat low-spirited as he said, “Seven days ago, Lingcun said that he was leaving for a place very, very far away and that he might never come back.”

Just thinking of how he might not be able to see Lingcun again, Ye Jiaquan’s spirit immediately fell.

“Oh,” Shi Xiaobai tersely responded. He was definitely affected emotionally. Although the time he spent with Lingcun wasn’t long, Lingcun was one of the earliest fanatic fans he had in this world, so he definitely took a spot in his heart.

However, since Lingcun had already gone to a faraway place and might never return, that was probably the end of their lives’ intersection.

“By the way, Lingcun left a letter for you. Me...Me didn’t know you would be coming today, so Me didn’t bring it.” Ye Jiaquan said apologetically and thought that he should have brought the letter

along with him every day.

Shi Xiaobai said nonchalantly, “It’s fine. The farewell letter would probably be just one of goodbye. It’s fine even if it’s not seen. In This King’s endless life, there is no lack of passers-by.”

Ye Jiaquan was stunned hearing this. He immediately gave an unprecedented look of seriousness on his honest face.”Me will definitely bring the letter tomorrow. You must take a look at it. Lingcun likes you very much. He must have something he wants to tell you.”

Shi Xiaobai felt the seriousness in Ye Jiaquan and solemnly nodded, “Although This King doesn’t like hearing the word ‘goodbye’, but This King is willing to take a look at what he left for This King.”

“Alright!” Ye Jiaquan immediately grinned. His silly and honest look made him look like an ox that plowed the fields.

...

Not long after Hisith left, a few footsteps were suddenly heard outside the door. The rookies immediately quietened down and looked towards the door.

Three people came in.

The person walking right in front was a stocky middle-aged man.

His facial features were chiseled, and one could make out the sharp look he had in his youth.

This person was Annihilation division's Division Minister. His nickname was Annihilation, and his real name was Yama Minamiya [2](#).

The second person who walked in was an elder. He was dressed plainly and had average looks. He did not look outstanding in any way.

Shi Xiaobai immediately recognized this elder as the elder who presided over the rookie evaluation test.

A screaming commotion ensued when the third person walked in.

It was Riko, who walked in. She was dressed in a white t-shirt, black jeans and red boots. She was dressed extremely simply.

Her smooth and long pair of legs, her perky hips, her proud S-curved figure and her full chest perfectly described what it meant to have a body of a seductress.

Coupled with a single ponytail, the pureness of her forehead and the angel-like exquisite beautiful face was exposed, it was something to holler about.

Evil demoness, you really want This Old Monk's life!

All the rookies' eyes stared straight at her as they could not help but discuss in whispers.

“Is that Miss Riko? She's so pure and beautiful. Those saintly school belles are just jokes in front of her.”

“Riko Minamiya, leader of Annihilation division's younger generation. The youngest Oceanic Pontus in history. The Minamiya family's eldest daughter, and the daughter of Annihilation's Division Minister, Yama Minamiya. At the same time, she's His Excellency One-Pun's only disciple! Phew, and she's only seventeen years old!”

“What is a goddess? This is a goddess!”

“Is Miss Riko here to supervise the selection today? Ah, it looks like I have to do well!”

“Toads like us shouldn't have any hope. Miss Riko had even relentlessly refused Young Master Red Lotus's pursuit. It is unknown which proud son of heaven can move Miss Riko's heart.”

“...”

As the rookies were engaged in whispers, Riko finally found Shi Xiaobai in the crowd. She immediately gave Shi Xiaobai a playful wink, indicating that she was supporting him in spirit.

A few plebeians sitting not far from Shi Xiaobai even believed that the goddess was looking at them. Immediately, they posed in what they thought was their coolest pose. All of them had one of the three greatest illusions in life—she was looking at me.

The ruckus amongst the rookies that was caused by Riko's presence quickly silenced itself under the deadpan Annihilation Division Minister's watchful eyes. Everyone soon shut their mouths.

After everyone quieted down, Yama Minamiya's powerful voice resounded, "I believe everyone knows the reason why the three of us are here, so I won't be explaining it any further. There is only one recommendation nomination, so we will only choose the strongest one. Everyone, do your best. Now, leave the classroom in an orderly fashion and gather in the field."

Riko was the first to leave the classroom after Yama Minamiya finished his sentence. Yama Minamiya smiled slightly and followed behind her. The rookies were stunned for a moment before they orderly left the classroom.

...

Moments later, the rookies that had been reduced to fifty people after Hisith's elimination gathered in a gigantic field lined in steel. Most of them felt slightly nervous.

They pricked up their ears because Yama Minamiya was about to

announce the rules of the selection competition shortly.

“The selection rules are very simple. We want the only person standing on the field!”

Yama Minamiya said the most simple but brutal rule in a simple manner.

The rookies were stunned. What did it mean to be the only person standing on the field?

At this moment, Riko and the elder had already come to the side of the field. Yama Minamiya scanned the rookies and said loudly, “All of you have thirty seconds to open up a distance between each other. Thirty seconds later, the fifty of you will undergo a rule-free free-for all. Those that get struck down and are unable to get up, or those who go beyond the field’s boundaries are eliminated until there is only one person left.”

“Then, the thirty-second preparation countdown begins now!”

Once Yama Minamiya said this, a few quick to react rookies had pulled other rookies who they had good relations with to a corner of the field.

The other rookies also began to act after a brief moment of shock.

Although the selection rules was simple, brutal and completely unreasonable, it was a good thing for many people. This was

because they could join forces to eliminate the stronger ones first!

Everyone had disparate thoughts, so the scene immediately turned chaotic.

By the side of the field, the elder looked at Riko and asked, “I wonder if Miss Riko has any rookie you would place your bets on?”

Riko did not answer because she was staring in a dumbfounded fashion at a particular spot in the field. Her expression looked slightly worried.

The elder traced Riko’s gaze and immediately saw Shi Xiaobai, who remained stationary. Immediately, he said with a wry smile, “This child is still as always...never hiding his edge.”

...

Shi Xiaobai was the only person that stood in his original spot and he was also the only person who did not make any preparations during those thirty seconds.

As such, while everyone was in the midst of preparation, they immediately noticed Shi Xiaobai. The majority of people simultaneously had a savage look appear in their eyes.

If Wang Qiang was the strongest person amongst the rookies, then Tu Dahei, who had eliminated Song Xiao ten days ago, was probably the second strongest rookie. Besides, it was also time to

settle the scores of being forced to part with their money.

More than half of the rookies had decided on uniting to eliminate Tu Dahei first.

It could be said that Shi Xiaobai being stationary caused him to be placed into an extremely passive position.

As such, Riko was watching anxiously by the side.

This silly Xiaobai, will you die by keeping a low profile?

As for Shi Xiaobai, he did not consider that much. The reason why he did not move was because he was lazy to move. He even dared to directly face the undead legions that numbered in the tens of thousands, so what more a mere forty-nine rookies?

Of course, he was still racking his brains on how to beat these rookies down because he only had two offensive methods. One of them was the Pig Slaughtering Knife and the second was the Turtle-speed Divine Punch that he had attained recently but had never used in actual battle.

However, Pig Slaughtering Knife was a killing knife technique that pursued an instant kill. Shi Xiaobai did not plan on using it; furthermore, he did not carry any knives with him.

As for Turtle-speed Divine Punch...it was completely unsuitable for a group battle!

Turtle-speed Divine Punch had two forms.

Turtle-speed Divine Punch's first form was extremely damaging, but the speed at which the punch was produced was heinously slow, slower than a crawl of a snail. It was usually used against high defense obstacles.

The second form of Turtle-speed Divine Punch punched out very fast, but the damage required a long period of accumulated hits before it would chain and explode. It was best used against agile enemies. After a certain number of accumulated hits, the damage was equally shocking.

However, both forms had the same word to describe it—"slow"!

The former was an extremely slow attack, while the latter required a long delay for damage.

The second form of the Turtle-speed Divine Punch could still be used in a single-opponent match by slowly wearing down his opponent, but it appeared too cumbersome in a free-for-all battle.

As such, Shi Xiaobai was feeling slightly vexed. It was very difficult for him to take the initiative to eliminate others!

"The thirty seconds of preparation has ended! The selection begins!"

Yama Minamiya's voice suddenly boomed. The rookies faltered in their breathing as the brutal and rule-free free-for-all began!

At the same time, numerous people charged at Shi Xiaobai instantly!

Shi Xiaobai revealed a slight smile slowly. Since all of you want to fight, This King will give you a good fight!

Shi Xiaobai tiptoed as he was about to use Crab Steps.

But suddenly, time came to a stop!

“Make your choice, youth!”

The world was frozen at that very moment. Time came to a halt and similarly, Shi Xiaobai was unable to move. A few lines of black text materialized slowly in front of him.

[Choice 1: Kill Chen Lingcun (A-level reward)]

[Choice 2: Save Chen Lingcun (B-level reward)]

[Choice 3: Give up on Chen Lingcun (F-level reward)]

“Make your choice, youth!”

...

Chapter 117: All Tu Dahei's Fault

[Choice 1: Kill Chen Lingcun (A-level reward)]

[Choice 2: Save Chen Lingcun (B-level reward)]

[Choice 3: Give up on Chen Lingcun (F-level reward)]

“Make your choice, youth!”

The sudden appearance of the Absolute Choice dumbfounded Shi Xiaobai. Thinking back to the various Absolute Choices he had encountered, every choice had content that typically had a clear objective that needed to be carried out even if they were difficult. However, the Absolute Choice this time was completely different. It was completely a mystery.

Firstly, where was Lingcun presently? What did he encounter that needed him to be saved?

Also, where's the time limit? The choice this time did not mention anything about time.

And more importantly, the Absolute Choice did not put the f*cking angel-like “gentle reminder” notice.

However, such an Absolute Choice type had in fact appeared before.

The first time the Absolute Choice appeared, it was Shi Xiaobai and Little Fatso, Zhu Zhu, having encountered the calamity fiend, Sahadun. Back then, an Absolute Choice with no time description or gentle reminder had appeared. There were three choices that time—Save Little Fatso, Escape and Watch by the sidelines.

And at this moment in time, a similar type of Absolute Choice had appeared. The target this time was Chen Lingcun, and there were only three choices, kill, save or give up.

However, it was also very different from back when he saved Little Fatso. When he was saving Little Fatso, Little Fatso was just seconds away from dying. Furthermore, it was a complete and real dying process that presented itself in front of Shi Xiaobai.

But this time, neither did Shi Xiaobai know where Lingcun was, nor did he know what danger Lingcun had encountered. He did not even know when the danger he needed to save Lingcun from would happen. It could be minutes, hours or even months later?

In short, the appearance of this Absolute Choice was extremely unreasonable.

However, Shi Xiaobai had to make his choice!

“Forget it, This King will adopt the necessary measures

depending on the situation!”

Shi Xiaobai fell into a prolonged deep thought and finally decided to temporarily ignore the matter. He did not know where Lingcun was, nor did he know what would happen. Hence, he could not employ any effective measures. The best choice was to keep the status quo and adapt to anything that cropped up.

Shi Xiaobai forcefully suppressed the worry in his heart, but he naturally chose Choice 2, saving Chen Lingcun!

...

...

When Shi Xiaobai made a choice that no one knew about, dozens of rookies had already made their own choices.

Some people hid in a corner with few people, attempting to watch by the sidelines. Some people gathered their peers to attack the rookies that were alone. Some calmly watched the situation and did not make any moves, while some began swinging their fists without any care or concern.

A chaotic battle immediately erupted in the vast field.

A five-men group with the dyed-haired youth, Hua Pengju, as leader, had charged straight at Shi Xiaobai once the selection battle began. They were the closest to him and they also had the most

confidence!

This was because they had already taken their proper positions. They had intended to suddenly strike with critical sneak attack, so now, they were confident that they could seal off all of Tu Dahei's routes of retreat. There was no reason for them to experience failure!

A look of deep disappointment flashed across Shi Xiaobai's eyes. There was no other reason other than because the five rookies' attacks...were too slow!

No, they were so slow that it made one cringe!

From Shi Xiaobai's point of view, King of Leopard's saber slashing, GunfireInTheWorld's Tsunami Scatter Shot and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld's Dual Blade Multi-slash were already extremely slow. They were many levels weaker than Thomas' Wraith Bullet or Princess Xiao Xiao's Crimson Netherworld.

However, even comparing the spiciest chicken, King of Leopards, against Hua Pengju's five-men team, it was like a tractor placed in front of a ox cart. Immediately, the tractor would have the superior feeling of being a Rolls-Royce.

Shi Xiaobai was extremely disappointed. Just a simple move would allow him to easily dodge the five people's attacks and he could effortlessly send them flying with a kick in their buttocks. It was easy to let them act out funny poses of a dog eating shit.

But what was the point in doing that?

Shi Xiaobai always found smurfing extremely boring. In the virtual competition, the noobs he encountered would choose to immediately escape.

Shi Xiaobai decided to ignore the five spicy chickens and spare them. He went searching for Wang Lin and Xiang Wu. It was possible that they could give him a fun time.

But at this moment, an abrupt idea that Shi Xiaobai could not resist overwhelmed his mind. It immediately lit up his eyes!

Shi Xiaobai gently pulled back the tip of his foot that was about to take flight!

At the same time, Hua Pengju's five-men team's attacks reached Shi Xiaobai. Five white Psionic Power surged over like fireworks exploding!

Fist blows, palm strikes, finger piercing, claw swipes, foot kicks. Five different forms of attack attacked Shi Xiaobai from different angles. All of them were filled with a similar ruthlessness and brutality!

Those rookies who chose to run around in the free-for-all battle or observe the situation, cast their gazes over. Immediately, their pupils shrunk.

Along the edge of the field, Riko was nervously holding her breath, while the elder's eyebrows were gently wrinkled.

Shi Xiaobai's situation was very dangerous!

However, at that extremely critical point in time, Shi Xiaobai suddenly appeared like a retard. He stood motionlessly on the same spot. He did not release his Psionic Power, nor did he put up any Psionic Barrier. He did not even raise his hands!

“Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Five explosions erupted simultaneously as the Psionic Power struck him. Hua Pengju's five-men team had all struck Shi Xiaobai's chest or back!

The scene was like five steel hammers striking onto soft tofu!

Although Shi Xiaobai did not crumble like tofu, the parts of his body that were struck sunk in. His face turned pale as his facial features scrunched up. With a gasp, he spat out boiling hot blood.

“Ah!”

Riko, who was outside the boundary, could not help but utter a scream.

Little pervert, why aren't you dodging!?

Yama Minamiya, who was already beside Riko, flashed a look of disappointment in his eyes.

This was Shi Xiaobai? What was the use of a genius if he was a coward who did not have the courage to dodge?

The five rookies were pleasantly surprised. They never expected that being the first to gang up would be so effective! Tu Dahei was not as strong as he seemed!

Hua Pengju was extremely overjoyed as the leader of the five. It could be said that he hated and feared Tu Dahei. Ten days ago at the rookie training grounds, he had sneakily attacked and mocked Tu Dahei under orders by Song Xiao. This was actually something trivial to him, however, his boss, Song Xiao, was ruthlessly eliminated by Tu Dahei almost immediately after that!

After Song Xiao was eliminated, Han Feng's faction completely crushed the remnant powers of Song Xiao's faction. Hua Pengju lost the ability to bully others by virtue of Song Xiao's influence. As he was usually arrogant and had rogue habits, Han Feng's faction directly rejected his allegiance.

As a result, he was shuddering in fear every day, afraid of the days of him being eliminated. Also, he had to constantly worry over Tu Dahei's sudden revenge on him one day.

The past ten days of Hua Pengju could be said to be miserable!

And all of this was all Tu Dahei's fault!

Now, he could finally seek revenge!

Chapter 118: This Turtle Is Hardest

Hua Pengju had always been waiting for the opportunity to seek revenge.

If not for Tu Dahei, the days of his and Song Xiao's tyranny in Team Red would not have departed with no sign of return. He would not have needed to desperately struggle on the edge of elimination!

As such, after Yama Minamiya announced the rules of a free-for-all, Hua Pengju gathered the four remaining members in Song Xiao's faction. There were all in the same boat to begin with, and now, they were all comrades in arms with a common enemy named Tu Dahei!

As such, their approach was direct and brutal. Just a simple phrase, fuck him!

Their idea was similarly simple. Even if they could not take Tu Dahei down through their collective efforts, they could at least ruthlessly hold Tu Dahei back. Since there was no way for them to obtain the nomination, there was no need to care if their actions would expose themselves to everyone around them.

If they could vent the anger in their hearts, so what if they harmed others and themselves?

However, Hua Pengju never expected that Tu Dahei was so weak,

even in his wildest dreams!

After Hua Pengju slammed his palm into Shi Xiaobai's chest, he did not hesitate to send another palm strike. As a person who perennially mixed in hooligan circles, he had the ruthlessness common hooligans lacked. Even though Shi Xiaobai had already spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, it was still not enough to make his heart turn soft!

Hua Pengju's intent was cold and brutal. Take advantage of his perilous situation!

A struggle appeared in the other four teammates' eyes. Reason told them that Tu Dahei was already very likely severely injured by the five of them. If they continued their beatings, Tu Dahei would likely be crippled even though it was unlikely he would die.

Was doing such a thing okay?

The four people exchanged glances as their mouths spontaneously suffused a sneer. They immediately struck Shi Xiaobai again. Since they connived with Hua Pengju, what sort of conscience could they have left? Striking with lesser strength was the only remaining benevolence they had.

As such, under everyone's watchful gaze in the middle of the field, a shocking scene that caused everyone to draw a gasp happened.

Hua Pengju and the other four began hitting Shi Xiaobai as though they were ruthlessly hitting sandbags. Shi Xiaobai was like a tiny boat that was floating in the middle of a surging storm, suffering the relentless crashing of waves. He was letting the five hit him without resisting!

This scene only happened for a few seconds, and by the time everyone managed to react, Hua Pengju and company had already struck Shi Xiaobai several times.

When Ye Jiaquan saw this, his eyes appeared like they were about to crack. He shouted “get lost” to the Team Blue members who had been pestering him right from the beginning as he tried to charge over to help Shi Xiaobai. However, the few Team Blue members kept blocking his path with deadpan expressions.

When Xiang Wu saw this scene, he grunted coldly and wanted to intervene, but when he turned around, he saw Wang Lin blocking his path. Wang Lin’s eyes were cold as he slowly raised the dagger in his hand.

When Riko saw this scene, her face was already pale. Without any hesitation, she wanted to rush into the field and stop this unilateral abuse.

Riko was blaming herself in her heart. Regardless of how much a genius Shi Xiaobai was, being able to cultivate to the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in twenty days was already a miracle. It was understandable that he had yet to grasp any combat skills. However, she had encouraged Shi Xiaobai to participate in this cruel selection free-for-all battle without completely

understanding the situation. She had harmed Shi Xiaobai.

“Hold on.”

A hand pulled Riko’s arm back.

“Father!?”

Riko turned her head to look at Yama Minamiya, who had stopped her. Her eyes were filled with anxiety. Was her father prohibiting her from interrupting the selection battle?

Riko clenched her teeth slightly. She seldom rebelled against her family, but this time, she could not relent. Even if she were to disappoint her father, she had to stop Hua Pengju.

Riko used her strength in order to free herself from Yama Minamiya’s grip.

Yama Minamiya suddenly said with a solemn expression, “Look carefully at the child’s expression.”

Only then did Riko realize that her usually taciturn father had a smiling look of interest in his eyes.

Riko immediately turned her head to look at Shi Xiaobai. As she focused her eyes, she saw how Shi Xiaobai’s body was shaking in a manner that could not be clearly seen while Hua Pengju and

company were beating him.

That face should have been pale, but...

Riko's pupils abruptly constricted.

“He is smiling!?” Riko exclaimed in horror. At that moment in time, Shi Xiaobai had an undisguised smile suffusing from his lips. While experiencing the five-men gang beating, he was still able to smile?

At the same time, Riko realized another shocking matter!

Shi Xiaobai never issued out a tragic scream from the beginning to the end. No, not only that, on closer inspection, the skin that was exposed by Shi Xiaobai did not have any bruises after experiencing Psionic Ability attacks!

What...was going on!?

...

...

Shi Xiaobai wanted to laugh out loud. If not for this sudden Absolute Choice that caused him to be somewhat worried for Chen Lingcun's safety, he would have brazenly laughed out loud.

Shi Xiaobai wanted to moan comfortably while enduring Hua Pengju and company's beatings. Every muscle on his body was trembling in bliss, giving him the satisfaction of having his heart filled to the brim with joy.

Oh, don't misunderstand. Shi Xiaobai is not into masochism, He just could not extricate himself from the indulgence of becoming stronger.

Eh? You are asking why he becomes stronger while being beaten?

Hehe, you are really out of it!

Speaking of this matter, there is a need to mention that when Shi Xiaobai cultivated his Crab Steps to the "Dominating Refinement" realm, the Absolute Choice had given him a B-Class reward—Filthy Turtle Divine Technique!

And Filthy Turtle Divine Technique was truly a divine technique!

This divine technique consisted of three parts. The first was a body tempering cultivation technique—"This Turtle Is Hardest".

"This Turtle Is Hardest" was similar to traditional body tempering techniques. The final goal was to similarly increase a cultivator's physical defense through cultivation. It meant improving the four major defenses—skin, flesh, bones and mental defenses.

Every Psionite would supposedly choose a body tempering cultivation technique that was most suited for them to increase their physical defense.

This Turtle Is Hardest was one of the most ordinary and common body tempering cultivation techniques.

However, the cultivation method of “This Turtle Is Hardest” was extremely special. It was completely different from other fancy schlocks.

Common body tempering cultivation techniques would use a specific motion or training method to constantly push the body to its limits in order to improve the body’s constitution.

Some body tempering cultivation techniques would send their Psionic Power gushing through their bodies and use the passing of time to transform their bodies.

There were other insane body tempering cultivation techniques that used the power of nature to temper their bodies.

For example, using fire to temper their bodies while rising from the ashes, or using lightning tribulations to construct a lightning tempered body. There were also water, wind, ice-snow tempered bodies, etc. Through these natural forces, they could temper their bodies’ physical properties and through that improve their body’s defenses and resistances.

The aforementioned were the most commonly seen body tempering cultivation techniques, but “This Turtle Is Hardest” did not belong to any of this.

This Turtle Is Hardest’s body tempering cultivation technique had a complicated theory, but to sum it up in three words, it was—getting a beating!

Chapter 119: Imbalanced Broken Character In The World

You didn't read wrong. Constantly taking a beating was the enthralling cultivation method to the body tempering technique, "This Turtle Is Hardest".

From a beating, the body's cells would constantly die and the newly produced cells would become stronger. As for skin, muscles, blood, bones and mental will, they would all also become stronger after receiving a beating.

So, do you want to master a divine technique? Then get beaten up!

Do you want to become a true filthy turtle? Then get beaten up!

Do you want you and your little partner down there to become harder and harder, till it became the "hardest"?

You have to want that!

Then why aren't you fucking getting beaten up as soon as possible!?

...

At the moment Shi Xiaobai was being surrounded by Hua Pengju and company's attacks, he suddenly recalled of his Filthy Turtle Divine Technique and its "This Turtle Is Hardest". This gave him the idea of letting himself take a beating.

According to the cultivation rules of "This Turtle Is Hardest", the more badly he was beaten up, the greater the improvement to his body. As such, Shi Xiaobai directly gave up resisting and did not dodge at all.

However, Shi Xiaobai immediately regretted after being hit by the first five Psionic Ability attacks, because his physical defense was like tofu crap!

He had yet to undergo any body tempering cultivation so his physical defense was only at the standard of a normal human. Receiving the direct Psionic Ability attacks by Hua Pengju and company was a bit too much for him.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt his organs twist and he even spat out a mouthful of blood!

But!

But a miraculous thing happened. After suffering the first strikes and spitting out fresh blood, Shi Xiaobai actually felt comfortable all over. It was as if he was engaging in a ice water bucket battle in a hot summer day, and had ice water drench his entire body.

Shi Xiaobai immediately realized that this was the effect of his endurance technique, the second part of Filthy Turtle Divine Technique—"Unleaking Turtle Aura".

"Unleaking Turtle Aura" was an endurance technique that inhibited sensory stimuli to obtain an endurance effect.

For example, if you were to use "Unleaking Turtle Aura" when you are out of breath while running, then the sensory stimuli from the difficulty in breathing, the body fatigue and muscle soreness would be completely inhibited. Since you can't feel them, your body would not make a stress response, allowing you to carry on exercising.

Of course, this was somewhat forcefully extending one's endurance, and it was easy to harm oneself by doing so.

However, the endurance ability of "Unleaking Turtle Aura" was truly formidable. It could inhibit the painful stimuli in seconds, causing the pain to be dispersed across the entire body.

Well, in short, all Shi Xiaobai felt was a sense of soreness and immediately felt a strange feeling that resembled leveling up. Just like how his current body constitution was originally 1, now it had changed to 2.

This feeling was very clear and realistic. It even felt like those numbers could be specifically discerned.

Shi Xiaobai knew this was not an illusion. This was the body tempering effects of “This Turtle Is Hardest”!

Hua Pengju and company’s fists and feet were constantly striking his body. After he deliberately avoided his vital body parts, his body began to continuously cultivate as it suffered injury.

Due to “Unleaking Turtle Aura”, Shi Xiaobai did not experience too much pain while being beaten, instead, he felt comfortable all over.

Due to “This Turtle Is Hardest”, Shi Xiaobai’s physical defenses were constantly rising while he was being beaten. His skin, flesh, bones were becoming harder and harder.

With the two combined, it was simply perfect!

Of course, the main reason why he was able to accomplish these two points was because Hua Pengju and company’s damage numbers did not exceed Shi Xiaobai’s threshold. Furthermore, with Shi Xiaobai deliberately avoiding his vital parts from being hit, it reached the most suitable balance.

There was a way to describe how Hua Pengju and company’s beating of Shi Xiaobai was like—It was actually giving Shi Xiaobai a fucking happy ending!

In summary, the feeling of his physical defense rise from 1 to 10 quickly made Shi Xiaobai feel joy both physically and spiritually.

An undisguised smile began to suffuse on his lips.

Finally at a particular moment and with a particular punch, Shi Xiaobai's body suddenly emitted a "boom" sound and quivered. A strange force began to flow throughout his entire body.

Shi Xiaobai's physical defense had reached the second level while being beaten!

"Wahaha!"

Shi Xiaobai was already bursting with joy.

...

...

Initially, Hua Pengju and company's brutal gang beating of Shi Xiaobai helped the other rookies vent their anger, but they still felt some pity. However, as the beatings continued, everyone noticed something strange.

That's not right.

This Tu Dahei did not even scream out once. Why did the occasional moan or two sound like he was having a full-body massage? Other than spitting out a mouthful of blood at the beginning, he did not appear as though he was being brutally

beaten up.

The ones who directly perceived this was naturally Hua Pengju and company. The more they beat Shi Xiaobai up, the stranger they felt. Although Tu Dahei did not resist the beatings and they felt great venting their anger, why was this bastard like a Xiaoqiang-like cockroach that cannot be taken down after all this time?

Also, why did they feel like the bastard's body was getting harder and harder. Initially, their punches and kicks felt like they were hitting into sand, but now, it felt like every punch was hitting into a rock!

Hua Pengju's heart was beginning to drum. He had been deliberately aiming for Tu Dahei's vital parts and even wanted to cruelly teach Tu Dahei's little partner below a lesson, but he was aghast to realize that he could not hit it!

He had clearly kicked Tu Dahei's groin, but for some strange reason, he ended up kicking on Tu Dahei's thigh. Once or twice was fine, but it was happening every time! This was fishy!

Was this...truly a coincidence!?

...

"This is not a coincidence! But...how did he do it?"

By the side of the field, Riko also discovered after careful observation that although Shi Xiaobai looked like his body was staggering after being beaten by the five, every hit had avoided his vital parts. The worry in her heart began to transform into astonishment and curiosity.

“This child is a bit odd. Heh. It might look simple to dodge those strikes at his vital parts every time, but it is actually extremely profound. I estimate that his evasion movement technique might very well have reached the Exemplary Mastery realm or even higher.”

The composed Yama Minamiya was also somewhat impressed by now. With a smile, he said, “This child can clearly avoid those attacks easily, but he chose to make an opposite choice. He is purposely trying to get beaten! To speak the truth, I’m also very curious how he is doing it.”

Riko was extremely shocked. She had also discovered that Shi Xiaobai was deliberately moving his body to be beaten, so she was slightly relieved. But Yama Minamiya said that Shi Xiaobai was using a evasion movement technique at the Exemplary Mastery realm?

How could this be possible? She spent a decade cultivating “Meteor Steps” before barely reaching the Exemplary Mastery realm. At the age of seventeen, she was already considered a genius. How old was Shi Xiaobai and how many days had he cultivated for?

Riko, who had already received numerous setbacks by Shi

Xiaobai's freakish talent to the point of questioning life, was already beginning to question the world.

Boohooohoo. The world is indeed unfair, especially when there is such an imbalanced broken character like Shi Xiaobai.

...

Chapter 120: This King Is Wrong

Five minutes after the free-for-all began, five people were eliminated in succession. The elder who was the supervisor would escort the eliminated rookies out when they were unable to hold on in order to prevent them from receiving irrecoverable injuries.

The elder's judgment was very timely and precise; hence, in this free-for-all battle, he became extremely critical when it came to controlling the situation.

Because of him, the rookies could let themselves go and engage in battle wholeheartedly. Even those slippery ones that kept fleeing had joined the the battle turmoil.

Of course, the rookies finally came to a realization because of the elder's presence—the elder did not intervene in Hua Pengju and company's gang abuse from the beginning to the end. Up to that moment in time, he did not seem to have any intention of escorting Tu Dahei away from the scene.

What did this mean?

It meant that Hua Pengju and company's damage was not enough to deal Tu Dahei any serious internal injuries!

Holy motherfucking hell, that little bitch, Tu Dahei, was so good at taking a beating!?

The rookies who wanted to fish in troubled water by secretly doing something bad during the five-men team's unilateral abuse of Shi Xiaobai quietly dismissed their ideas.

As for Hua Pengju and company, they naturally realized something amiss. Other than Hua Pengju, who was still making unremitting efforts, the other four began to gradually stop.

Fuck, why did punching Tu Dahei's body feel like they were hitting a metallic plate?

"Boss Pengju, there's something strange about the kid."

"That's right, something is really strange."

"I'm a bit tired, it's a tiredness that comes from the soul."

"Shall we take a break?"

The four rookies stopped as they looked at Shi Xiaobai, who was trying his best to pout but could not conceal his beaming smile. Suddenly, they felt like they had done the stupidest thing in the world.

When Hua Pengju saw the other four stop, his face turned black. Especially when he saw Tu Dahei's irksome expression, the indignation in his heart grew even more intense. He was unwilling to give up!

Hua Pengju took a deep breath and looked at the four remaining lackeys he had.

“Are you willing to give up just like that?” Hua Pengju said loudly, “Have you forgotten how Boss Song Xiao left in such immense grief that he forgot to take the cigarettes he had hidden? Have you forgotten how miserable it was on the day after you were robbed of all your cash, forcing you to find a small store and run away after eating? Have you forgotten the struggle when you personally handed the elimination vote to Ah Three and Ah Four?”

“Ah One, Ah Two, Ah Five, Ah Six, can you really forget that!?”

Hua Pengju clenched his fists as the veins on his face bulged. His tone was filled with indignation, making his four lackeys bow their hearts involuntarily.

Hua Pengju pounded his chest with his fist and said heavily, “I can never forget all of that, so I am indignant. Our revenge opportunity is just in front of us, so how can we give it up? How can we quit halfway? Do you still remember...our common faith?”

The four lackeys raised their heads spontaneously as fighting spirit was reignited in their eyes. They said in unison, “Insist on robbing pregnant women of their seats on public buses, never helping a granny cross the road, even a penny on the ground has to be put into our pockets, we want to be the most bohemian of heroes, drinking the hardest liquor, chase the hottest girls and lead the best lives!”

Hua Pengju nodded his head in satisfaction and loudly said, “Then tell me, will you be willing to give up on your revenge!?”

The four people looked each other in the eye as they hoarsened their throats by shouting, “We are unwilling!”

Hua Pengju stretched out his fist and coldly said, “Then, what should we do now?”

The four lackeys hurriedly stretched out their fists, and putting their fists together, it was as though they stacked their faiths into the most resolute of convictions.

“Fuck Tu Dahei!”

The five people shouted in unison as they gave each other an encouraging smile. This was what brothers and comrades in arms were. They had to act together while having a good time!

“Eh? Boss, why did Tu Dahei...Tu Dahei disappear?”

At this moment, Ah Six noticed that Tu Dahei, who they had previously been surrounded, had disappeared without them knowing when it happened!

Hua Pengju was stunned as he hurriedly surveyed his surroundings. He was slightly delighted.

The bastard was indeed barely enduring it. He finally could not withstand it and had escaped!

“Found him. He’s there!”

Keen-eyed Ah One found Shi Xiaobai’s figure in the chaotic battle!

“Why did he run there!?”

Hua Pengju was slightly surprised. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was heading towards the most chaotic spot in the field where there was the most number of rookies gathered.

There, the backbone of Team Blue, led by Wang Lin, was engaged in an intense chaotic group battle with Team Red’s core members who were led by Han Feng!

That was a forbidden zone in the free-for-all, why was Tu Dahei heading there?

“Forget it, let’s chase after him! He must be afraid and trying to escape. Brothers, our chance is here. Follow me!”

Hua Pengju waved his hand in high spirits and made the first move to chase after Shi Xiaobai. His four lackeys immediately followed behind in excitement!

...

Shi Xiaobai naturally was not afraid of leaving the encirclement of Hua Pengju and company.

If it was revealed, it would probably make Hua Pengju and company vomit blood—He was only searching for a more intense and brutal “abuse”.

After being surrounded and beaten up by Hua Pengju and company, with the passage of time, his body's attributes were growing at a slower pace. After it rapidly rose to 10, every increment was becoming slower and slower, and by the time it reached 14, it nearly remained stagnant.

Shi Xiaobai sensed that his physical defense had went from tofu crap to a small metallic plate. Hua Pengju and company's damage towards him was minimal and could no longer be effective in his body tempering.

This was a very serious problem. Hua Pengju and company could no longer satisfy Shi Xiaobai!

Hence, when the dissatisfied Shi Xiaobai saw Hua Pengju and company stop, he began scanning for the most chaotic zone in the free-for-all battle as he immediately turned fickle.

In short, after having dallied with them, Shi Xiaobai now wanted

to forsake them to pursue his own happiness.

Shi Xiaobai's actions were in fact monitored by most people. When the Team Blue and Red members who were in confrontation saw Shi Xiaobai swagger over calmly after having been beaten by Hua Pengju and company for several minutes, they were completely stunned.

When they noticed Shi Xiaobai walk into the zone where Team Red and Blue's core members were brawling, Wang Lin, Han Feng, Xiang Wu and company all stopped. Everyone else also could not help but stop their fights.

However, everyone was looking at Shi Xiaobai with an alert but hostile gaze.

What was this little bitch trying to do this time?

Shi Xiaobai faltered slightly because he never expected for the rookies to stop so easily and pay him attention. He was originally wondering what he had to do to make everyone notice him.

Shi Xiaobai was very satisfied that all the rookies had consciously looked at him. He naturally did not want to waste this heaven-given opportunity!

Shi Xiaobai walked to the center of the group battle zone and looked at all the rookies around him. With a solemn and serious expression, he took a deep breath and loudly said, "This King

wants to apologize to all of you. This King was wrong!”

...

Chapter 121: Peeling Memories

“This King wants to apologize to all of you. This King was wrong!”

Everyone who had their ears pricked up were completely stunned. Hua Pengju and company that were in the midst of running stopped in surprised. A look of disbelief flashed in Riko’s eyes. Yama Minamiya also revealed an amazed expression, while Wang Lin and Xiang Wu slightly revealed a look of disappointment.

Tu Dahei was actually apologizing?

That mighty and fearless Tu Dahei actually apologized?

Although he still addressed himself “This King” in an infuriating manner which deserved a beating, everyone could feel the sincerity in his apology from his serious expression!

So Tu Dahei was just barely putting on a front. After being beaten up by Hua Pengju and company, he finally understood that he should plead for forgiveness and ask to be spared?

“This King is wrong. This King always thought that all of you were pious devotees of the God, Naagin [1](#), but it seems it was all wishful thinking on This King’s part!”

Shi Xiaobai's tone was filled with a deep sense of remorse.

When the majority of rookies heard his words, their faces stiffened. "Naagin" made them recall the day of terror when they handed their wallets over.

This little bitch had used the name of the God, Naagin, to swipe their bodies clean of their cash, and he finally knew he was in the wrong?

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai reached out for his wallet at his waist. The wallet was also conveniently swiped from a rookie ten days ago.

Shi Xiaobai said in a sad tone to everyone, "All of you are not devotees of God, Naagin, your faith was all faked, and This King was mistaken that you were pious devotees and took your faith. It was all This King's fault!"

Everyone's breathing stagnated. This little bitch sure was thick-skinned.

You had clearly forcefully made us hand over our faith (cash), why did your mouth make it sound like we were being fake?

Some rookies were extremely vexed, but they did not immediately throw a smack at Shi Xiaobai. This was because they wanted to see what this darn youth's intentions were after saying all that.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai took out a wad of cash from his wallet!

“This King admits his mistakes, so This King has decided to give all of you an opportunity to take back your faith!”

Shi Xiaobai raised the wad of cash and grinned. Like a patient cheetah that slightly bared its fangs, he finally loudly revealed his final goal, “Come, raise your fists and punch This King. As long as you give This King a good beating, This King will reward you handsomely!”

Shi Xiaobai waved the cash in a high-spirited manner.

Everyone’s gaze glazed over at that moment.

Riko snorted a laugh and thought how “this was very Shi Xiaobai”.

Yama Minamiya was enlightened and was somewhat thankful that the position of Shi Xiaobai’s mentor had been snatched by Kali. This monkey was probably not someone he could control.

Hua Pengju and company realized the harsh truth. The beating they gave was just a happy ending for him.

That’s not right. Looking at the amount of cash in his hand, he

could get many happy endings from that!

The other rookies reacted after losing themselves in a daze for a few moments. They immediately found it amusing and angry.

There was a person in this world that actually paid others to get beaten? That's not right. This was fucking using their own money to invite them to beat him!?

“Oh? Do all of you not even have the courage to make a move against This King?”

When Shi Xiaobai saw how everyone was frozen motionless, he turned nervous.

These rookies were precious system monsters to him. They were valuable experience points!

“This King is very disappointed to realize that all of you are such cowards.”

Shi Xiaobai's words finally ignited the fury of everyone. The rookies closest to him immediately raised their fists and punched at Shi Xiaobai!

The other rookies nodded at their opponents from their ongoing standoffs and agreed to come to a temporary truce!

Everything no longer mattered, the most important matter was to beat the extremely arrogant and utterly contemptible Tu Dahei to a pulp!

Fuck, we can lose the group battle, but Tu Dahei has to die!

“Let me do it first!”

“No, let him go, let me do it!”

“It’s everyone’s responsibility to beat down a wretch!”

“...”

Other than a few rookies who did not want to engage in a many against one battle, the other rookies surrounded Shi Xiaobai. The matter regarding Naagin had long made them bear a grudge. Now, with them being mocked, how could they stand for that?

The rookies charged over while issuing war cries!

Shi Xiaobai immediately beamed.

This was experience. Come, come, hurry up and beat This King violently!

Three punches were the first to hit Shi Xiaobai. Like a long

drought that received rain, Shi Xiaobai could not help but moan.

Seeing the rookies surrounding him in rage, Shi Xiaobai felt that happiness had come too suddenly!

...

Thirty minutes later.

As dozens of rookies took turns to violently beat Shi Xiaobai, Shi Xiaobai finally could not resist the joy in his heart. He began to brazenly laugh.

The laughter made the rookies feel like they had seen a ghost, but immediately it gave rise to more anger! Immediately, another new round of battle began. People lined up to take turns beating Tu Dahei up.

Wang Lin, who had been observing from the side for a very long time, looked at the nearby Xiang Wu and said, “I want to try and see how amazing Tu Dahei’s resistance is against beating.”

“Are you sure it’s just amazing, and not shocking?”

Xiang Wu made a rare laugh but turned serious and said, “I’m also very curious how he does it. How is he still so lively after being beaten by dozens for half an hour?”

“I’ll be going first.”

After Wang Lin said that, he walked towards Shi Xiaobai.

Xiang Wu hesitated for a moment before he followed behind.

The two strongest Annihilation rookies had finally made their move.

...

...

Three hours later.

Yes, you didn’t read wrongly. Three hours have passed.

In the entire period of three hours, there was no need to talk about Shi Xiaobai being beaten down, there was not even a single instance of Shi Xiaobai letting out a scream. And most important of all, this fellow’s body was becoming harder the more he was beaten!

During these three hours, people successively realized of the tragic fact.

Fuck, they just realized they had been giving Shi Xiaobai a free

happy ending.

Nearly everyone chose to give up after struggling for a moment.

At this moment in time, only Hua Pengju, Wang Lin and Xiang Wu were putting in the final efforts.

Hua Pengju managed to sustain a very long time this time, unlike how he usually failed to get it up. The indignation in his heart made him refuse to give up.

Wang Lin, who was the strongest person amongst the rookies over the past few days, naturally had some pride in him. Although Tu Dahei appeared to be excited and happy while he was beating him up, Wang Lin could not lower his proud head.

When Xiang Wu attacked Shi Xiaobai, he realized how lacking his strength was and the flaws in his techniques. As such, he used Shi Xiaobai as a training partner, so he was still putting in the effort.

In short, there were three people who did not give up. Yama Minamiya and company did not intervene which caused the “abuse” that no longer felt the same to continue on. At this moment in time, people were not waiting for the moment Shi Xiaobai collapsed but for the moment Wang Lin and company would curse out loud with a “Fuck this, I’m done.”

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was already extremely satisfied despite the increase being extremely slow near the later stages. In three hours,

his physical numbers had risen to 19, and nearing the end, it was stuck for half an hour without showing any signs of breaking the stagnating trend.

As such, Shi Xiaobai already realized that the experience from the rookies, including Wang Lin and Xiang Wu, was utterly inadequate.

“It’s time to end the battle. Time to use This King’s Turtle-speed Divine Punch!”

Shi Xiaobai thought in his mind.

But at this moment, a clear face appeared in his mind. It was a delicate face with beautiful features beneath silver hair. A faint smile suffused on the face’s lips.

“This King’s right hand, King of Snacks!?”

Shi Xiaobai was immediately shocked because Chen Lingcun’s face did not flash past his mind and instead was fixed in his consciousness. It was like a picture had forcibly occupied a computer screen.

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and blinked but he could not evict the clear face from his mind.

But immediately following that, the face in his mind started to turn blur and flash. The colors of the picture seemed to peel off,

like paint that was paring.

At the same time, the experiences he shared with Chen Lingcun suddenly began playing from the end to beginning in his mind.

The scene of how Lingcun shattered his Psionic Shield with a light punch.

The scene of how Lingcun was mocked as the weakest rookie.

The scene of how Lingcun was called up the stage.

The scene of how Lingcun told him not to help Xiang Wu by acting impulsively.

The scene of how Lingcun analyzed how to conceal the identity of “Shi Xiaobai”.

The scene of how Lingcun said “Shi Xiaobai is the hope of all humanity”.

These scenes played frame after frame in his mind before they peeled off like paint, eventually turning to white blankness. And when Shi Xiaobai realized that every scene had gone white, he felt like they had all disappeared from his mind!

It was as though—his memories were being lost!

And at this moment, his mind had played the first scene of their meeting. Under the sunlight, that silver-haired youth was standing beside Ye Jiaquan with his hands in his pocket, a smile suffusing across his lips.

And this scene was just like the previous ones. It slowly lost its colors and turned a blur. It was about to turn to white blankness.

“No!”

Shi Xiaobai widened his eyes slightly as intuition told him that the moment this picture disappeared, he would completely forget the silver-haired youth.

Chen Lingcun would become an existence that never existed in his world!

“Make your choice, youth!”

A fiery voice resounded in his mind. Shi Xiaobai’s body was frozen in time, but his consciousness regained its freedom.

He saw at a glance Hua Pengju and his four lackeys that were charging at him. Their face had hideous smiles and confident looks.

At the same time, black text materialized before his eyes.

[Choice 1: Kill Chen Lingcun (A-level reward)]

[Choice 2: Save Chen Lingcun (B-level reward)]

[Choice 3: Give up on Chen Lingcun (F-level reward)]

Shi Xiaobai finally realized that time had wound back, returning to the moment the Absolute Choice appeared. This meant that—he had failed the choice he made!

This meant that...

“Make your choice, youth!”

...

Chapter 122: Do Not Scream In Pain Even When Balls Shatter

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice continue to resound in his mind, as Shi Xiaobai's thoughts felt like they were being mixed into a mess, while the lost memories were immediately squeezed back into his head. The scenes that had to do with Chen Lingcun was pieced back one by one.

Moments later, Shi Xiaobai's churning mind finally calmed down, but the calm did not last long because Shi Xiaobai had realized a harsh reality—time had looped back, returning to the moment the Absolute Choice appeared. This meant that he had failed the choice of [Save Chen Lingcun] after three hours!

Shi Xiaobai recalled how he had failed twice back when he chose [Save Little Fatso], and both failures were a result of Little Fatso, Zhu Zhu, being killed by Sahadun. Hence, it could be determined that failure to save the target was equivalent to the target dying!

With the aforementioned conjectures, it all pointed to a conclusion—Chen Lingcun would die three hours later!

Shi Xiaobai's heart immediately turned heavy. Even if the Absolute Choice repeated again, he would still naturally choose [Save Chen Lingcun]. It had nothing to do with what position Chen Lingcun had taken up in his heart. Even if it was a stranger, as long

as it wasn't a wicked person, amongst the choices of [Kill], [Give up] or [Save], he would definitely choose [Save].

He always remembered the final words his elder brother said to him in that tiny cupboard—He was the King who would eventually save the world. If he did not have the courage or will to save a single person, what was the point of talking about saving an entire world?

However, the most intractable problem in front of him was how he was to save Chen Lingcun.

The only information he now knew was that “Chen Lingcun would die three hours later”. Where Chen Lingcun was, or what fatal danger he would encounter were all crucial clues that Shi Xiaobai lacked.

In such a situation, Shi Xiaobai had to first find out where Chen Lingcun was. And the person that could provide the slightest of clues about Chen Lingcun's whereabouts was clearly...Ye Jiaquan!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes slightly lit up. Maybe Chen Lingcun had said something before he left, or he might have inadvertently revealed where he was heading?

Maybe Ye Jiaquan knew where Chen Lingcun was!

...

...

Time once again began spinning. Hua Pengju and company were charging at Shi Xiaobai from different directions. They believed that had sealed off all routes of retreat for Shi Xiaobai, so their strike was both ruthless and decisive!

But this time, Shi Xiaobai did not retract the tip of his foot that was about to take flight!

Shi Xiaobai was feeling a sense of pity. After the time reset, his technique, “This Turtle Is Hardest” that reached level 19 returned to its original level 0. His body was still tofu crap, and in other words, the three hours of “happy ending” was done for nothing!

Also, at this moment, Shi Xiaobai no longer had time to tangle himself with Hua Pengju and company. He no longer had time to use “This Turtle Is Hardest” to cultivate his body because [Save Chen Lingcun] was an urgent matter!

Shi Xiaobai used Crab Steps and took the simplest and most direct method of lateral side jumps to dodge Hua Pengju’s punch before shooting out of the five people’s encirclement like a beam of light.

Although this process was simple, it was done extremely fast. Hua Pengju and company did not even see Shi Xiaobai’s motions. All they saw was Shi Xiaobai flash suddenly and after sweeping up a whirlwind, he had escaped from their encirclement and sights.

At the instant when Hua Pengju and company's punches and kicks lost their target, they were unable to retract them in time, causing them to hit each other!

“Ah!”

Hua Pengju's groin had unfortunately been hit by Ah Six's kick into the nether regions. He screamed immediately and his thighs turned inwards as he squatted down. His hands covered his little partner at his groin as he constantly issued out a hissing sound.

Ah Six immediately exclaimed and hurriedly rushed to Hua Pengju. He had used a lot of strength in his kick and had failed to retract it in time. This kick had hit with full force! Furthermore, Ah Six kept feeling that he had kicked something spectacular.

“Bo...Boss, is...is that part of you alright!?”

Ah Six asked with a wretched face. He remembered that when he kicked Hua Pengju's groin, he had apparently heard the sound of something crunch.

Ah One and Ah Three also came beside him and reveal worried looks. Would their Boss...

Hua Pengju was already in a state of confusion from the pain. At the moment he heard Ah Six's question, he used his strength to pinch the lackey's hand he was holding, causing a heart-wrenching scream to immediately resound.

Hua Pengju's eyes were glazed as though he had no love in his life.

“My balls have shattered!”

...

Shi Xiaobai did not know Hua Pengju was experiencing the greatest suffering in the world when he dodged. If he knew of it, he would have said with disdain, “Real man do not scream in pain even when balls shatter!”

Shi Xiaobai had already charged towards Ye Jiaquan at this moment.

At this moment, Ye Jiaquan was fighting Wang Lin's faction as a core member of Han Feng's faction. Three Team Blue rookies were fighting with Ye Jiaquan.

Shi Xiaobai frowned because he did not have time to waste on the three rookies. Without much hesitation, Shi Xiaobai easily flashed past two rookies and suddenly kicked the third one in the ass.

That person had his back facing Shi Xiaobai and after he was kicked by Shi Xiaobai's fast and violent kick, he was caught off guard while he uttered an “Ah” as he fell to the ground.

When the two other rookies saw this, they were immediately enraged as they turned around to attack Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai did not retreat but instead proceeded forward. In a flash, he came to the middle of the two rookies and immediately following that...used Crab Steps' ability of passing off the spurious as genuine!

When the two rookies realized Shi Xiaobai was rushing to them, their eyes lit up. Seeing Shi Xiaobai use those funny footsteps, they charged forward with a dismissive sneer. At the same time, they raised their fists and punched at Shi Xiaobai's delicate white face!

“Aiyah!

“Aiyah!

Two cries of pain was heard as the two rookies punched each other in the face simultaneously. One of them lost three teeth, while the other spun a few times after being hit.

At the same time, the Team Blue rookie who had been kicked by Shi Xiaobai to the ground was quickly beaten by Ye Jiaquan after losing his numbers advantage.

The three rookies and Ye Jiaquan's confrontational standoff came to an end because of Shi Xiaobai's sudden intrusion.

Riko, who was constantly paying Shi Xiaobai attention outside

the field, was stunned agape. As a bystander, she was able to clearly tell how Shi Xiaobai had dodged the combined attacks of Hua Pengju and company, and how he flashed past the two rookies to complete a sneak attack, as well as how he forcefully inserted himself between the two Team Blue rookies, and then finally use an extremely realistic fake move to make the two rookies hit each other in a silly manner.

Riko saw all of this and had seen it very clearly. In her opinion, Shi Xiaobai's series of movement was extremely quick, crafty and strange. It was even very magnificent!

When did Shi Xiaobai grasp such powerful footwork? Furthermore...what was this footwork?

Chapter 123: Filthy Turtle Divine Technique Combo!

“What footwork is this?” Riko wondered.

On first glance, it looked like “Crab Steps” that very few people cared about, but on careful thought, when was “Crab Steps”, which was well known to be comical, ever this cool?

Yama Minamiya, who was beside her, was also similarly deep in thought. He could already tell that Shi Xiaobai’s footwork was “Crab Steps”, and in fact, was quite similar to Yaris’ “divine Crab Steps”. As a result, he could not help but think of the recent absurd news that did not stir any waves, and the news of how a person known as “IChooseDogLeading” cultivated Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement realm at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

As the news had clearly described “IChooseDogLeading” as the representative contestant for battle arena cafe’s [Gaia] branch, he had particularly sent people to investigate the matter, however the investigations came up with nothing. The residents who watched the competition described it in great graphic detail, and there was someone who even imitated the line “everyone present is a spicy chicken” with great flair, but there was no evidence to verify the matter.

Yama Minamiya was skeptical about the whole matter and finally ignored it. However, now with Shi Xiaobai using Crab Steps, he could not help but recall of this matter. Shi Xiaobai was similarly

at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm and although there was no way to tell what tier the Crab Steps were because he apparently did not give his all against the few weak rookies, wasn't everything too much a coincidence?

Besides, Shi Xiaobai had disappeared for those few days. Actually, the so-called disappearance was mainly because Kali had chased away all the personnel that had been planted around Shi Xiaobai. Even [Gaia]'s upper echelons failed to grasp Shi Xiaobai's whereabouts.

“Could that news be true? Could Shi Xiaobai be ‘IChooseDogLeading’?”

With this thought in mind, Yama Minamiya's eyes that looked at Shi Xiaobai turned burning hot. If that was the case...

“In the future, be nicer to Xiaobai. Your temper of yours needs to be held back,” Yama Minamiya looked at Riko and said seriously. Although he was not like the other members of the upper echelons, who hoped that Riko would become a “honey trap” for Shi Xiaobai, he was genuinely hoping that Riko would become Shi Xiaobai's friend at that very moment.

Riko was stunned as her mouth pouted as she had various thoughts on her mind.

Wasn't I being good to him?

Last night, we even...

Pui! Last night's matter is not to be mentioned!

...

...

If Riko and Yama Minamiya's eyes were unable to discern Shi Xiaobai's attainment, it was natural that those rookies who could not even see Shi Xiaobai's movements were completely lost in a foggy mist. They wisely chose to hurriedly scatter away. The combined forces of Tu Dahei and Shi Xiaobai was not something a few rookies like them could resist.

When Shi Xiaobai saw how no one came to disturb them, he immediately walked towards Ye Jiaquan and asked, "Steel Ox, did Lingcun say where he was going before he left?"

Upon hearing this, Ye Jiaquan was left in a daze as he scratched his head and said, "Me thinks...there was nothing."

Shi Xiaobai was immediately somewhat disappointed but immediately asked again, "Think again. Before he left, did he say anything strange?"

Ye Jiaquan immediately knitted his eyebrows and began thinking hard. Moments later, he said with a face of grief, "Me, Me doesn't remember."

Shi Xiaobai gaped his mouth and did not continue asking. Blaming or pressing Ye Jiaquan further clearly wasn't the best thing to do. Now, the thing that he needed to do the most was think of how to obtain information about Chen Lingcun's current whereabouts.

"Brother Dahei, is Lingcun...in trouble?" Ye Jiaquan sensed that something was amiss and hurriedly asked.

"Nothing, even if there is, This King will easily resolve it."

Shi Xiaobai did not explain the matter as it was useless to make another silly ox anxious. After a moment of thought, his eyes gradually lit up. Maybe the other rookies could provide some clues?

But at this moment, the rookies were occupied in their own battles, and Shi Xiaobai did not have the time to ask them one by one. Now, he needed to make everyone hear his question and answer his question seriously.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings but this time, no one stopped because of what he had done. The likely reason why people stopped the last time because he appeared fine after being beaten by Hua Pengju and company for several minutes.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes flickered as realized that he first needed to make everyone's heart stop a moment for him before they would prick their ears up for him.

“Steel Ox, for the next few minutes, do not let anyone come close to This King.” Shi Xiaobai already had an idea and said to Ye Jiaquan. Then, he squatted down and arched his right knee. His fist faced the ground as though he was about to punch it.

Ye Jiaquan was slightly surprised before he nodded his head heavily. He then used a pair of fierce-looking eyes that seemed to warn any rookie that tempted to make a move.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and clenched his fist tightly. Following that, he used an extremely, extremely slow speed to smash into the ground.

Those rookies who were paying attention to Shi Xiaobai, as well as Yama Minamiya and Riko, who saw the scene, were completely dumbfounded.

This punch was not only extremely slow, it was even slower than a snail’s crawl. From top to bottom, his fist moved less than a centimeter a second. Shi Xiaobai’s entire arm was trembling as though he was using all his strength, but at that extremely slow speed, it appeared as though it was soft and lacked strength.

What was he doing?

What Shi Xiaobai wanted to do was naturally make all the fighting rookies stop and listen to his question seriously; hence, he needed to stun everybody.

And Filthy Turtle Divine Technique's third move—Turtle-speed Divine Punch was perfect for the job.

Turtle-speed Divine Punch's name suggested that the punch would be slow like a turtle's crawl, almost impossible for it to strike a moving object. However, this punch lived up to its name as a "divine punch". Its power was quite impressive, and more amazingly, the strength of Turtle-speed Divine Punch did not have a fixed value. In a certain way, Turtle-speed Divine Punch's strength had no upper limit!

The slower the punch, the more powerful it was!

The theory behind it was like a compressed spring. The longer and deeper it was compressed, the more explosive and terrifying the bounce would be when it was released!

The reason why Shi Xiaobai's arm was trembling was because he had to continuously compress his Psionic Power during the slow punching process.

Surging Psionic Power began to condense and compress where his fist was, forming a stunning amount of power that would suddenly burst out. It was like turbulent water that was blocked by a closed valve. Once the valve was broken through, the water would pour out with tremendous force.

The tip of Shi Xiaobai's fist was that valve. And his arm was the pipe for the waterflow. At this moment, as Shi Xiaobai's fist was

slowly moving downwards, the accumulated Psionic Power was getting further compressed, as though the water pipes were constantly brimming with water. The water pipes could no longer take it anymore!

Shi Xiaobai's arm began to swell with Psionic Power, as though his arm would explode at any time. Excruciating pain began to spread from his arm towards his entire body as Shi Xiaobai immediately used "Unleaking Turtle Aura" to inhibit the pain!

And at the moment the pain occurred, "This Turtle Is Hardest" also began to come into effect. Shi Xiaobai could intuitively sense that his right hand and arm's defense numbers were constantly rising. 1...3...4...4.5...

At this moment, Filthy Turtle Divine Technique was showing its godly powers through a combo!

Chapter 124: Who Is Chen Lingcun

At this moment, Filthy Turtle Divine Technique was showing its godly powers through a combo!

But...

“Kacha, kacha, kacha...”

The sounds of bones cracking in Shi Xiaobai’s arm began to continuously explode like firecrackers. Ye Jiaquan, who was closest to him, was stunned.

How many bones had to rupture in order to produce such a sound? How unimaginably painful would that be?

Shi Xiaobai’s brows began to knit as his mouth began to utter a soft cry. “Unleaking Turtle Aura” could no longer completely inhibit the excruciating pain he was receiving from his bones cracking. This was the most Filthy Turtle Divine Technique could inhibit and also its limit. Be it the inhibition of pain from “Unleaking Turtle Aura” or the tempering of body through damage with “This Turtle Is Hardest”, or the compressive force of “Turtle-speed Divine Punch”, their limits were whatever Shi Xiaobai’s body could withstand!

And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai’s arm could no longer take it any further. If this carried on, his entire arm might very well be crippled!

But!

Shi Xiaobai looked at the ground that was just a few centimeters away from the ground. Gritting his teeth and with an adamance flash past his eyes, he let out a muffled angry roar!

Using a period of two minutes, Shi Xiaobai's fist had finally arrived from his chest to the hard steel floor. It was still a very slow touch, with no sudden impact at the very last moment. It was like how a slowly crawling turtle gently touched a wall.

“Boom!”

A deafening explosion immediately resounded, with dozens of steel tiles splashing out. The steel floor beneath Shi Xiaobai's fist immediately shattered, with cracks several meters in radius emanating radially out of the steel ground. And in the middle, even the soil beneath the steel plates had collapsed into a giant pothole.

The power of that one punch was extremely terrifying!

“Holy shit!?”

“Was that for real?”

“No way!”

The rookies who turned over when they heard the explosion saw a strange scene as they uttered their astonishment. As for those that had been paying attention to Shi Xiaobai were now watching on in gaped silence having witnessed the entire process of that one punch, as though they had seen a ghost.

Even the composed Yama Minamiya also mentally shouted in English—What the fuck!?

No words could describe such a shocking scene. It was like a slowly crawling turtle coming in front of a steel wall at an extremely slow speed, and without any sudden shocking burst in speed, it just slowly used its turtle head to prod the steel wall, and immediately the steel wall exploded!

This was fucking unscientific!

“Awesome, my Shi Xiaobai.”

After Riko recovered from being completely lost for words, she realized her father was also completely in a state of shock. Immediately she felt like she had accomplished something through Shi Xiaobai’s achievements. She had never made her father this shocked despite her years of hard work.

Riko hurriedly pretended to stayed composed and patted Yama Minamiya on the shoulder. Pretending to stay calm, she said, “How is it? My little brother Xiaobai would do, right?”

Yama Minamiya's expression changed and hurriedly said, "Riko, why don't you just submit? I think this child is not bad. Although he doesn't look as all-rounded like Red Lotus, his future prospects are extremely promising. Although he is just three years younger than you..."

"Stop it!"

Riko hurriedly cut Yama Minamiya off. She was extremely embarrassed because this was her father.

Where did that unsmiling Yama Minamiya go to? Where did his usual temperament go to!?

Although Shi Xiaobai's talent was pretty freakish and was a kind person, he was a dishonest little pervert!

Riko rolled her eyes at Yama Minamiya and turned to look at Shi Xiaobai. Suddenly, her pupils constricted because at this moment, Shi Xiaobai had slowly stood up. His entire right arm was limply dangling and appeared slightly distorted. Clearly, the broken bones in his arm was in a rather grave situation.

Riko was anxious as she wanted to charge into the field, but someone had realized this earlier than her. The elder in control of the situation had appeared before Shi Xiaobai. A yellow beam of light was emitted from the elder's hands which encased Shi Xiaobai's arm.

Shi Xiaobai began to frown. Even though he was using “Unleaking Turtle Aura” to suppress his pain receptors, he still felt painful sensations coming from his arm.

The elder’s eyes changed and looked at Shi Xiaobai with aghast. He was administering emergency healing techniques on Shi Xiaobai and it should have been extremely painful, but Shi Xiaobai did not even make a grunt?

“This child...”

The elder was alarmed as he became more meticulous in healing Shi Xiaobai’s injuries. If this child’s arm were to have any residual side effects, [Gaia] was not the only one which would suffer a loss, it was very likely to be a loss for all of humanity.

...

At this moment, everyone was stunned by Shi Xiaobai’s punch and stopped their fights. They turned their eyes towards Shi Xiaobai.

“This King has a question to ask all of you.”

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath. The power of the punch actually far exceeded his expectations, and the price he had to pay had exceeded his expectations as well, but the effects had finally achieved what he expected.

Everyone's ears pricked up!

“Does anyone know where Chen Lingcun is?” Shi Xiaobai loudly asked his question.

At this moment, everyone was indeed listening to Shi Xiaobai's voice. Even Hua Pengju pricked his ears up from the shock that came from that single punch. They were all waiting for Shi Xiaobai's question. If they knew the answer, they were willing to tell Shi Xiaobai just for on account of that single punch.

However, after Shi Xiaobai finished asking his question, everyone was stunned. There was no other reason because no one knew the answer. They were even puzzled by the question itself.

People on the field began to noisily engage in private discussion.

“Who is Chen Lingcun?”

“Does any of you know this person?”

“No, I have never heard of such a name.”

“Neither have I.”

“ ... ”

The rookies expressed that they did not know of the person Chen Lingcun.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He had envisioned the possibility that no one knew of Chen Lingcun's whereabouts since even Ye Jiaquan, who was closest to him, did not know. However, Shi Xiaobai never expected that the rookies claimed to not know Chen Lingcun, to the point of never hearing this name before.

How was this possible?

It was impossible!

Shi Xiaobai recalled the scene that once angered him, and because he was once again enraged, his face began to sink. He surveyed the crowd and coldly said, "All of you once mocked him because of his weakliness and used the ugliest expressions to say the most toxic of words at him. Now are all of you telling This King that you do not know him, to the point of not even knowing his name?"

Shi Xiaobai angrily looked at everyone like a fierce tiger.

The rookies' faces grew somber. They had been shocked by "Turtle-speed Divine Punch", but that was it. It did not mean they could endure Shi Xiaobai's wanton slandering.

They had not even heard of the name Chen Lingcun, so when had they ever mocked this person and used the ugliest expressions?

The most toxic of words?

This was unconcealed slandering, one that was completely baseless!

What gave you, Tu Dahei, the right to slander us?

You can slander our characters just because of that punch that was some trickery?

At this moment, the look in a large number of rookies' eyes changed. They exchanged looks with their partners and quietly clenched their fists. They took a slight step forward, as though they were dozen of fierce wolves that were surrounding a ferocious tiger!

Chapter 125: Refreshing Your World View

The rookies looked at Shi Xiaobai angrily like savage wolves while the elder healed Shi Xiaobai of his injuries. If not for the elder, the group of rookies would probably have vent their anger by pouncing at Shi Xiaobai and beating him up.

Of course, it was all thanks to the elder's presence, or the rookies would probably vomit blood from realizing that they had been diligently giving Shi Xiaobai wave after waves of "happy endings" after beating him up.

Shi Xiaobai was equally looking angrily at the crowd. He never bowed down against the forces of evil and was determined never to bow, what more to these experience-giving underlings.

So he was unafraid of this battle, in fact, he also wanted to furiously charge forward to vent his pent up anger.

However, Shi Xiaobai eventually repressed the anger in his heart because he knew it was meaningless. He might be able to beat them down and "torture" them for a confession, but the information he obtained could not be verified for its veracity, so doing so was too much a waste of time.

Shi Xiaobai slowly closed his eyes as his mind gradually calmed down. When he opened his eyes again, his eyes looked as calm as water. He no longer looked at the other rookies, as though they were nonexistent.

Shi Xiaobai calmly accepted the grave situation of the rookies being unable to provide him with any information because the only way to face the thorns beneath his feet was to carry on forging ahead.

“There must be a way.”

Shi Xiaobai began to console himself as he lowered his head to contemplate.

When the rookies saw Shi Xiaobai lower his head, they dismissively sneered in their hearts, thinking that Shi Xiaobai had succumbed. Their fists clenched tighter, but due to the elder's presence, they did not make any rash moves. However, once the free-for-all restarted, they would definitely not let Shi Xiaobai off.

There was a price he needed to pay for slandering them!

The elder's healing also quickly came to its final stages. Even he was unable to fully cure Shi Xiaobai of his injuries. All he could do was do his best to remove any possible residual side effects. At that moment, he began to hesitate when he saw the rookies leering at Shi Xiaobai. He was wondering if he should forcefully eliminate Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai's right hand was temporarily not to be given any stress even at the cost of him losing his eligibility for the collective training. If the rookies flared up and attacked without holding back, it would be disastrous.

The elder thought highly of Shi Xiaobai which resulted in all these concerns. He was even unconsciously extending the healing time.

A number of rookies had begun restarting their own battles, but a large number of rookies were still waiting for the elder's departure.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai raised his head as he recalled what Ye Jiaquan had recently told him—Chen Lingcun left him a letter!

Maybe Chen Lingcun would mention of his whereabouts in the letter!

Although it was unlikely, it was like a flicker of light in a dark cavern for the stumped Shi Xiaobai.

Ye Jiaquan had mentioned that he had forgotten to bring the letter. Then clearly, it was left in the rookie dormitories. It would definitely waste a lot of time retrieving the letter by taking a return trip.

But...this was already the last possible method!

Shi Xiaobai looked at Ye Jiaquan and asked with an extremely serious expression, “Steel Ox, if This King tells you that Lingcun is currently in grave danger, and the letter he left behind for This King can save his life, what should you do?”

Ye Jiaquan felt like a bolt of lightning had struck him when he heard this.

If the letter he forgot to bring determined Lingcun's life, wouldn't he be indirectly harming Lingcun?

If that was truly the case, what should he do?

"Me will go get the letter!"

Ye Jiaquan stared widely, as he rounded his eyes. After shouting those words, he immediately turned and charged out.

"Make way!"

Ye Jiaquan roared for the rookies blocking his path to make way for him. His eyes were red like a ferocious beast, so those few rookies hurriedly dodged in fright!

At this moment, Ye Jiaquan was blaming himself and feeling extremely anxious. From Shi Xiaobai's various actions, he could guess that Lingcun had very likely encountered danger and it was already at a critical stage. Now, knowing that his forgetting to bring the letter was such an important part of this matter, how could he just sit there idly?

At that moment, Ye Jiaquan was constantly shouting in his heart: Faster, a little bit faster, need to get that letter faster!

At this moment, Ye Jiaquan was like a raging mad bull that was charging forward. His anxiousness had allowed him to break through his limits, so the speed at which he ran was jaw-dropping.

The rookies were completely shocked.

“This silly buffalo actually can run so fast?”

“Fuck, this isn’t scientific. He’s like a buffalo but he runs faster than a rabbit!”

“Ye Jiaquan, we have underestimated him. We thought he was just a silly buffalo with brute strength, who knew that he was a scud missile.”

“...”

The rookies were extremely shocked. Wang Lin and Xiang Wu’s gaze also turned solemn, because they had to admit that with their speeds, there was a high chance that they could not keep up with Ye Jiaquan!

Even Riko was slightly startled, “Indeed, birds of a feather flock together. How can people who hang out with Shi Xiaobai be normal? This ‘Raging Bull Steps’ has the style of ‘Wind Walk’.”

Yama Minamiya nodded and said, “It looks like the quality of

rookies in this [Annihilation] batch is not bad. This child's 'Raging Bull Steps' is about to break through to the Exemplary Mastery realm. He is a rare talent."

While everyone was marveling at Ye Jiaquan's sudden burst of speed, someone was feeling speechless.

Shi Xiaobai cracked the corner of his lips. He had only wanted Ye Jiaquan to lead the way so that he could retrieve the letter in the rookie dormitories. He never expected Ye Jiaquan to be the one rushing out, as though he would sacrifice his life to bring the letter back.

Of course, this was all his fault for not making things clear, but...

Why is this Steel Ox running so slowly?

"No, this won't do. It will be too late if this goes on."

With Shi Xiaobai's eyes focused, he raised his feet and chased at full speed with Crab Steps. He found Ye Jiaquan's speed too slow, so a lot of time would definitely be wasted if he waited for Ye Jiaquan to retrieve the letter and return.

As Shi Xiaobai charged out, a scene that made everyone nearly pop their eyes out happened.

Everyone saw Shi Xiaobai take a step forward with his right foot and then another step with his left. He clearly did not seem to take

wide strides nor was the frequency very high, but his figure seemed to instantly traverse distances of more than ten meters with each stride. In just a few seconds, he had caught up to Ye Jiaquan. With a pinch of Ye Jiaquan's arm, he proceeded forward with Ye Jiaquan. The two people rapidly disappeared below the horizon.

This scene was just like a motorcycle cruising. A person who was riding a bicycle was lamenting how fast the motorcycle was, when suddenly a Ferrari charged forward, blocking the motorcycle. At a speed several times faster than the motorcycle, the Ferrari refreshed the person's world view.

At this moment, everyone was in a daze. They couldn't even shout out "holy shit".

Riko was close to tears. Shi Xiaobai's "Crab Steps" had reached the Dominating Refinement realm, a realm higher than her Meteor Steps!

Yama Minamiya also confirmed his guess that Shi Xiaobai was "IChooseDogLeading"!

And at this moment, the rookies that wanted to beat Shi Xiaobai up immediately broke out into cold sweat. This little bitch was still the same old person that loved to act the pig in order to eat tigers. They had nearly fell for his machination!

...

Chapter 126: The Adorable You

Under Ye Jiaquan's guidance, the duo proceeded extremely quickly with Shi Xiaobai's maniacal "Crab Steps", surprising many passers-by.

Thankfully, the rookie dormitories were built not far from the training grounds. The two of them spent only three minutes to arrive at the rookie dormitories.

Ye Jiaquan did not dare delay any further and immediately located the letter Chen Lingcun had left for Shi Xiaobai.

When Shi Xiaobai received it, he tore it open while feeling a little nervous.

As he slowly looked at the letter, a handwriting as delicate as a girl's came into view, but when he saw the first line, Shi Xiaobai was left stunned.

"Dahei...No, I think I should address you as Shi Xiaobai. Sorry, I have been lying to you."

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows gently trembled, but he quickly took a breath and continued reading.

To be able to see through This King's identity, you are indeed worthy to be one of This King's most loyal fanatics!

“I saw through you from the very beginning, so I had made many lies, including...the words of respect for ‘Shi Xiaobai’, including that ‘Shi Xiaobai is the hope of all humanity’ line, as well as “maybe Shi Xiaobai has always been by our side’...they were all faked.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes stared and felt his breathing stifled. He nearly tore the letter apart.

“Calm down, calm down. This King needs to calm down.”

Shi Xiaobai gritted his teeth to force himself to calm down before he continued reading the letter.

“But I wished everything would be true.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned as his taut face finally relaxed.

This little Snack sure was naughty.

He kept saying otherwise verbally, but he was honest in his heart. Since he had the heart that aspired to be This King’s follower, he deserved earning the forgiveness of This King.

“Then here comes the question. Which of the above sentences is the truth and which is the lie?”

Shi Xiaobai's curled his mouth and crumpled the letter into a ball with a deadpan expression.

“What...What's wrong?”

Ye Jiaquan asked nervously from the side.

“Nothing, This King's hand was a bit itchy.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed and then spread out the crumpled letter again. He then continued reading the next line.

“Sorry, forgive me for my naughtiness because you are just too adorable, so adorable that I can't help but want to 'tease' you.”

Shi Xiaobai was too deep for tears. He was too bold to actually dare to “tease” him, a King of kings.

Fuck, [Kill Chen Lingcun] might as well be chosen the next time.

Shi Xiaobai kept feeling that this letter did not seem like it was written by Chen Lingcun. The words seemed to permeate a “wretched” flavor. He remembered that Snack was not such a Snack.

Were his true colors exposed because he was leaving?

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and continued reading.

“Forgive me for using the word adorable, because there is really no way for me to find another descriptive word to describe the feelings you give me. In fact, I pondered over the written sentence for a very long time. I thought of countless words but finally still chose the word ‘adorable’.”

“Do you know, when I realized that you were an existence that could remember me, I really felt that you were world’s...fifteenth adorable person,”

“Out of the fourteen people before you, twelve of them are no longer alive. One of them is hiding somewhere I can’t find, and another one is Silly Ye, so...the people that can remember me in this world are only limited to you and them, a total of three people.”

“This is my fate, and also my retribution, so I am not sad because of it. Instead, I am happy from the bottom of my heart because of your appearance.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned when he read this. He finally understood why dozens of rookies claimed to never have heard of the name “Chen Lingcun”.

So that was the case. But what was the reason why no one else but Ye Jiaquan and him were able to remember Chen Lingcun?

“As for why only you and Silly Ye can remember me, I’m sorry. I’m not sure either. If I know the reason behind it...I probably...probably can’t change anything.”

“Alright, the nonsense and whining above is really not my style. Forgive me for my excited mood when I was writing this letter because I will immediately be looking for someone I have to find. It really can’t wait, so while I’m trying to finish this letter as fast as possible, I still have many things I want to say to you...Next, please read it very seriously and remember it well and keep it on your mind.”

“Shi Xiaobai, do you know why I know you are Shi Xiaobai?”

“That’s because I can smell the odor of a Celestial. Don’t ask me where my nose was manufactured, nor should you ask me what brand of perfume the odor of a Celestial is. In short, your body has a very, very thick odor of a Celestial.”

“The biggest proof is your possession of the Perception of God, but the Celestial odor on you is just too thick, so I believe you might have two or more Six Senses of God. And for a human to have two Six Senses of God...that is already an existence that blasphemes the grace of gods.”

“That is to say, if the Celestials were to discover your existence...Then...they will come to the human world to kill you for the glory of ‘god’.”

“Upon reading to this point, you would likely ask...what is a

Celestial? Is it the lackey of a god under This King?”

“Forgive me for writing that as I accidentally laughed.”

“You are really...very adorable.”

“The Celestials are actually just a bunch of aliens. A bunch...of aliens much stronger than humans. They have even ruled over the human world for a period of time. However, after the second apocalypse, large numbers of Celestials were wiped out, so they escaped back to their planet and have considered this planet as a forbidden zone.”

“Haha, actually this matter is taught many times in history classes during middle school. However, the lack of common knowledge you display makes me seriously suspect if you are illiterate, so I specially explained what Celestials are.”

“Shi Xiaobai, the Celestials might view this planet as a forbidden zone, but they have been constantly observing this planet. Once a human with two or more Six Senses of God appears, the human will be considered a threat. They would send people to kill or take the human back, so as to prevent their ethnic blood to live on in the human world.”

“Also...I actually smell a hint of an Infernal from you. I wish that is just my imagination or your enemy will not be limited to the Celestials, but all alien races that fill the vast universe.”

“So, you are currently in grave danger.”

“You need help.”

“No, you need protection.”

“You need a strong person to be your guardian to withstand against ordinary Celestial race members. And the most likely guardian you can find now will be—the three powerhouses of [Gaia].”

“Instructor Hisith’s personality is too weird, and you have already infringed his taboo...Right, I’m really curious about what you were thinking... To actually ask Instructor Hisith for his underwear...”

“Let’s not talk about that. Let’s talk about the next powerhouse—Her Excellency Kali.”

“Her Excellency Kali...is rumored to be very old and very ugly. Furthermore, she is very bad-tempered and has a rather odd character. Also, she is the strongest amongst the three powerhouses that even Instructor Hisith does not dare mess with her. She is an old witch that strangers keep away from. Even people familiar with her would not approach her. I believe you will have to thank your lucky stars to be able to speak to her.”

“So, it’s best you choose His Excellency One-Pun. Since His Excellency One-Pun is willing to choose you to be a protectee of his

‘God’s Guardian’, it means the degree of attention he awards you is extraordinary. Maybe he will be willing to help you fight against the Celestial killers.”

“Use every means you have to make His Excellency One-Pun protect you at all costs, then desperately become stronger. Make yourself so strong that normal Celestials can’t do anything to you...This is the only suggestion I can give you.”

“Shi Xiaobai, I will treat the sentence ‘This King is the weakest person’ that you once said as the best present, and also treat it as a most precious memory.”

“Also, you are the...strongest person I have ever seen. Maybe you will one day become a kind of King. When the time comes, will I be able to hug onto your thigh and be a good-for-nothing favorite subject of a King?”

“Live on. If there comes a day, we meet again...I will reluctantly satisfy you by calling you ‘King’.”

“If that day ever comes.”

“Then...goodbye, adorable Shi Xiaobai.”

...

Chapter 127: This Is The Reason Why You Are Enduring?

After Shi Xiaobai finished reading Lingcun's letter, his heart felt slightly heavy. It was not because of the Celestials and Infernals Lingcun mentioned in his letter, but because there was no information he desperately needed in the letter. He still had no idea where Lingcun had gone.

Furthermore, after reading the letter, Shi Xiaobai was more determined to [Save Chen Lingcun].

“This King will definitely make you be perfectly willing to bow and address This King as ‘The Great King’.”

Shi Xiaobai felt mixed emotions as he looked at the last line in Lingcun's letter—Live on. If there comes a day, we meet again...I will reluctantly satisfy you by calling you ‘King’.

Ye Jiaquan noticed how Shi Xiaobai's face was sullen after reading the letter, so feeling an ominous sense of foreboding, he immediately asked, “How is it, Brother Dahei. Can this letter save Lingcun?”

Shi Xiaobai remained silent for a while before sighing. He then looked at the letter in his hand once again and began reading it carefully.

Read it again, there might be an inkling!

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's gaze stopped.

“Alright, the nonsense and whining above is really not my style. Forgive me of my excited mood when I was writing this letter because I will immediately be looking for someone I have to find.”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes slightly lit up. This line was the main reason why Chen Lingcun had left. He had left because he was looking for somebody.

Shi Xiaobai immediately looked at Ye Jiaquan and asked, “Has Lingcun ever mentioned how he has always been looking for someone?”

Upon hearing this, Ye Jiaquan immediately frowned. He racked his brains and kept pondering over it. He knew every answer of his determined Lingcun's outcome, so even if he had to tear his brains apart, he did not dare to honestly say “Me don't know” again.

Moments later, Ye Jiaquan suddenly said in excitement, “Me remembers...Lingcun previously asked Instructor Hisith about a person's whereabouts in class...Could it be that person?”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly startled and immediately recalled what had happened that day in class. Back then, Chen Lingcun and Hisith had mentioned about a particular person. Chen Lingcun had asked Hisith about the person's whereabouts in an agitated manner and finally said that he would find Hisith alone.

If that was the case, Lingcun must have asked about the person's whereabouts from Hisith before deciding on leaving Steel City to search for that person.

“Depraved Sisi knows where Lingcun went!”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up and since the whereabouts of the person Chen Lingcun needed to find was where Chen Lingcun had headed, it was natural that Hisith, who was the provider of the information, knew where Chen Lingcun's destination was.

“This King will be looking for Depraved Sisi.”

Shi Xiaobai immediately charged out the door. He remembered Hisith mentioning in the morning before leaving the classroom that he could be found in the instructor's office.

By the time Ye Jiaquan saw Shi Xiaobai run out the door, it was already too late for him to stop him. Immediately, he began to worry anxiously.

Would Dahei get into trouble when he looked for Instructor Hisith?

Just this morning, Instructor Hisith appeared very hostile towards Dahei, and must be hating on Dahei because of the underwear request. Now, with Dahei taking the initiative to look for him...will there be any conflicts?

What if Instructor Hisith does something to Dahei in his rage...?

The more Ye Jiaquan thought, the more worried he became as he rushed over.

...

...

[Annihilation] branch, rookie instructor's office.

Hisith was sitting on a chair with his eyes cold. His face was sullen as he remained in motionless silence, like a cold ice sculpture.

Don't misunderstand, he really did not want quietness.

He only wanted his heart to quieten down.

He still could not forget the humiliating memory of Shi Xiaobai asking for his underwear ten days ago. Regardless of how interesting a toy was, it was doomed to be destroyed once it triggered his peeve.

Hisith was originally determined to completely destroy Shi

Xiaobai even if he was a genius with dual S talents or a treasure the upper echelons of [Gaia] was prepared to care for. Shi Xiaobai was just a toy that he could abandon and destroy without any care.

However, Kali had suddenly appeared and killed the four strongest servants out of his seven servants without any reason.

The four poker cards, Ten of Diamonds, Jack of Diamonds, Queen of Diamonds, King of Diamonds, had been painstakingly created by gathering souls. Every card contained immeasurable power and the King of Diamonds servant was an existence at the level of an A Class calamity fiend general. It took him three years to finish creating it.

However, these four poker cards have been killed without mercy by Kali, and the only reason was—a little warning in advance.

Hisith was infuriated but also very aggrieved.

He had yet to do anything to Shi Xiaobai, his revenge yet to even begin, but he was curbed by such a near-humiliating manner.

Furthermore, he was no match for Kali. He did not even have the courage to battle her, so all he could do was endure and live with it.

However, when he saw Shi Xiaobai a while ago, that “wretched” look of Shi Xiaobai’s made him recall of his miserable experience, it caused Hisith to nearly flare up.

Hisith narrowed his eyes as he considered if he should temporarily leave Steel City, choosing to let it be out of sight, out of mind.

At this moment, a beam of light flashed and a poker card flew out from Hisith's body.

Hisith's expression changed, but he quickly returned to normal.

The poker card flew into mid air before suddenly transforming into a large poker hologram. The poker card was a Joker, but it was unknown if it was a Red or Black Joker.

Following that, a red blob of light the size of a basketball flew out from the poker hologram. The red blob of light had two black spots the size of ping pong balls. They were in constant motion inside the red blob of light, like two pairs of moving eyes

“You have a problem?”

Hisith looked at the red blob of light and because he was in a terrible mood, his questioning voice had a tinge of stiffness infused in its softness.

“Your mind seems to be in chaos. This Seat [1](#) came out to have some fresh air.”

The red blob of light issued out a hoarse and sharp voice before saying with a teasing tone, “To be able to make a madman like you endure so much, it seems you are extremely afraid of that pixie.”

Hisith’s mouth twitched as he said, “I can’t see through her. I don’t even know how she managed to enter my ‘Underworld’ and kill my beloved toys.”

“This is the reason why you are enduring?”

The red blob of light chuckled, “This Seat remembers that more than a decade ago, the reason why you slaughtered an entire village had only one reason—a six-year-old child had said something disrespectful to you. Back then, you were truly worthy of the name Underworld King Hisith. But the current you looks like a loser to This Seat.”

Hisith’s expression changed and said in a deep voice, “Don’t try to goad me on Abyss Ghost King. What’s your goal for saying all these?”

The two black points in the red blob of light began to jump crazily at that very moment.

Chapter 128: Very Cute, Very Naive

“Tell me your goal,” Hisith coldly said.

The red blob of light fell silent for a moment. With a sneering, it said, “That holy dragon you have hidden in the ‘Underworld’, let This Seat eat it. You can slaughter that human named Shi Xiaobai as you wish, and if that pixie were to dare touch you, This Seat would use the name of the ‘Abyss’ to protect you. If that pixie were to hear the word ‘Abyss’, she will definitely be aware of the overwhelming odds against her. Do we have a deal?”

Hisith’s expression turned slightly ugly upon hearing this and said, “So you have your sights on that holy dragon. A small toy’s life and a promise that might not succeed, in exchange for a nearly extinct holy dragon? Abyss Ghost King, aren’t you being a bit too greedy?”

The red blob of light’s sharp and hoarse voice had a touch of an eerie chortle as it said, “That kid’s soul is very rare. Even This Seat is envious just looking at it. Furthermore, that kid even dares to mention your taboo of ‘underwear’. He was clearly doing it to humiliate you. If you were to stay silent about this, how would the other ‘Underworld’ Underworld Kings think of you? Will the old freaks in ‘Abyss’ be disappointed in you? Don’t forget, the ‘Abyss’ was able to give you whatever you have now, but it can also take away everything from you at any time.”

Upon hearing this, Hisith’s eyes squinted into the shape of sickle. His fingers on his right hand brushed through his red hair as he coldly said, “How confident are you to prevent Kali from touching

me?”

The red blob of light hissed with a laughter and said, “This Seat is 100% confident. Since that pixie knows that your servants come from the ‘Underworld’, she must have heard of the ‘Abyss’. Furthermore, when This Seat breaks through the seal and recovers all his strength, no matter how strong the pixie is, she is just a pixie. How could she be stronger than This Seat?”

Hisith looked hesitant as he asked, “How long will it take before your seal is removed?”

The red blob of light said, “Eating that holy dragon is enough for This Seat to break at least one of the seal’s layers. If a few more spirit beasts of this sacred level are eaten, the days of This Seat being able to crack the seal can be counted on one hand. When This Seat snatches the throne of the ‘Abyss’, you will be the only king of all humanity, and the human world will become a lost paradise for you to play around wantonly.”

Hisith sneered upon hearing this. He naturally did not believe everything the Abyssal Ghost King said to him, but he had to carefully consider the matter.

After ruminating for a moment, Hisith said, “It’s not impossible for me to give you the holy dragon, but when you break through the seal’s first layer, you must go to other ‘Underworld Zones’ and grab some souls of equivalent value.”

The black pearls on the red blob of light moved and said, “Heh

heh, deal. As a gift, you can kill that human.”

Hisith hesitated slightly before shaking his head and said, “You were right about one thing. That pixie has made me felt fear, so I was acting according to my instincts to steer clear of her. I’ll leave Steel City now and kill a few humans to calm down. I’ll temporarily let that naughty little toy jump around for a period of time. The next time we meet, I will join him in playing a good game.”

The red blob of light sneered upon hearing this and no longer spoke. Since it had achieved its purpose, there was no need to complicate matters any further. It just felt disdain for Hisith’s timidity.

At this moment, anxious footsteps could be heard outside the office before Hisith heard the voice that was the last thing he wanted to hear.

“Instructor Sisi, This King wants to see you for something!”

Hisith’s pupils immediately constricted as his eyes flashed a look of disbelief.

This Shi Xiaobai actually dared to maunder here to look for him? Did Kali’s protection make Shi Xiaobai so audacious? Or could it be that Shi Xiaobai did not have the slightest bit of fear towards him?

Hisith’s anger was immediately pushed to its limits.

The red blob of light noted with interest as it chuckled and said, “Goodbye is always that sudden. This Seat will be slightly looking forward to the ‘game’ you mentioned.”

After saying that, the red blob of light transformed into a poker card before returning to Hisith’s body.

And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai had forcefully pushed the office’s door open.

The echo that came from the booming of the door’s opening and Shi Xiaobai’s delicate face met Hisith’s ears and eyes respectively. The corner of his mouth began to slightly twitch.

Hisith quickly forced himself to calm down. Although he was hankering to slaughter Shi Xiaobai, his fear for Kali prevented him from doing so.

However, he had just “boasted” to the Abyss Ghost King about what would happen if Shi Xiaobai were to take the initiative to look for him. If he still let Shi Xiaobai leave safe and sound, not only would the Abyss Ghost King completely despise him, he would look down on himself too.

Although Hisith did not dare rob Shi Xiaobai of his life, he definitely wanted to make Shi Xiaobai taste suffering.

He had to design a game meant for torturing toys.

“It seems like I need to design an absolutely ‘interesting’ game.”

...

...

Half a minute later.

“So, you came looking for me to ask about Chen Lingcun’s location?”

While Hisith restrained his fury, he finished listening to Shi Xiaobai’s purpose of visit. A stiff but strange smile suffused from his lips.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, “Lingcun previously said that he would find you personally to ask about a person’s location. Can you tell This King what the answer you gave him was?”

Hisith suddenly gave an evil smile before saying, “What would happen if I were to tell you that I have never heard of the name ‘Chen Lingcun’ before?”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai’s forehead oozed a cold bead of sweat. In his haste, he had forgotten something. Since Chen Lingcun had mentioned that only he and Ye Jiaquan could remember his existence, it wouldn’t be a surprise that Hisith

would also forget Chen Lingcun. If that was the case, this path was still a dead end!

“Just kidding.”

After Hisith observed Shi Xiaobai's reaction, a strange glint flashed in his eyes as he chuckled and said, “That silver-haired youth left a deep impression on me. Your guess is right. Ten days ago, he had come looking for me alone. He spent two days to complete the game I designed in an outstanding manner. As a prize, I told him everything he wanted to know, so he left Steel City on the third day.”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes immediately lit up. He did not know why Chen Lingcun would be forgotten by others; hence he did not have any suspicion with Hisith remembering Chen Lingcun. He immediately said, “Since you know where he currently is, can you tell This King?”

Hisith narrowed his eyes and said, “I know, but...why should I tell you?”

Shi Xiaobai's breath stagnated and was thinking how bad the depraved person was at chatting.

If you were to talk like that, how was This King to respond?

Shi Xiaobai thought for a moment before saying in a sincere tone, “This King knows that you are still blaming This King for

requesting your underwear ten days ago in public. Back then, This King was doing it for your sake. The Seed of the Evil God had attached itself to your underwear through spatial-temporal forces. The curse was just about to penetrate your body, and if not for This King shouting to scare the Seed of the Evil God away, you would probably be in a dire state now!”

“However, saving you was the wish of This King, so This King will definitely not demand for your gratitude. All This King wishes is that you would not misunderstand This King. Now, please tell Chen Lingcun’s destination to This King. The next time the Seed of the Evil God appears again, This King will definitely warn you again! How about it?”

Shi Xiaobai looked at Hisith and blinked his eyes, looking very cute and very naive.

Chapter 129: Upright Person Despite Being Tough On Words

As Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes, he indicated that he had “requested for underwear” out of concern for Hisith’s safety.

Hisith’s pupils violently contracted as a look of violence flashed in them. He narrowed his eyes into a slit as a cold aura radiated out from his body.

Hisith never expected Shi Xiaobai to dare mention the matter once again and had even attempted to deceive him using nonsense that could only hoodwink a fool. He had even said the words “next time”.

“Ga...me!”

It was as though Hisith had to squeeze the word out through the gaps in his teeth. Taking a deep breath, he said with a cold expression, “As long as you complete a game I design, I will inform you of Chen Lingcun’s location as the game’s prize.”

Hisith had already mentally constructed a relatively “interesting” game which he believed would be an unforgettable one for Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily stunned and recalled how he had previously “played” two of Hisith’s games. He had a rough concept of the games Hisith mentioned, so after a bit of hesitation, he

nodded and said, “This King agrees. Quickly begin the game.”

Although “playing a game” would waste a lot of time, this was the only method he had left. As for Hisith’s game, Shi Xiaobai was naturally unafraid of it. In his own words, This King had subjugated the game world for years, be it from LOL to side-scrolling shoot’em up games, or massively multiplayer online games and small puzzle games, This King was adept at any of them, having easily conquered them!

In simple terms, This King was already tired of grinding Challenger back when he played League of Legends.

Usually, his roommate, Yang Wei, would usually pop out and ask a question, which babe is Challenger, can you give me her contact?

...

Seeing Shi Xiaobai readily agree, Hisith immediately felt displeased. Often, others would turn white just from hearing the word “game” from him, so when Hisith saw the different scene Shi Xiaobai portrayed, his mood turned somewhat complicated.

“If you weren’t that ‘naughty’, you would have truly been an extremely ‘interesting’ game, unfortunately...”

With this thought in mind, Hisith sneered and said, “To challenge a ‘somewhat difficult’ game, you must first pass the test of a small game.”

Shi Xiaobai knitted his brows slightly as Instructor Sisi was a little irritating.

Before Shi Xiaobai spoke up to refuse, Hisith had suddenly reached out his hand, causing three tall glasses to fly out from a cabinet beside them. They flew towards Hisith and landed on the office desk in front of Hisith. At the same time, a bottle of red wine flew out of the cabinet and into Hisith's hand.

Hisith quickly filled the three glasses with red wine.

Shi Xiaobai took a glance at the three glasses of red wine opened his mouth to exhale. He said with a sigh, "This King doesn't have much time. Hurry up."

Although he did not know what "relaxing" game Hisith wanted to play, he did not mind being a sport playing with him and since it did not waste too much time. Yes, it was definitely not because he wanted to have a taste of red wine which he had never tried before.

After pouring the red wine, Hisith gave an eerie smile and said, "The game's rules are very simple. In the three glasses of red wine, one of them doesn't have poison. There is a one third chance, and if you finish drinking a glass without any poison, I will agree that you have the qualification to challenge a 'somewhat difficult' game."

"Only three glasses?"

Shi Xiaobai was surprised. He remembered the first time he “played games” with Hisith, he had to choose a card greater than ten out of fifty-four cards. The probability of success back then was less than one-third.

These two games were both a test of luck. After the last failure, Hisith had designed a game with a higher probability chance of winning?

“This is showing contempt for This King’s lucky halo. It cannot be endured at all.”

As Shi Xiaobai had such a thought, he looked at the three glasses of red wine. The color and volume of the red wine in the three glasses were nearly the same. His naked eye could not tell which glass was poisonous. As for smelling, Shi Xiaobai gave up on that thought after thinking for a moment. He did not believe he could distinguish a poisoned glass with his sense of smell.

Hence, everything still depended on...

“Indeed, it still needs to depend on This King’s intuition!”

Shi Xiaobai gave a confident smile and stared at the three glasses of red wine. He was waiting for his “intuition” to tell him which glass had the poison.

Three seconds later, Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded!

This was because “intuition” told him that none of the three glasses of wine were poisonous!

Shi Xiaobai looked up and saw a concealed smile suffuse across Hisith’s lips in his glance. He immediately felt touched. He never expected Instructor Sisi to be such an upright person despite being so tough with his words. Although he had made things difficult for him verbally, he was after all still thankful because of the “Seed of the Evil God”.

Wasn’t this little game the best proof?

If none of the three glasses were poisonous, then drinking any glass could pass the game. This meant—that this was a freebie question. Shi Xiaobai had depended on such freebie questions to escape the situation of scoring “zero” points in exams on a yearly basis. So, he had a good impression of such freebies!

There was no need to speak further, cheers to that!

Shi Xiaobai casually picked up a glass of red wine and raised it to his mouth. He drank it straight down like he was drinking a beverage, making him look very heroic!

When Hisith saw Shi Xiaobai drink the glass of red wine without any hesitation, the cold smile on his lips broadened greatly. This little game was naturally not a “luck”-based game. He knew very well that out of the Six Senses of God, Shi Xiaobai possessed the Perception of God. Hence, he would naturally not design a simple

game like choosing poker cards that only had a third chance of success.

The little game's true trick was—all three glasses of red wine were poisonous!

This poison was known as the “Bonechewer Medicinal Agent”. The drinker would immediately suffer an anguishing pain as though every bone was being chewed on by worms, This sort of poison did not immediately claim the life of the victim, but would make the victim endure a life worse than death. Depending on the dosage, the duration of its effects would be different.

Hisith had added a dosage that was enough to last thirty minutes in each glass of red wine. He wanted to let Shi Xiaobai have a taste of what it meant to have his bone chewed on!

Of course, he would not allow Shi Xiaobai to commit suicide. Instead, he would constantly use the healing Hearts card to maintain his consciousness!

He had originally planned on making a more complicated, more difficult and more torturous game for Shi Xiaobai, but seeing how Shi Xiaobai was without pressure when he did not hesitate at agreeing to challenge his “somewhat difficult” game, Hisith changed his mind.

He had chosen the simplest and crudest of means!

Won't you filled with confidence and completely fearless?

The three poisoned glasses of red wine destined you to failure. Furthermore, it would make you experience the cruelest suffering.

Hisith felt overjoyed just thinking of himself being able to sneer and say "You can't even pass the simplest little game, so you are unqualified to challenge a 'somewhat difficult' game" while enjoying how Shi Xiaobai screamed in pain on the floor.

He did not know what Chen Lingcun meant to Shi Xiaobai, but from the anxious look Shi Xiaobai had, he knew Shi Xiaobai was eager to know of Chen Lingcun's location.

Wasn't destroying a toy by making it receive a merciless rejection as it experienced an excruciating pain and allowing it to rant how unfair the game was the most "interesting"?

When Hisith saw Shi Xiaobai drink the red wine down in one gulp, resulting in an empty wine glass, he eagerly looked forward to the next scene. "Bonechewing Medicinal Agent" was an instant poison, which meant...an "interesting" scene would immediately happen.

At this moment, Hisith had already revealed a joyful smile because as he expected, Shi Xiaobai suddenly stared widely after drinking the red wine!

Chapter 130: Intoxicated Moan

After Shi Xiaobai finished drinking the glass of red wine in one gulp, he immediately widened his eyes.

Hisith smiled delightfully in his mind as he began to be filled with anticipation. He was looking forward to Shi Xiaobai grasping his neck in pain while screaming and writhing on the ground. Following that, he would reveal the truth that “all three glasses of red wine are poisoned” which would result in Shi Xiaobai roar that it was “unfair”. Finally, Shi Xiaobai would suffer both a physical and mental collapse from the dual setback he experienced.

“This would definitely be ‘interesting’.”

At this moment, Hisith laughed.

However, Hisith was left dumbfounded the next second. This was because after Shi Xiaobai stared widely with his eyes, he did not grasp his neck and scream out loud. Instead he blinked and licked his lips. Next, he reached out his hand to pick up another glass of red wine!

Shi Xiaobai noticed how Hisith was using a pair of glazed eyes to look at him and immediately felt a bit embarrassed. After he finished drinking the first glass of red wine, he only found it fucking delicious. It was so tasty that he was completely bewildered!

Shi Xiaobai had enjoyed the entire process and could not help but pick up another glass of red wine. Noticing how Hisith did not stop him, Shi Xiaobai grinned and moved the glass to his mouth like a gluttonous child. This time, he did not drink it in one gulp but savored it bit by bit as he did not want to finish it too quickly.

Shi Xiaobai moved his gaze towards the third glass of red wine as his hand involuntarily reached over. Taking a secret glance at Hisith, he realized that he wasn't stopped, and immediately had the opinion that Instructor Sisi was a very nice person.

This King shall kindly accept this red wine!

Shi Xiaobai picked up and drank the last glass of red wine!

“Hic!”

After Shi Xiaobai exhaled blissfully, but he involuntarily produced an alcohol-induced hiccup.

Hisith was dumbfounded.

What the fuck was going on!?

Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “After This King's validation, the three glasses of wine are without poison, so does this mean that This King has passed this little game?”

Hisith gaped his mouth and quickly picked up the bottle of red wine and took a mouthful.

“Pu!”

Hisith spat out the mouthful of red wine immediately.

This red wine was poisonous!

That’s not right, it was meant to have poison!

That’s not right, the red wine was poisonous, but why!?

Hisith immediately looked at Shi Xiaobai with extreme suspicion. Why didn’t the poison in the three glasses of wine take any effect? Could he have forgotten that the “Bonechewer Medicinal Agent” wasn’t immediate but actually had a delayed effect?

Just as Hisith had this thought, Shi Xiaobai suddenly stretched out his hand and held his throat. His eyes stared widely as though he was in great pain!

Hisith’s eyes immediately lit up.

So that was it. This “Bonechewer Medicinal Agent” must have been an inferior imitation for it to have such delayed effects. Finally, it has shown its effects!

Shi Xiaobai finally realized this when the poison took its effects. This was because he felt an intense pain rise up through his body. He immediately remembered that Hisith had said how there was only one glass of wine that did not have any poison, but he had drank all three glasses. That meant that he had drank two glasses of poisonous wine!

Shi Xiaobai grasped his neck and immediately began to use “Unleaking Turtle Aura” to suppress the pain, then...

Then Shi Xiaobai suddenly removed his hands from his neck. His widely staring eyes also returned to normal and he immediately turned expressionless.

This was because Shi Xiaobai recalled something, something very important.

He remembered that back at the virtual competition, he had encountered a bonus Absolute Choice. After the Arch-Cardinal shouted “hubby” three times, he had obtained a C-level reward of “Poison Resistance”. He could automatically filter out 80% of toxins.

This meant that the poison in the red wine could only deal 20% of poison damage to him.

Indeed, once Shi Xiaobai used “Unleaking Turtle Aura”, the slight pain that rose up in his body became more reminiscent of an itch. 20% of the poison’s toxins was insufficient to deal too much damage to him.

After a while, Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt a refreshing feeling spread through his entire body. He was immediately surprised because this feeling was rather familiar. He immediately realized that this was the effect of “This Turtle Is Hardest”!

Following that, Shi Xiaobai felt his flesh and blood defense value slowly rise. 1...2...2.5...

The damage from being poisoned could be used as a body-tempering method for “This Turtle Is Hardest”!

Shi Xiaobai immediately understood that he just needed to receive damage to become stronger!

At this moment, This Turtle Is Hardest responded immediately when the poison took its effects. A sore but refreshing feeling swept through his body as Shi Xiaobai could not help but moan due to the overwhelming intoxication he experienced.

Hisith was already dumbfounded when he saw Shi Xiaobai’s look of enjoyment. Hearing Shi Xiaobai let out such a satisfied moan, he immediately felt like he had been struck by lightning.

Shi Xiaobai’s face turned slightly red. It was unknown if it was because of the alcoholic effects or because of his embarrassment, but when he raised the glass at Hisith, his face was flushed red.

Shi Xiaobai asked softly, “Can This King...get another one?”

...

...

A few minutes later, Shi Xiaobai found it quite a pity because regardless of how much he begged, Hisith remained glum and refused to give him another glass of red wine.

The red wine was tasty and could also temper his body. Furthermore, he felt a thoroughly refreshing feeling after drinking it. It was not a poison but a drug!

Shi Xiaobai looked earnestly at the bottle of red wine, but he quickly remembered that he had serious matters to attend to. He said, “This King can now challenge your ‘somewhat difficult’ game, right? If not, why don’t you just tell Chen Lingcun’s location to This King?”

When Hisith heard this, he turned his head stiffly and let out a cold sneer. A killing intent flashed in his eyes, but soon, that killing intent calmed down.

At this moment, he realized that it was not the fault of the poisonous wine but rather, the fault lied in Shi Xiaobai. He was unafraid of poison!

Not only had the little game failed to achieve the effects he anticipated, but he had also nearly died from anger because of Shi

Xiaobai.

Fuck, you even want another glass? Do you know how expensive this bottle of red wine is?

That's not right. This wasn't the main point.

The main point was how was he to continue playing this game?

Hisith fell into silence and began to experience a struggling dilemma. Since he was prepared to bet his all on what the Abyss Ghost King had said to him, he could teach Shi Xiaobai a lesson before using the name of "Abyss" to calm Kali down and force her to compromise. The easiest and most direct method would be to throw a few hexing Clubs cards and make Shi Xiaobai taste what it meant to experience hell on earth.

In fact, Hisith did not believe Kali would offend the "Abyss" because of Shi Xiaobai as well. After all, Shi Xiaobai was just a person with some talent.

However, Hisith did not want to do it because Shi Xiaobai had completed three of his games.

Hisith could not bear destroying a toy that provided "interest" to him in a fit of anger. The "interesting" toy had challenged the games he designed again and again, and when it finally suffered failure, Hisith would be able to enjoy its failure the most.

“In that case, you can challenge a ‘somewhat difficult’ game. If you are able to succeed in the challenge, so what if I tell you everything?”

Hisith had already made up his mind. Since the next game could bring pain to Shi Xiaobai, vent his anger, as well as allowing him to enjoy the feeling of a toy being played to brokenness, why not spend a bit of time to play a game?

The corner of Hisith’s mouth curled into a sneer as he suddenly waved his hand.

Dozens of poker cards suddenly flew out before they formed the shape of a door!

Immediately following that, the places where the poker cards interleaved each other shot out beams of light, eventually combining into a blinding light.

A door of light formed from poker cards appeared in the office in seconds while a cold eerie aura emanated from inside the door.

“Behind this door is This King’s Underworld. If you dare enter it, This King will make you witness what...a true game is!”

At this moment, Underworld King Hisith had managed to address himself as “This King” in front of Shi Xiaobai!

...

Chapter 131: Can You Be A Bit Faster

If it were any other rookie, just hearing Hisith mention that the true game would be held in the Underworld would probably scare them pale. The reason why Hisith was known as Underworld King was because he possessed an “Underworld”. And as the name “Underworld” suggests, it was a world where the dead went to.

What were the chances of survival if one played a game in the world of death?

Unfortunately, Shi Xiaobai did not know any of this. He did not know the danger about the “Underworld”, and even if he knew, he would not feel fear because of it.

Moreover, with Hisith addressing himself as “This King” in front of him, this gave Shi Xiaobai the understanding that this was no longer a simple game, but a competition between “Kings”. As a King of kings, he welcomed this greatly!

As a result, Shi Xiaobai stepped into the door to the Underworld composed of poker cards without any hesitation.

...

What sort of world was the Underworld?

Would it be like the earth, with desolate lands, vast starry skies, and bright moonlight?

After Shi Xiaobai stepped through the door to the Underworld, he lowered his head to see that he was standing on hard, solid ground that was black in color. Looking up was a dark purple sky and three crimson colored moons of different sizes. Turning his head, he saw a procession that stretched from one horizon to the other.

The procession was comprised of both men and women, young and old. Their eyes were glazed as though they were walking zombies. They walked at a uniform speed in an orderly fashion. It was as though the horizon was attracting them, or it could be said that something was driving them towards the horizon.

Shi Xiaobai had to say that this was very appropriate of an Underworld.

Shi Xiaobai waited in the same spot for a moment before a figure quickly appeared in the sky far into the distance. That figure was flying very rapidly towards Shi Xiaobai.

The figure that arrived had a pair of gigantic bat wings. Every part of its body was nearly wrapped in white bandages. The few patches of skin that were revealed were dark purple in color. They looked somewhat wrinkled as though they had been burnt.

This figure was one of the seven servants of Hisith, the Nine of Diamonds calamity fiend, the bat, Mos.

Mos flapped his wings and stirred up a cyclone before he landed

in front of Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai was already aware that Mos would appear so he was not too surprised. As he looked at Mos, who was slowly folding his bat wings, he said, “Quick tell This King the game rules.”

Hisith had told Shi Xiaobai before he entered the door to the Underworld that Mos would tell him the specific game rules after he entered the “Underworld”.

When Mos heard Shi Xiaobai’s words, his scarlet eyes flashed coldly. As Hisith’s servant, he would often hear Underworld King Hisith address himself as “This King” in the “Underworld”. To see a riff-raff at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm dare address himself as “This King”, a tinge of brutal violent tendency rose up in his heart immediately. However, he quickly suppressed his violent tendencies after recalling Hisith’s instructions.

“Follow me.”

Mos’ hoarse voice was cold and dry. After saying that, he turned around and walked ahead. The speed at which he walked did not seem fast, but in fact, he managed to open a great distance from his original spot nearly instantly. In a few seconds, he had reached the ends of one’s vision.

Mos stopped where he was and slowly turned his head, prepared to wait for the puny human.

“Why did you stop?”

A puzzled voice entered Mos' ears as he looked down. His pupils constricted slightly as he saw a puny human whose height only reached his abdomen stop in front of him. He did not even know when it happened.

Mos' gaze flickered. He did not expect this human to be able to keep up with his footsteps. Even though he had only used 10% of his speed, this was already far beyond his expectations.

Mos quietly turned around and proceeded forward once again. This time he used 20% of his speed.

...

One minute later, Mos turned back.

That human was still behind him and blinking his eyes, as though they were telling him not to stop.

The corners of Mos' mouth suffused a stiff sneer. He turned around once again and began running. This time, he used 30% of his speed. For a weakling at the Psionic Mortal Realm, this was a speed that was considered overwhelming. Mos was slightly worried that the weak human would be left far behind, far far beyond sight.

Two figures quickly traversed the black and flat plains. Under

the cold, crimson moonlight, one was in front of the other, but the distance did not open up. The more Mos ran, the more shocked he became. The grumbling words “are we there yet” kept echoing in his ears, making him experience the illusion that he was running very slowly.

Another minute later, Mos increased his speed to 40%. There was no reason such a speed could not leave the weak human in his wake.

However...

“Can you be a bit faster? This King is in a hurry!”

Shi Xiaobai urging voice made Mos stare widely. He turned around to see Shi Xiaobai completely inexhausted. Instead, Shi Xiaobai looked irked which caused Mos to involuntarily clench his fist.

It appeared that it was not unreasonable that his master, Hisith, had given this human such “serious attention”.

A sneer suffused across Mos’ lips as he once again sped up. This time, he accelerated to 70% of his maximum speed!

At 70%, Mos’ speed was as fast as lightning. He stopped immediately after running for thirty seconds. Turning around, the weak human that ran rather fast could no longer be seen.

Mos stood in his original spot and waited. To be able to force him to use 70% of his speed was something that the human should be proud of.

After waiting another thirty seconds, Mos finally realized something was amiss when he did not see Shi Xiaobai.

Could that human be lost after being flung far behind?

In such dark and endless plains, it was indeed easy to get lost.

But...was it possible to go in the wrong direction while running in a straight line?

Mos flapped his bat wings reluctantly as he flew up into the sky, retracing his steps to look for traces of Shi Xiaobai.

...

...

Shi Xiaobai naturally did not go in the wrong direction. After Mos used 70% of his speed, Shi Xiaobai was still able to barely keep up using Crab Steps at full force. However, while running halfway, Shi Xiaobai heard a voice that reached directly into his soul.

“Save...Save...Save...”

It was a vague and imperceptible voice, but it kept repeating the word “save”. It sounded extremely weak but it seemed like it had a burning desire.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but stop. He realized that he could not ignore the calling of this voice. It was as though he could sense the sorrow and forlornness in the voice. It sounded like a plea for help after having been imprisoned for eons.

Shi Xiaobai was unable to ignore it. Gritting his teeth, he allowed Mos to run far ahead as he changed directions midway. He could sense where the voice came from.

Shi Xiaobai quickly sprinted over as the voice shouting “save” turned louder and clearer, as though it was filled with joy.

Approaching, approaching...

Reached...

Then, Shi Xiaobai saw...a sword!

Chapter 132: Quick, Stick It Back

On the endless black plains, a rusty, black broadsword was embedded deep into the ground, only revealing a mottled sword handle and a bit of the sword's rust-covered blade.

This sword did not look much different from ordinary broadswords. The degree of rust prevented the blade from looking sharp at all.

However, Shi Xiaobai was extremely certain that it was this sword that kept calling out the word "save".

This was because when he reached out his right hand to tightly grip the black broadsword's hilt, the voice that went straight to his heart turned eager and delighted, as though it was eager for Shi Xiaobai to pull it out from the hard earth.

"What are you doing!?"

A hoarse and cold voice sounded from up above.

Shi Xiaobai looked up and saw the bat, Mos, coldly looking down at him from mid air.

"Pulling the sword." Shi Xiaobai nonchalantly responded. His eyes landed back on the rusty, black broadsword. The lone black sword that was embedded alone in this desolate lands gave him an intense desire. He wanted to pull it out and give it freedom.

Shi Xiaobai's hand began to use strength as he pulled hard at it.

“Don't waste your strength.”

Mos' hoarse voice was without emotion. The black sword had been embedded in the black plains for eons. This “Underworld” had seen the changes of numerous Underworld Kings, but no one had been able to pull it out.

“Don't waste your time. It's impossible for you...”

Just as Mos' said with an impatient voice, he suddenly stopped as his pupils dilated while he looked with utter disbelief.

This was because Shi Xiaobai had already pulled out the black broadsword.

It was as though Shi Xiaobai had pulled out a straw from the fields, completely pulling out the black broadsword from the black lands effortlessly!

“That's impossible!” Mos hissed. At this moment, the lands suddenly began to tremble violently!

At the same time, the dark purple sky seemed to dissolve like a painting. The three scarlet moons also began to tremble, as though three hanging balls were being rocked suddenly.

Deafening sounds sounded from every corner of the black lands. Roars, hisses, screams that were filled with fear, madness and anger...

“Quick stick the sword back!”

Mos exclaimed and flew to Shi Xiaobai while producing a swooping sound. However, just as he flew midway, he was forcibly repelled by an invisible force.

The quaking ground began to crack open, revealing bottomless ravines. The procession that ran through most of the lands continued to proceed forward in their orderly fashion. As such, one after another of the unaware members of the procession fell into the deep ravine. As for the cracks in the lands, it was slowly crawling everywhere, as though the entire land was about to split apart.

The dark purple sky also began to melt. One of the scarlet moons also suddenly exploded.

Thunder roared in the sky as the grounds began to issue roaring screams. It was as though the world was ushering in the apocalypse.

“No!”

Mos sent out a tearing voice filled with terror from his throat. He

charged crazily at Shi Xiaobai once again, but he was repelled again and again by the invisible energy. He could only raise his head and issue a helpless but horrible roar.

But at this moment, everything suddenly turned quiet. The cracking land stopped its quaking and cracking. The sky that was about to melt into grayness completely solidified. The two scarlet moons that were trembling to the point of exploding also calmed down. The thundering from the sky and the roaring from the lands also came to a sudden halt.

It was if a pause button had been pressed at that very instant.

Mos was startled as he lowered his head to see Shi Xiaobai having stuck the black broadsword back into the ground.

“It’s just the pulling out of a sword. Is there a need to make it so earth-shattering?” Shi Xiaobai said with a somewhat bitter voice.

Mos, who felt like he had survived an apocalypse, immediately felt monstrous rage and killing intent!

“Do you know what you did?”

Do you know you nearly destroyed the entire “Underworld”?

Mos’ eyes flashed an intense fear from the realization of what had happened and frantic killing intent.

This human who was able to pull out the sealing sword that guarded the Underworld had to die!

However, a familiar voice resounded in his mind which made Mos feel as uncomfortable as having his neck pinched.

This human was not to die yet. He could only die after the master's game was over.

Mos forced himself to calm down and said coldly to Shi Xiaobai, "Leave this area quickly. This is a forbidden zone!"

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai immediately sighed and said, "To not send people to protect a forbidden zone, This King is not to be blamed for such a thing to happen."

Shi Xiaobai was feeling a bit creeped out. This "Underworld" was just like a movie film set. Pulling out a sword meant the collapse of the entire set, and furthermore, the sword was so easily pulled out. Yet, there was no one sent here to watch it. The people of the "Underworld" were really slacking. It was doomed sooner or later.

When Mos heard this, his breathing stagnated as he had the strong urge to smack Shi Xiaobai immediately to death. This sword had not been pulled out for thousands of years, so it had been forgotten by people. It was normal for there to be a lack of guards, but Shi Xiaobai's attitude was extremely irritating!

Mos mentally treated Shi Xiaobai as if he was a dead person. To be able to pull out a sword that held the world together meant that he was an enemy of the entire “Underworld”. If not for Hisith’s insistence on the “game”, Mos would have already diced Shi Xiaobai into pieces.

“Go!” Mos spat out a word coldly once again.

Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders and every step he took, he turned back thrice at the black broadsword he had left behind. He could sense the sword crying out to him, and could sense the intense indignation and sadness from the sword.

However, there was no other way.

Bro, saving you would result in the collapse of the world, how can you be saved!?

Shi Xiaobai looked up into the sky. At this moment, the sky had already turned half dark purple and half-gray. There were only two scarlet moons left, and all of this was a result of him pulling out the sword.

After hesitating for a while, Mos flew towards the black broadsword. Although Shi Xiaobai had stuck it back into the ground, only the Heavens knew if he had done so firmly.

Mos gripped the handle with both his hands and used his strength to tug at it, but the sword remained motionless.

Good, it was very firm.

Mos tried using his strength again, but the broadsword remained motionless.

Mos clenched his teeth and used all his strength, but the sword remained immovable like a mountain.

Mos stared and strained every muscle he had, and finally, the broadsword...still did not move.

Mos heaved a sigh of relief. The corner of his mouth suffused a smile as he raised his hand to wipe the sweat off his forehead. He turned to look at Shi Xiaobai before coldly saying “follow”. With that, he ran forward again.

Shi Xiaobai looked at Mos’ back and was somewhat dumbfounded as his lips twitched.

Fucking retard. This King promises he won’t secretly return to pull the sword, alright? Was there a need to act so realistically in an attempt to deceive This King into thinking that the sword is very firmly in place?

Would This King not know how easy it was to pull the sword out?

Shi Xiaobai turned back to look at the black broadsword before

he clenched his teeth to chase up to Mos.

Chapter 133: Are You Kidding Me

After nearly ten minutes of traveling, Mos finally came to a stop. The way he looked at Shi Xiaobai was one of slight astonishment.

This human was able to keep up with him for ten minutes at 50% of his speed without looking exhausted?

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was slightly exhausted, but with “Unleaking Turtle Aura” sustaining him, he did not look tired. When Mos came to a stop, Shi Xiaobai had quietly heaved a sigh of relief. Even after he had managed to gain insights into conserving his Psionic Power after more than 2000 rounds of defeat in virtual competition, the amount of Psionic Power reserves he had was still lacking.

Shi Xiaobai immediately realized that he had to “Cogitate” more in the future. Yes, it was to become stronger, and definitely not because the world of imagination in “Cogitation” was very fun.

“Follow me.”

Mos’ voice woke Shi Xiaobai up from his reverie. At this moment, they were in front of a high wall more than a dozen meters tall. The high wall had a steep flight of stairs that stretched to the top of the high wall.

As Shi Xiaobai walked up the flight of steps, the view he could take in increased. When he arrived at the top, looking back, all he

saw was vast black plains.

However, when Shi Xiaobai looked on the opposite side of the high wall, he nearly popped his eyes out.

He saw the high wall stretch out to form a gigantic square that was more than a dozen meters deep and a thousand meters wide. And at the bottom of the enclosure was a huge dragon lying prone on the ground!

It was a large dragon of western origins. It was hundreds of meters long, and ten meters wide. Its entire body shimmered with a beautiful luster just like white jade. And on each side of its body, there a golden resplendent wing. At this moment, the dragon was lying on the ground as though it was sleeping.

What made Shi Xiaobai the most surprised was that there was a series of skulls lining the boundary of the high wall. And these thousands of skulls shot out a red beam of light. From the four sides, it converged to one point!

And that one point was the gigantic dragon's heart!

Through the pair of golden wings and the jade-white body, a gigantic red heart was illuminated by the numerous beams of red light.

The heart did not appear motionless, but it was slowly contracting before it slowly expanded, a movement that was none

other than a heartbeat!

At this moment, the gigantic dragon's heart was so slow that it seemed ridiculous. It only finished a contraction and expansion cycle after half a minute.

This was the first time Shi Xiaobai saw a real western dragon. His eyes lit up as his breathing turned fiery.

“Isn't this This King's mount, the Dragon of Supreme Command?”

Shi Xiaobai grinned. He had previously created a gigantic dragon mount in his “Cogitation” world. It did not look much different from the gigantic white dragon.

At this moment, a bugle was blown.

Shi Xiaobai's pupils contracted as he saw a row of black-dressed people standing in the middle of the other three sides of the high wall. They were waving their hands in unison as fire plumes shot down from the high wall at the gigantic white giant!

“Puah Puah Puah...”

The flames would extinguish almost instantly after they landed on the gigantic dragon's body. It did not leave any burn marks behind, but the white dragon let out a soft and weak groan.

The dragon's groan was filled with fatigue.

At the same time, another bugle was blown.

“Kill!”

Beneath the high wall, a group of soldiers dressed in armor ran from all four directions. With sabers in hand, they charged at the gigantic dragon!

“Clang, clang...”

Every saber instantly shattered when they cleaved the gigantic dragon. However, once the soldiers were done, another batch of soldiers would appear, retreating only until all the soldiers' sabers were shattered.

The white dragon was still lying prostrate. It did not even open its eyes and its body did not even flinch. Its heart that was being illuminated by the red beams of light was still beating slowly, at an extremely slow speed. It was as though it was using all its strength to barely complete a beat cycle.

“Why?”

Shi Xiaobai finally caught his breath after seeing this. He turned to look at Mos, but as he had too many questions, he could only ask

a single word.

What's wrong with this dragon?

Why are you treating it this way?

Why was he shown this scene? What has this got to do with Hisith's game?

Mos said in a deadpan manner, "This is an Abyssal Demonic Dragon that comes from the Abyss. It has been sealed in the Underworld for more than a millennium. What you just saw were actions to ensure that the demonic dragon does not recover its strength."

Shi Xiaobai was stunned as he asked another question, "What does it mean?"

Mos pointed to the rows of skulls that shot red beams of light and said, "This is a S-class restraining array formation. It's used to imprison the demonic dragon's heart, and limit the frequency and amplitude of the demonic dragon's heartbeat. By keeping the amplitude and frequency to its lowest, it will result in restraining its movements. This restraining array formation has lasted for a thousand years, yet it has never been able to completely destroy the demonic dragon's heart."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he came to a realization moments after he pondered over it. It was no wonder the gigantic dragon's

heartbeat was so slow and weak.

Mos carried on. “And the most powerful thing about this demonic dragon is that its strength is constantly recovering, something that even this S-class restraining array formation is unable to completely seal. So those waves of long-range and melee attacks are used to drain its accumulated strength. This is to ensure that the demonic dragon is constantly in its weakest state. If it can be killed, all the better.”

Shi Xiaobai was left speechless with wonder when he heard this. he asked again, “Why are you doing this to it?”

It might have to do with how the gigantic white dragon resembled the mount in Shi Xiaobai’s imagination which resulted in Shi Xiaobai feeling pity for it.

Mos sneered and said, “Because it’s a demonic dragon that has committed the most atrocious of sins. The Underworld has imprisoned it for a millennium, and have tried numerous times to kill it, but it has never succeeded. If the demonic dragon is at its full power, probably no one in the Underworld can capture it again. If it were to escape, all life in the Underworld would be destroyed.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he silently gave the dragon a big thumbs up. To not die after a thousand years of imprisonment, how strong must its life force and will be?

“This King understands what you said, but...what has this got to

do with the game?” Shi Xiaobai asked, but he was feeling rather speechless with how Mos continued to keep him guessing at the game rules.

A strange glint flashed in Mos’ eyes as he let out a cold and hoarse laughter. He looked at the gigantic white dragon and said, “The game rule set by Master is very simple. You are given one hour to kill the Abyssal Demonic Dragon.”

“Are you kidding me?” Shi Xiaobai said in English, as he was dumbfounded.

All of you have failed to kill it after torturing it for a thousand years, but you want This King to kill it in an hour!?

“You still have 59 minutes and 50 seconds.”

Mos turned his head away and sneered, “Master has said that when you succeed the game’s mission, he will tell you everything. If you lose the game, you will become the demonic dragon’s lunch.”

Shi Xiaobai’s expression changed. This “somewhat difficult” game was a bit sick!

Chapter 134: Can You Give This King A Knife

When he reached the bottom of the opposite side of the high wall, Shi Xiaobai was once again astonished when saw the prostrating white dragon at a close distance. The white body and golden wings were like beautiful smooth jade and shimmering gold. Standing beside the gigantic dragon felt like he was standing in front of a mountain carved out of white jade and gold.

Draining the gigantic white dragon of its energy happened every three hours; hence, Shi Xiaobai had the “right to torture” the gigantic white dragon during this hour. However, when Shi Xiaobai walked in front of the white dragon’s head, his heart began to palpitate rapidly.

He felt that he had previously seen this white dragon before, as if he had former ties with it.

Shi Xiaobai sighed slightly. He dismissed his erroneous feelings as having arose because of the white dragon’s resemblance to the Dragon of Supreme Command he cogitated.

At this moment, the white dragon had its eyes tightly shut while it took a long while to exhale dragon’s breath. Shi Xiaobai could not help but reach his hand out to touch the white dragon’s chin.

He felt a cold and smooth touch that resembled beautiful jade. The white dragon naturally would not react to such a gentle touch. However, from the groan it had previously produced while it was being attacked by the fire plumes, it was obvious that the white

dragon was not sleeping. Indeed, with it being “tortured” every few hours, how could it sleep soundly?

And this white dragon was closing its eyes while taking extremely long breaths. Its body was motionless, probably because it was nearly drained of its energy. With its heart being restrained, its energy was constantly weakened. If not for the last strand of energy it possessed, its heart would have long stopped.

“This little white dragon...is truly a pitiful fellow.”

Shi Xiaobai stroked the white dragon’s chin, feeling pity for it.

Having been imprisoned for a thousand years, what sort of loneliness would that be...

Struggling to stay alive for a thousand years, what sort of sorrow would that be?

“You still have fifty minutes,” said Mos’ cold voice.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned as he realized that he had spent ten minutes hesitating.

Although Shi Xiaobai had turned slightly soft-hearted for the gigantic dragon, there was no other way. This gigantic dragon was a demonic dragon that had committed atrocities. If he could not kill it in an hour, the game would end in failure. He would not obtain information about Chen Lingcun’s whereabouts, nor could

he save Chen Lingcun from impending death...

“What atrocities did this little white dragon commit?”

Shi Xiaobai turned around and asked softly. He needed a reason to convince himself to wrench his heart and kill the gigantic white dragon.

Mos' eyes shimmered before he said, “This Abyssal Demonic Dragon escaped out of the Abyss and stepped into the human world, killing thousands of commoners. Finally, the king of the Underworld Kings, Hades, led seven Underworld Kings and managed to subjugate the Abyssal Demonic Dragon. Later on, they used S-class restraining array formations to restrain the demonic dragon's heart. Due to certain reasons, the demonic dragon was not killed and forgotten by Hades in this ‘Underworld’. In short, it has killed more than ten thousand lives.”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned before he nodded and took a deep breath.

More than ten thousand lives. This reason...was sufficient.

Shi Xiaobai walked towards the gigantic white dragon's body. The heart that had its contours revealed by the red beams of light was still expanding and contracting, while a golden wing was tightly covering its chest.

“Can you...help This King move its wing away?” Shi Xiaobai

requested for Mos' assistance.

Upon hearing this, Mos hesitated for a moment before walking over. He said, "I'm not supposed to help you, but since moving the wing isn't something difficult, and I'm very curious over the method you would use to kill the demonic dragon, this is the only help I'll be giving you."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned.

Moving such a large golden wing wasn't difficult?

At this moment, Mos had already flown up. As he grabbed a corner of the golden wing with one hand, he flew towards the right. The golden wing was slowly moved by Mos in this manner as a white chest was slowly revealed.

Once Mos released his hand, the golden wing fell to the ground beside the dragon's body, it no longer reached out to cover its chest.

Upon seeing this, Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath. The white dragon no longer had the strength to move its wings. It didn't even have the strength to resist Mos.

Shi Xiaobai could clearly see a thin red line across the white dragon's chest. This red line had previously been seen on those skeleton soldiers back in the virtual world. Hence, Shi Xiaobai knew very well that the weakness of the gigantic white dragon was

located there.

And at this moment, the white dragon no longer had the strength to hide its weakness.

Shi Xiaobai gritted his teeth as he felt a baffling sense of anguish for the white dragon rising from his heart. However, this white dragon was a demonic dragon that had slaughtered more than ten thousand lives. If he did not kill the dragon, he was unable to save another life.

“Sorry, forgive This King for having to kill you.”

Shi Xiaobai leaped onto the white dragon’s chest. As he felt the white chest slowly rise up every minute beneath his feet, Shi Xiaobai squated down, his eyes slightly heavy.

Then, he raised his fist.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai aimed at the weak red line and used Turtle-speed Divine Punch!

...

One minute later.

“Boom!”

After Shi Xiaobai's fist slowly accumulated its strength, all of its energy exploded out, slamming heavily into the white dragon's chest. A ear-piercing boom resounded!

Mos, who was by the side, had his eyes glaze over. He could not figure out how such a fist that moved at the speed of a turtle could produce so much power. However...

This punch was still far from enough.

As the ear-piercing collision sounds echoed, the dragon's body did not even tremble. There was not even a depression left in the chest that was as white as jade.

“Indeed...”

Shi Xiaobai's right hand had previously used Turtle-speed Divine Punch once. Although it had recovered rapidly under the elder's healing, it had yet to fully recover. Hence, the Turtle-speed Divine Punch he used could only accumulate energy for a minute, so the amount of power it possessed was barely satisfactory.

The white dragon's heart was still beating slowly, as though it was unaffected by the punch.

Shi Xiaobai gave a wry smile. Even if he crippled his entire arm, the Turtle-speed Divine Punch that he delivered would have failed to cause the white dragon any harm.

How could he easily break through a defense that was able to stubbornly withstand a thousand years of torture?

“Can you give This King a knife?”

Shi Xiaobai slowly clenched his fist. He needed to use the Pig Slaughtering Knife!

...

Although Mos had mentioned that he had given his last bit of help, Mos was still very curious over the means Shi Xiaobai would employ to kill the demonic dragon. As such, he quickly found a steel knife for Shi Xiaobai.

As Shi Xiaobai grasped the steel knife, he immediately felt a familiar power.

This power would appear whenever he recalled the matters that had happened when he was young.

This was the power of memories.

Maybe, as the Arch-Cardinal had said, the power of time?

As Shi Xiaobai wielded the steel knife, he aimed at the red line weakness and used his strength to stab at the white dragon's chest!

This knife was called Pig Slaughtering Knife, also known as the Benevolence of a Butcher!

Chapter 135: Being Able To See You Before My Death

“Clang!”

At the instant the steel knife stabbed into the gigantic white dragon's chest, the white dragon let out a low dragon's roar.

At the same time, the steel knife shattered!

Shi Xiaobai was forcefully thrown backwards as he crashed into the ground.

The knife had dealt little damage to the white dragon, but it had at least made it roar. Although the damage was tiny, not a single mark was left on the white dragon's chest!

The eyes of Mos changed drastically. There was fear and killing intent in the gaze that he used to look at Shi Xiaobai. Just standing by the side, that knife had made him feel that his life was threatened. He actually felt from the bottom of his heart...”fear” for that knife?

“What sort of monster is this human?”

Mos wished that this meaningless game would quickly come to an end. This human who could pull out the sword that held the

world together, and produce such a threatening knife technique had to be killed early so that he could experience peace of mind.

“You still have half an hour left.”

Mos “kindly” reminded Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai crawled up from the ground and threw away the remnants of the steel knife left in his hand. He was having mixed feelings.

He was constantly in a dilemma over whether to kill the gigantic white dragon or not.

But the fact was that he could not kill it!

His strongest attack, Pig Slaughtering Knife, was unable to deal any life-threatening damage to the dragon. Then, what other methods did he have?

Shi Xiaobai looked at the white dragon and was somewhat puzzled. Back when he used the Pig Slaughtering Knife on the skeleton soldiers, the power of “time” flowed freely, but when it stabbed at the white dragon, it felt like the power was stuck.

Was it because the white dragon was too powerful?

Or was the white dragon qualitatively different from the skeleton

soldiers?

Shi Xiaobai walked forward once again and leaped onto the dragon's chest and slowly sat down.

Even though he was nearing on despair when it came to the dragon's defenses, Shi Xiaobai was not one to give up ahead of time.

Even if it was a game of the hardest difficulty and even if he believed it was impossible to complete it, Shi Xiaobai would seize every opportunity at an attempt to beat it.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai began to ignore the strange feeling that he kept experiencing from the beginning, nor did he consider if he should kill the gigantic white dragon or not.

He slowly closed his eyes and began to ponder over the method he would employ to kill the dragon!

Different ideas flashed past his mind, but each and every one of them was instantly rejected by him.

...

“You still have twenty minutes.”

Mos' cold voice was heard once again.

Shi Xiaobai still had his eyes closed. As he experienced the undulating rise and fall of the dragon's chest, he sensed its weak strength. He began to consider how he could destroy such a strength.

Yes, he did not need to deal too much damage to the gigantic dragon.

He just needed to make the dragon lose the strength to maintain its heartbeat.

Once its heart stopped beating, that meant its death.

But how was he to drain the gigantic white dragon of its strength that allowed it to struggle for more than a thousand years?

Idea after idea appeared in Shi Xiaobai's mind, but under the overwhelming dragon's defense, these ideas were instantly snuffed. The methods of attrition he thought of were inferior to the hundreds of fire plumes, so how was it sufficient to drain the gigantic dragon of its remaining strength?

“Strength...”

“The strength of its heartbeat...”

Shi Xiaobai began muttering to himself.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai lowered his head to look at his right hand, his eyes lighting up.

“This King has it!”

Shi Xiaobai had thought of an approach that might succeed.

At this moment, Mos reminded him once again, “You still have ten minutes.”

Mos’ voice had an impatient tone to it. In ten minutes, he could personally kill this human that had managed to make him feel threatened despite being as weak as a worm.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath. If this method succeeded, it meant the dragon would die because of him, but for some reason, Shi Xiaobai found himself having difficulties breathing when he thought of this.

Why was this the case?

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and thought of how he had to kill a demonic dragon that had killed more than ten thousand lives. He thought of how he had to save Chen Lingcun as he slowly reached out his right hand and adhered it closely to the white dragon’s chest.

A faint light halo began to bloom at the point where his right hand touched the white dragon's chest.

“Indeed...This King's Superpower...is not only limited to the chests of females.”

Shi Xiaobai could sense the weak strength from the white dragon's chest resonate with his right hand, confirming his speculation.

His right hand could draw strength out from Riko in the form of a sword.

At this moment, he would extract the final bit of strength the white dragon used to maintain its heartbeat!

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt the gigantic dragon's strength produce a strong resistance!

It was a resistance against death, as such it was resisting crazily!

But!

“Sorry, This King has to kill you!”

Shi Xiaobai angrily roared as the halo around his hand suddenly penetrated the gigantic dragon's body.

Shi Xiaobai had actually concealed a secret from Riko.

When he extracted the powers of others, other than needing to wait for others to voluntarily give their powers, he could also take the initiative to snatch their power!

He was a King, and his right hand was a King's right hand!

He could obtain the power of his subjects!

He could also obtain power through conquest!

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was conquering the power in the white dragon's heart!

In theory, this was a nearly impossible task.

Even though the white dragon was extremely weak, it would not be conquered by Shi Xiaobai's strength.

However, if the white dragon used the final bit of its strength to resist Shi Xiaobai's domination, that meant that it no longer had the strength to maintain its heartbeat!

“Ooo...Ooo...Ooo...”

The gigantic white dragon suddenly opened its eyes at this

moment as it raised its head with great difficulty. It looked towards its chest where Shi Xiaobai, who was constantly using his power in an attempt to conquer it, was sitting. Finally, it let out a few whimpering dragon roars.

The dragon roars were filled with sorrow, helplessness, as well as...grievance.

However, at this moment, Shi Xiaobai was fully concentrated on conquering the white dragon's power. He did not hear the dragon's roaring, but if he could hear it....

But there was no if in this world.

If only there was no if...

The white dragon's whimpering came to an end.

Its heartbeat...stopped.

This meant that its life...had come to its end.

Shi Xiaobai did not manage to conquer the white dragon even at the very last moment, but he had succeeded in limiting the white dragon's final ounce of strength...which resulted in the white dragon lacking the strength to maintain its heartbeat.

Shi Xiaobai lowered his head to look at the white glow around his

hand that was about to extinguish like a candle. At the moment when the white dragon's heart stopped beating, the final power of the white dragon was held in Shi Xiaobai's hands.

This white glow was very, very cold, exactly like Shi Xiaobai's fingers at that very moment.

Suddenly a tear streamed down the corners of Shi Xiaobai's eyes.

Why...

Why was he so sad...

Why did he feel like he had killed...an existence that he should not have killed.

At this moment, the white glow that was about to disperse suddenly jumped in Shi Xiaobai's palm, shooting at an extremely fast speed into Shi Xiaobai's head.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt his mind go into a trance as the world in front of him flickered incessantly.

Shi Xiaobai instinctively closed his eyes.

When Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes again, all he saw in front of him was whiteness.

And in that endless white world, there was a conspicuous color, the contour of a person's figure.

Shi Xiaobai's blurry eyes began to slowly focus.

"I'm very happy that I can see you, the adorable Shi Xiaobai, one last time before I die."

A familiar but unfamiliar voice echoed as Shi Xiaobai's pupils violently constricted. The blurry world instantly turned clear as he saw a person standing not far from him in the snow-white world.

The person was a silver-haired youth with a handsome face, with a faint smile suffusing from the corner of his lips. He wore a gray short-sleeved shirt and blue shorts, with both hands in his pockets. It was the only color in the whiteness.

But...

A red beam of light from the silver-haired youth's chest drew the outline of a heart.

This red light that formed the heart was quiet, so quiet, as though it was painted on, quietly having its beating cease.

Chapter 136: You Have Successfully Infuriated Me

Instructor's office.

“This game...can still be considered ‘interesting’, but are you certain about not immediately killing this human?”

The red blob of light said with a hoarse voice.

Hisith's lips revealed a pleasant smile as he said, “No, the game has not ended. Since the naughty toy has completed my game, he should obtain the reward he deserves. Before I tell him that Chen Lingcun is the ‘demonic dragon’ that he had just personally killed, he is not to die.”

“Ze ze, this is very reminiscent of your style.”

The red blob of light coldly sneered and said, “Packaging a reward in the form of a despairing punishment. This Seat likes your methods greatly. When that human knows that the so-called ‘demonic dragon’ is actually a holy dragon and everything that Mos said was a lie, and that the holy dragon he had just killed was the Chen Lingcun he was looking for, This Seat will look forward to his face when he suffers a breakdown. But This Seat believes... it's best that this person dies as soon as possible.”

“A human that is able to pull out the ‘World Suppression Sword’ and kill a holy dragon with his bare hands should not be spared,

but...” Hisith’s eyes flashed a trace of hesitation as he stopped speaking halfway.

“But you can’t bear doing so.”

The red blob of light teased, “This Seat knows your quirks. You can’t bear to directly kill ‘interesting’ toys. Using games to make your toys suffer a breakdown to the point of becoming worthless toys before finally destroying them. You enjoy such a process. Whatever. That human will not live long anyway, so This Seat shall just patiently wait.”

Hisith revealed a stiff smile and said, “Thank you for your understanding.”

The red blob of light suddenly asked, “Actually, This Seat is puzzled over one thing. What made you think that the human could kill the holy dragon?”

Hisith shook his head and said, “No, I’m also very surprised that he was able to kill the holy dragon. However, I had planted a triggering curse on the holy dragon. As long as I activate the trigger at the last moment, it would result in an illusion of the holy dragon being killed by him. This holy dragon is after all still young. If he was given a few more years, I’m afraid I can’t do anything to him. Hence, regardless of the case, he would eventually be able to kill the holy dragon. It was only the process that exceeded my expectations.”

The red blob of light fell silent for a moment before saying, “I

seldom see you go to such ends to design a game. Should I label this human lucky or unlucky? Alright, it's time to end the game. This Seat can't wait to 'eat' that holy dragon."

Hisith nodded as his mouth curled into an evil smile. He could not wait to tell Shi Xiaobai the cruel truth. That was the most interesting and exciting aspect of this game.

At this moment, a cold voice suddenly resounded.

"You have successfully infuriated me."

A beam of light bloomed, as a purple-haired girl dressed in a black gothic dress walked out of the light.

...

...

In the white world, there were two colored figures, both teenage boys.

They were not far away from each other, but they seemed to exist in two different worlds.

Shi Xiaobai slowly focused and managed to identify the silver-haired youth to be the Chen Lingcun he had been looking for and trying to save. Similarly, he saw the motionless heart outline

painted by the red light.

Shi Xiaobai felt like he was struck by lightning as he instantly understood all that had happened.

Why his heart was constantly resisting seeing the gigantic white dragon as a demonic dragon described by Mos.

Why he could not bear to strike the gigantic white dragon.

Why he felt like he had made a terrible mistake when he killed the gigantic white dragon.

Why the Absolute Choice would offer the choice of [Kill Chen Lingcun].

All the questions were answered at that very instant.

That gigantic white dragon had been Chen Lingcun all along.

And he had really...killed Chen Lingcun with his own hands.

But why?

Even more questions began to arise.

Why was Chen Lingcun a white dragon?

Why was he being trapped in this “Underworld”?

Why was Hisith treating Chen Lingcun in such a manner?

...

Shi Xiaobai immediately wanted to apologize for his stupid mistake, as well as ask the surging questions in his mind. As a result, he had many things he wanted to say at that moment.

But...

Shi Xiaobai realized he could not make a sound. His body was similarly motionless. He couldn't even blink his eyes.

The current Shi Xiaobai...could not say a thing, nor could he do a thing.

“I’m already very satisfied that I’m able to meet you before departing. However, it is a pity that I would not be able to hear you cockily address yourself as ‘This King’.”

Chen Lingcun’s gaze that fell upon Shi Xiaobai was extremely soft. He said gently, “This is deep in your consciousness. You are unable to make any sound nor make any motions. So, please do not force yourself as it will be very painful. You should...just quietly listen to what I have left to say, alright?”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai struggled more vigorously. How could he calm down? He had to say something, he had to do something.

But just as Chen Lingcun said, regardless if he struggled to the end, he would not be able to produce a sound or move, just like a vegetable. Furthermore, the more he struggled, the more intense the pain he experienced in his consciousness. Even his “Unleaking Turtle Aura” was useless here, so the pain was extremely realistic.

However, Shi Xiaobai...immediately struggled with greater force. He felt like he was imprisoned in a cage woven by thorns. To charge out of the cage, he had to constantly and forcefully slam into the sharp edges of the thorns, regardless of how injured he was.

Chen Lingcun suddenly sighed and said, “I know you would definitely not listen to me. Even if the struggling is very painful, you would end up using more strength struggling, attempting to break free of the shackles of your consciousness. Because you are such a person. Shi Xiaobai, I know you have always been like that, an adorable person.”

“Although I have many things I want to tell you, if you were to continue struggling in pain, I will be leaving now. So...can you quietly listen to what I have to say...can you?”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai felt like his heart had been pricked. That was a pain more painful than the struggle in his

consciousness, but he slowly forced himself to calm down, because he similarly could not ignore Chen Lingcun's request.

“Thank you.”

After Chen Lingcun said those two words softly, he could accurately guess what Shi Xiaobai was thinking despite Shi Xiaobai looking expressionless like an existence that resembled a picture. This was probably because of his intelligence, but mostly because he believed that Shi Xiaobai was like the person he knew, an “adorable” person.

“Shi Xiaobai, just as your heart has managed to guess at this moment, I am that gigantic white dragon.”

Chen Lingcun took a deep breath and said, “If I didn't guess wrongly, you challenged Hisith's game. Although I do not know why you challenged Hisith's game, but the game was probably... about killing me in an allocated period of time. Of course, Hisith had definitely deceived you, creating lies that I'm an evil existence like a demonic dragon.”

Chapter 137: A Very Silly Story

Chen Lingcun sighed softly.

“Hisith’s goal was to make you kill me with your own hands, so even if you lacked the ability to kill me, he would definitely have created an illusion of you successfully killing me. In fact, he had planted a curse with a trigger. He could kill me at any time.”

“So, my death was destined. Furthermore, the reason for my death was because I was not being careful. If I had hidden properly and prevented Hisith from discovering my true identity, this would not have happened.”

“So Shi Xiaobai, you do not need to be too self-critical of yourself. What you should really do now is...live on!”

Chen Lingcun’s expression turned a bit more serious as he solemnly said, “Although I do not know why you would suddenly ask Hisith for his underwear, I guess...you still do not know that you have completely triggered Hisith’s peeve.”

“This matter might have been unintentional on your part, but you need to be aware of the seriousness of the situation.”

“For Hisith to design such a game, it clearly indicates his ‘attention’ for you. The more he pays attention to a toy, the more he wants to destroy it. Now, he has achieved his goals through this ‘game’. So, the next step he will do is most likely...kill you.”

“However, Hisith will only do so after you begin to blame yourself when he reveals the truth.”

Chen Lingcun took a deep breath and calmly analyzed, “Now, you are in Hisith’s ‘Underworld’. Trying to forcefully escape it is almost impossible. Maybe His Excellency One-Pun will be able to use ‘God’s Guardian’ to save you, but in the ‘Underworld’, it is very difficult for His Excellency One-Pun to guarantee your safety. So, your greatest chance of survival is to prevent Hisith from obtaining the satisfaction he desires!”

“Shi Xiaobai, you have to appear indifferent when Hisith tells you the truth...You can pretend like you have never heard of the name ‘Chen Lingcun’. You must make Hisith thinks that you were unmoved by the game he had designed.”

“Perhaps saying it this way is very laughable and tragic, but Shi Xiaobai, you have to maintain...your greatest value as a ‘toy’. By preventing Hisith from having the desire to kill you, that will maximize your chances...of living on.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he felt his heart aching. If he could say something, he would probably roar and say—stop speaking.

Chen Lingcun’s analysis was very accurate and very reasonable. He had used a tiny bit of information and his logical deduction to guess all that had happened, and even provided Shi Xiaobai the most reasonable way to live on.

However, he who was about to die was constantly worried about the safety of another person while leaving behind his final words. He was calmly analyzing the situation for someone else, and even calmly proposed the heartless request of pretending not to know him.

What sort of selflessness was this?

Why was he so selfless...to the person who had killed him?

Shi Xiaobai's consciousness struggled once again. He desired greatly to say, stop speaking.

As least...stop being so considerate for him.

At this moment, Chen Lingcun suddenly said, "Shi Xiaobai, I'm already dead. No one can save me. But you can still live on. Furthermore...you must live on. For yourself, and for me."

"There is a matter...I would like to request of you."

"First of all, please listen to my story."

...

...

At a particular corner in a noisy bar.

A handsome silver-haired youth and a voluptuous red-haired beauty were sitting across from each other. No matter where these two people were, they were supposed to attract the attention of everyone. They were clearly “prey” in a chaotic bar.

But from the beginning to the end, no one disturbed them. Occasionally, a person walking by would turn ashen after seeing the red-haired beauty and leave in a panic. When they saw the silver-haired youth, their eyes will glaze over before they turned around to leave.

The silver-haired youth was constantly pouring alcohol for himself and drinking it. He did not even look at the red-haired beauty in the eye.

As for the red-haired beauty, her eyes were focused on the silver-haired youth as though it would burn through him. The way she looked at him was one of unadulterated love between a man and woman.

“Are you trying to drink yourself silly?” The red-haired beauty suddenly said.

The silver-haired youth did not respond, but continued pouring alcohol for himself.

The red-haired beauty gave an ambiguous smile and said, “Fine,

once you are drunk, my chance will come.”

The silver-haired youth continue drinking his alcohol.

The red-haired beauty coldly snorted and said, “I have been seducing you for five straight years without any success. I am even beginning to suspect that you have a problem down there. When I take advantage of you being drunk, I want to see if your prowess in bed is crap.”

The silver-haired youth’s hand paused before he said in an expressionless manner, “Virgin, shut up.”

The red-haired beauty’s breathing stagnated as her face turned red. She immediately cursed, “Who have I been staying chaste for? You heartless jerk. Tsk, go ahead and drink, keep drinking till you are drunk. I will let you see how rich my theoretical knowledge is.”

Upon hearing this, the silver-haired youth poured from the bottle of alcohol again, but this time, the bottle was empty.

The silver-haired scanned the numerous empty bottles on the table before standing up in an expressionless manner. He was prepared to head to the counter to buy a few more bottles of alcohol.

At this moment, the red-haired beauty tugged at the silver-haired youth’s hand.

“Can you stop drinking?” The red-haired beauty said softly.

The silver-haired youth gave her a light glance and said, “I want to get drunk today.”

“You never drink alcohol, and you want to get drunk on the first day you drink?”

The red-haired beauty hurriedly said, “I’m very worried, because...you seem to be in great pain. If you are trying to escape your pain from drinking...I wish you would do it through another method...such as telling your pain to others.”

The silver-haired youth was started before he said with a faint smile, “After I’m drunk...I might engage in drunken sex uncontrollably.”

The red-haired beauty immediately exclaimed and pinched the back of the silver-haired youth’s hand and said angrily, “Why are you so shameless?” The red-haired beauty’s face blushed after she reprimanded him. Following that, she said, “Do you think I’m yearning it so much? Anyway, you are prohibited from drinking!”

The silver-haired youth’s eyes flashed as he suddenly took a step forward and sat beside the red-haired beauty. He extended his arm around the red-haired beauty’s waist and with his other hand, raised her chin.

The red-haired beauty’s eyes immediately glazed over as she

stuttered, “You...you...you...are drunk...”

“Do you know...whenever your face is this red...how much I wish to...”

The silver-haired youth’s voice suddenly turned extremely ambiguous.

The red-haired beauty’s face blushed even redder as she slowly closed her eyes and gently pursed her lips.

The silver-haired youth gave a bitter smile.

But he did not do anything.

Because most of the time, no matter how much you desire to do something, it was impossible for you to do it.

The silver-haired youth gently turned towards the counter.

The red-haired beauty slowly opened her eyes as her blushing face turned pale, but her eyes were turning red.

“I wonder, if pain can be told to others...then, will you willing to be that listener?”

A gentle voice echoed into her ears as the red-haired beauty

turned her head in surprise. She realized that the silver-haired youth had returned, and was sitting on another sofa, with a new bottle of alcohol in his hand.

“Yes!”

The red-haired beauty hurriedly responded, afraid that her response would be slower by even a second.

The silver-haired youth gave a self-deprecating laugh and said, “It is a...very silly story.”

Chapter 138: A Sorrow That Should Be Drowned

In the pure-white world.

Chen Lingcun began to narrate his story.

“I’m both human and dragon. It can also be said that I’m a human that can ‘transform into a dragon’!”

“In historical records, our race’s existence is known as the ‘Golden White Holy Dragon race’. After surviving the first apocalypse, due to unknown reasons, my clan was slowly forgotten by others. The form of ‘forgetting’ is a kind of curse. People are unable to remember our existence. They would even subconsciously ignore and forget our existence.”

“Hence, we call ourselves the ‘Forgotten Dragon Clan’.”

“However, not only was the ‘Forgotten Dragon Clan’ forgotten by humans, but we were also gradually abandoned by the human world. Our clan found it harder and harder to reproduce. Over time, more of my clansmen died from age or illnesses. Our purity in our bloodline lessened, resulting in fewer and fewer of my clansmen being able to transform into dragons. Thousands of years later, in the current generation, there were only 14 of my clansmen left!”

When Chen Lingcun said this, a flash of pain appeared in his

eyes.

“I was one of the only 14 remaining members of the ‘Forgotten Dragon Clan. Also...I am the only one in the dragon clan that has the ability to ‘transform into a dragon’.”

“In other words, I am the last golden-white holy dragon!”

“My parents, my elder brothers, and my clan...regarded me as the most important existence.”

...

...

In the noisy bar.

The silver-haired youth was narrating...his “silly” story to the red-haired beauty.

“His birth was acclaimed by our clansmen as the ‘Gift of the Dragon God’. This was because before his birth, there was no one in the ‘Forgotten Dragon Clan’ who was able to transform into a dragon. The bloodline of the golden-white holy dragon was already snuffed out.”

The silver-haired youth said with a gentle tone, “To the other clansmen, he was the last golden-white holy dragon in the world,

and also the last hope of the Golden White Holy Dragon race. But to me...he was only my younger brother.”

When the red-haired beauty heard this, she said softly, “You must have loved him tenderly.”

The silver-haired youth flashed a tender look as he softly said, “As our Forgotten Dragon Clan distanced ourselves from humans, the fourteen of us lived in a tiny deserted village. I was the only other person back then who was not yet of age, so...He was my younger brother, as well as my only playmate. I desired greatly to share all my toys with him.”

“Those so-called toys...were actually not fun at all. At least, I got sick of them early on, but...seeing how he could be so happy the whole day with a silly toy, I had a thought...that one day, I will find him the most fun and interesting toy in the world.”

The red-haired beauty was started as she muttered in an inaudible voice, “I’m so jealous.”

...

...

In the snow-white world.

Chen Lingcun’s face was filled with nostalgia.

“As the only clansman who is able to ‘transform into a dragon’, I was given strict Psionic Ability cultivation from a very young age. Do you know, Shi Xiaobai that in fact...I reached the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm at the age of six.”

Chen Lingcun suddenly gave a sly smile and said, “As for my present strength...it’s definitely enough to beat the hell out of you. Haha.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai felt that if not for the inappropriate atmosphere and him being unable to speak, he would have said in high spirits, “Come on, let’s hurt each other.”

Chen Lingcun sighed and said, “A child, even if he was a so-called golden-white holy dragon, would easily feel helpless and break down when faced with strenuous training and the hopes of all the clansmen.”

“But thankfully, I had my elder brother.”

“Brother was worried that I could not endure the difficulty of the training, so he would find a new toy for me every day. However, in that remote mountain far from humanity, how could there be any fun toys? So all those toys were in fact very boring.”

“However, every time my brother brought a new toy, I would deliberately appear extremely happy. Because, to me, what was most important was not the toy, but my brother being by my side, attempting to coax a smile from me.”

“Until one day, I did something wrong and was punished to kneel by my parents. Back then, I was crying very sadly, and...”

Upon saying this, Chen Lingcun’s eyes turned gloomy.

...

...

“Then, what happened next?”

The red-haired beauty had quietly moved to a position closer to the silver-haired youth.

The silver-haired youth glanced at her and said with dull eyes, “He cried miserably. Not a single toy was able to coax him. Then...I told him I would find the most fun toy in the whole wide world, before...I secretly left the village.”

The silver-haired youth gradually bowed his head in order to hide his slightly red eyes.

The red-haired beauty asked in puzzlement, “You didn’t find it?”

“No, I found it.”

...

...

Chen Lingcun sighed deeply.

“In a bid to find the most fun toy in the world, my elder brother secretly left the village. I was very upset back then, so I did not stop him. I am very thankful for not stopping him. Because not long after Brother left the village...a bunch of people came to the village, a bunch of...people with weapons.”

Upon saying this, he was nearly gritting his teeth while saying the words “people with weapons”.

Shi Xiaobai’s heart began to race as an ominous feeling spontaneously arose.

“They...were there for me.”

Chen Lingcun clenched his teeth and said hatefully, “They were just like Hisith. They had used certain methods to be immune from the ‘forgotten curse’. They knew of my existence, and came to the village to take me, the ‘golden-white holy dragon’ away.”

“My clansmen who had avoided strife their entire lives...were easily taken down without much resistance. But thankfully...this bunch of people only knocked my clansmen unconscious and did not kill them.”

“But...But...”

Chen Lingcun suddenly choked up as he drew a few deep breaths before he forcefully calmed himself down. He said with great difficulty, “But I was very scared back then...afraid I would lose my consciousness...then...then...”

“Then when I woke up.”

Chen Lingcun closed his eyes and used all his might to say, “When I woke up, the village had been reduced to ruins. Corpses were strewn everywhere. There were those people...as well as my own clansmen.”

...

...

In the noisy bar.

The silver-haired youth looked up and took a breath before lowering his head and said with a trembling voice, “Under extreme fear, he completed his first ‘dragon transformation’. Having lost his consciousness, he killed everyone.”

“When I returned to the village in great excitement from the human world with a toy I found, he was kneeling in front of my

clansmen's tombs. He was deadpan, with two streaks of blood across his face."

The red-haired beauty reached out her hand to hold onto the silver-haired youth's hand, while her other hand covered her gaped mouth. Her eyes were filled with pained love.

The silver-haired youth said in pain, "He was only eight years old, but he knew everything. He knew that everyone was killed after his dragon transformation. So he blamed himself, believing that he was the one who killed the other twelve clansmen."

"Can you imagine? An eight-year-old child digging twelve graves himself, moving the dismembered corpses into them?"

"Can you imagine an eight-year-old child say to you, 'Kill me, Brother. Kill me, Brother. Kill me, Brother...'"

Upon hearing this, two streams of tears immediately flowed out of the red-haired beauty's eyes. She covered her mouth, trying her best not to let out a cry. She leaned over and hugged the youth.

"He was blaming himself, but do you know...I blamed myself more than he did, because...those bunch of people...those darn bunch of people was able to find the village all because of me!"

The silver-haired youth gave a low growl as two burning hot tears rolled down his face.

The red-haired beauty muttered to herself, “So that was the case...The reason why you have been constantly looking for that organization...”

The silver-haired youth nodded and said, “All of this was not my brother’s fault, but my fault. It was that darn organization’s fault. I want to kill them all...”

And then commit suicide.

The silver-haired youth said in his heart.

The red-haired beauty’s heart trembled because she had guessed at the silver-haired youth’s thoughts. She hurriedly changed subjects and said, “Then your brother is now...”

Saying that, the red-haired beauty immediately stopped, wishing she could slap herself in the face.

The silver-haired youth quivered slightly before saying softly, “Whenever he sees me, he will blame himself. When I see him, I will blame myself even more, so...I left him. I left my most important younger brother.”

The red-haired beauty heaved a sigh of relief. At least it was just him having separated from his younger brother, and nothing bad had happened to him.

The silver-haired youth suddenly said, “But my brother is about

to die very soon, somewhere unknown to me. And I can't do a thing about it."

"So, shouldn't I get dead drunk?"

Some pain is not reduced in the least bit even if it was told to the world, wasn't it?

...

Chapter 139: Wait, You Must Wait!

“You have successfully infuriated me.”

A beam of light bloomed, as a purple-haired girl dressed in a black gothic dress walked out of the light.

Hisith's expression changed.

The black eyeballs in the red blob of light also began to move.

Kali looked at Hisith with a frosty look as she coldly said, “It appears that my warning was apparently too light.”

Hisith's mouth twitched as he turned around to look at the blob of red light.

The blob of red light immediately said to Kali, “Pixie, do you know who This Seat is?”

Kali turned towards the red blob of light in a deadpan manner while remaining silent.

The red blob of light sneered and said, “This Seat is the Abyss Ghost King, leading the Abyss' ghost race. I believe you must have heard of the ‘Abyss’, and you should know that the ‘Abyss’ is an existence you cannot afford to offend.”

Kali remained silent, as though she was waiting for the red blob of light to continue speaking.

The red blob of light's black eyeballs were in constant motion as it minced its words, "This Seat admits that you are very powerful, and This Seat won't be able to do anything to you with This Seat's strength being sealed, but there are countless existences in the 'Abyss' that can defeat you. Hisith is a human protected by the 'Abyss'. If you touch him, you are becoming the enemy of the entire 'Abyss'."

Kali remained silent, her eyes still as cold as ever.

The black eyes on red blob of light began to move at a faster speed as it said in a deep voice, "That kid is just a human with a bit more talent. You can find them a dime a dozen in this world. Do not do something stupid for a trivial human. Stand down. This Seat knows that you will lose some face, but a bit of face compared to your life, you probably know this very well, having lived for so long."

"Are you done?" Kali suddenly spoke softly, "Then it's time to die."

The moment she said that, a holy white light suddenly burst out of the red blob of light. In just an instant, the red blob of light was enveloped by the radiating white light, disappearing completely before it could even let out a scream.

"You!" Hisith looked in disbelief at Kali and said with a trembling

voice, “You actually killed the ‘Abyss Ghost King’?”

Kali looked at Hisith with cold eyes.

Hisith’s face went white. Hundreds of poker cards appeared out of nowhere as they aimed at Kali.

But in just an instant, the hundreds of poker cards turned to ashes with a “poof” sound.

Hisith’s pupils violently contracted as a black beam of light suddenly fell from the sky, enveloping him completely.

“No...No...”

Hisith’s face immediately began aging under the black light. His red hair turned white as his body began to bend.

“How...did...you...”

By the time Hisith said those three words, he had been reduced to a pile of white bones.

At this moment, a gigantic face formed from a black dot rose up from Hisith’s bones.

“Who is it that dares touch a person of my ‘Abyss’?”

The gigantic black face had a pair of white eyeballs. With a roll of its eyeballs, it immediately saw Kali.

“It’s you! No...everything was a misunderstanding. You...”

White light suddenly surged from every corner, immediately devouring the gigantic black face, causing its voice to come to an abrupt end.

The instructor’s office quietened down.

Kali gave a gentle sigh. “Darkness” appeared beside her as she turned to step into the darkness.

Moments later, she arrived in another world. This world was known as the “Abyss”.

“I’ll spare 10%.”

With this thought in mind, countless wails and roars immediately reverberated through the “Abyss”.

...

...

In the white world.

Chen Lingcun had finished narrating his story.

“I have been looking for him all this while. At the beginning, I wished he would kill me and free me from my self-blaming. But I now understand that I’m being too selfish. How can my elder brother that loves me so much be able to do that?”

“He must have been in great pain, so he had to leave.” Chen Lingcun sighed softly.

Shi Xiaobai was quietly listening, but although he could not say a word, his emotions were constantly churning. His consciousness was constantly struggling. He wanted to say something, even it was just a word.

Chen Lingcun continued speaking, “I have always been looking for him, because I wanted...to ask for his forgiveness. I want to tell him...that it’s truly great...that he is still alive.”

“So Shi Xiaobai, can you complete...my final wish? Live on and find him. Find my elder brother and help me say ‘sorry’ and ‘thank you’ to him.”

Chen Lingcun’s voice entered Shi Xiaobai’s ears as he struggled with greater might. However, the more he struggled, the force that imprisoned his consciousness bound him tighter. It was as though thorns were wound tightly around his body. As he struggled, they

would sink deeper into his flesh.

Chen Lingcun sighed in his heart as he looked at the expressionless “Shi Xiaobai”. He knew Shi Xiaobai definitely had many words to say, but in the deep depths of his consciousness, Shi Xiaobai could only be a quiet listener.

At this moment in the white world, a small black hand like a twisted vine suddenly reached out. It appeared behind Shi Xiaobai and grabbed his shoulder.

Chen Lingcun’s pupils constricted because the appearance of the black vine hand meant that there was not much time left. At the same time, another vine hand stretched out from the whiteness, grabbing Shi Xiaobai’s face.

“There’s not much time!” Chen Lingcun quickly said, “Shi Xiaobai, you must pretend to forget me and deceive Hisith before you can succeed in living on.”

“Help me find my elder brother. When you see him, you would definitely be able to identify him using your Perception of God.”

“When that happens, please help me tell him that in this life, becoming his younger brother was the luckiest thing in my life!”

Black vine hands began to appear out of the whiteness, grabbing Shi Xiaobai by the back and his limbs. Next, they slowly dragged Shi Xiaobai’s body towards the pale whiteness.

Shi Xiaobai's consciousness began to struggle violently. He knew that once the black vine hands dragged him into the whiteness, he would completely leave this world of consciousness. Then, the words he wanted to say the most would never be able to be transmitted to the present Chen Lingcun.

No!

Shi Xiaobai roared angrily in his heart. Since this was the deepest depths of his consciousness, he could conquer himself!

But, the black vine hands began to pull Shi Xiaobai's body at an accelerated pace. In less than ten seconds, half of Shi Xiaobai's upper body had been pulled into the whiteness.

"Right, I still owe you a promise that when we meet again, I will address you as 'King'."

Chen Lingcun waved at Shi Xiaobai, who was being pulled into the white mist, and grinned. Loudly, he said, "Goodbye, my adorable...Sire!"

"Bloop!"

The sound of water dripping was heard as Shi Xiaobai was completely devoured by the whiteness.

Chen Lingcun was the only person left in the white and barren world.

The corner of his mouths slowly turned stiff as his eyes lost its light.

In a while, he would die a lonely death in this white world.

“Bloop!”

Suddenly, the sound of water dripping reverberated throughout the white world. Chen Lingcun’s pupils contracted as he quickly looked up. He saw a tightly clenched fist suddenly appear from the white misty world. The fist had appeared to shatter something, allowing it to charge in here.

Following that, a face and half a body appeared out of the whiteness with an explosion.

“Chen Lingcun!”

A hoarse shout sounded from that figure.

The half figure that had reached out from the whiteness was tightly bounded by dozens of black vine hands. They were frantically pulling him into the white mist, but the half-figure was constantly struggling forward. He appeared like a person running while having a rope tied to him.

“Chen Lingcun!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted the three syllables a second time, nearing tearing his throat apart.

Chen Lingcun gaped his mouth.

“Chen Lingcun!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted the three syllables a third time, as though he would shatter the omnipresent whiteness.

Chen Lingcun’s eyes were red.

The black vine hands began to frantically pull at Shi Xiaobai’s body. It even lacerated Shi Xiaobai’s face, nearly pulling the skin from his face away.

Shi Xiaobai straightened his right hand towards Chen Lingcun and looked at him. Using all his strength, he shouted a sentence he had to communicate to him.

“This King will definitely save you!”

Shi Xiaobai’s upper body had already been dragged into the white mist.

“Just wait!”

Shi Xiaobai's head was also being dragged into the white mist, leaving only his straightened right hand.

“You must wait!”

A black vine hand wound itself around Shi Xiaobai's right hand and lugged him in.

The white world fell into silence once again.

But Chen Lingcun's eyes were extremely bright, having never dimmed.

Even though he was about to die.

Even though it was impossible to be saved.

Even though he was still left alone.

Chen Lingcun still revealed a smile and said a sentence no one could hear.

“Yes, I'll wait for you.”

...

...

“Make your choice, youth!”

A fiery voice echoed in his ears as Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes. The scene of the field surrounded him. Hua Pengju and company were charging right at him. Time had once again looped back to the moment the Absolute Choice appeared.

A few lines of black text slowly materialized.

Next, the voice “Make your choice, youth” resounded.

Shi Xiaobai was already roaring angrily in his heart.

“This King chooses...”

“Save Chen Lingcun!”

...

Chapter 140: This King Needs You

“My balls have shattered!”

Hua Pengju’s grief-stricken voice resounded through the field!

All the rookies that were looking at Tu Dahei, who was being surrounded by the five people, revealed confounded expressions. When Hua Pengju and company attacked Tu Dahei, they saw Tu Dahei’s body flash slightly before he suddenly appeared behind Hua Pengju. The five did not manage to retract their attacks and immediately ended up hitting each other.

Hua Pengju was the unluckiest. His groin had been kicked hard, shattering his balls!

However, at this moment, what confounded everyone the most was not Hua Pengju’s tragic encounter, but the direction in which Tu Dahei headed after flashing behind Hua Pengju. He was running towards the boundary of the field at an astonishing speed. In a few seconds, he was out of the field, coming in front of Yama Minamiya and Riko.

Everyone looked at where Tu Dahei was standing.

Just as Yama Minamiya was being taken aback by Shi Xiaobai’s sudden use of “Crab Steps”, he was first started when he saw Shi Xiaobai run in front of him, before involuntarily looking at Shi Xiaobai’s legs.

Riko was also given a fright from Shi Xiaobai's "Crab Steps", but seeing him step out of the field in a few steps, she immediately had an ominous foreboding as she lowered her head to look at Shi Xiaobai's legs.

"Xiao...Dahei, you crossed the line!"

Riko was too deep for tears. Shi Xiaobai's legs had just stepped out the field's boundary. According to the free-for-all rules, leaving the field meant elimination. This meant that Shi Xiaobai had been eliminated right from the beginning of the free-for-all!

"Riko!"

A deep voice, that sounded like it had been suppressed, came out of Shi Xiaobai's mouth. It was a voice that sounded so solemn that it was impossible to think lightly of it.

Riko was slightly surprised as she looked up at Shi Xiaobai. This was the first time Shi Xiaobai addressed her by her name. After taking a glance at Shi Xiaobai's expression, she was immediately stunned.

"You..."

Riko could not describe Shi Xiaobai's expression with words. It was as though it was suppressing some pain in it, or it might have been anger. He was impatiently anxious over something, but he

also had an unwavering calm. It was as though he had to do something. He could not even wait a second, but he had to do all sorts of preparations.

His pair of black eyes was like the vast starry sky filled with numerous stars. The tiny bits of light seemed to illuminate the dark night, as though one would always look towards the light while immersed in darkness.

“This King needs you.”

Shi Xiaobai locked his eyes with Riko and seriously communicated his desire and need.

“Ah?”

Riko was firstly startled before she realized what he meant and said in a fluster, “Here?”

Before Riko finished her sentence, Shi Xiaobai’s right hand had already reached out towards her chest.

The rookies who had stopped to watch this scene were left dumbfounded. This conversation with that motion...The rookies translated the scene automatically in their minds.

Tu Dahei: “I want to touch boobs.”

Riko: “Touch here?”

Tu Dahei stretched out his groping hands to touch her boobs.

No, this plot was wrong!

OMAGOD, Goddess Riko quick reject him. Give him a slap in the face!

The rookies roared angrily in their minds.

But at this moment, Shi Xiaobai had reached out his groping hands stably in front of Riko’s perky chest. It was just a centimeter away from truly touching her.

Riko’s heart was immediately filled with extreme mixed emotions. Although he did not touch her, Shi Xiaobai’s well-practiced performance could not help but make her recall of the tragic encounter last night. However, with so many people watching, even if there was no contact, the postures they had was too ambiguous.

“Hurry up!” Riko said coyly. If this was any other time, even if she did not send a slap at him, she would have immediately dodged. But from Shi Xiaobai’s expression and eyes, she could not bear to reject him. She could clearly sense that Shi Xiaobai was in need of her power.

Riko did not know that her two simple words sounded like a bolt

from the blue to others.

From their point of view, that one centimeter distance was invisible. All they saw was Tu Dahei using his despicable hands to touch the ample holy grounds. This was something that fucking deserved having his hands chopped off. Why did it become...hurry up!?

A number of rookies were already quietly closing their eyes.

They originally believed that Tu Dahei was just a silly loser like them, but they never expected that he had secretly hooked up with a true goddess that had even rejected Young Master Red Lotus.

The one person who wanted to send Shi Xiaobai flying with a smack was naturally Yama Minamiya. This was the first time he encountered someone having the guts to molest his daughter in front of him. However, he was always a composed person and he knew Riko's character very well. If Riko was unwilling, she would never agree to it even if a blade was held to her neck.

Thankfully, Shi Xiaobai did not truly touch her, allowing Yama Minamiya to slightly heave a sigh of relief. But immediately, he was puzzled.

What were these two young people trying to do? Were they purely just making a "public display of affection"?

The answer was immediately revealed.

A purplish-blue circular door of light suddenly bloomed above Riko's chest, while Shi Xiaobai reached his hand into it.

Riko moaned slightly as her face blushed.

When Shi Xiaobai pulled his hand out of the purplish-blue circular light, purplish-blue wind twirled around his arms as purplish-blue crystals shot out from the purplish-blue door. They attached themselves to Shi Xiaobai's arm, forming a stone pillar formed from crystals.

After Shi Xiaobai pulled the stone pillar out of the purplish-blue circular light, he lifted it high into the sky as a golden beam of light shot out into the sky, piercing through the clouds. A clear buzz of a sword reverberated throughout the field.

Crystal flakes pared off, transforming into dots of light that dissipated into the ground.

A dark blue sword appeared out of the stone pillar. The sword's body was like rippling water. It sparkled and was gorgeous in style. It swayed the hearts of many.

“Superpower!?”

Everyone was shocked. It was unknown who shouted, but everyone slowly managed to react to the scene before them. This magical and unscientific scene had only one scientific explanation

—superpower!

Tu Dahei could actually use a superpower!

This meant that he not only was he a Psyker, but he was also at least at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly lifted the dark blue sword backwards and stabbed it into his chest. He did it as quick as lightning, causing everyone to stare widely with horrified looks.

When the dark blue sword stabbed into Shi Xiaobai's chest, it formed a dark blue column of light. Moments later, the entire sword sank into Shi Xiaobai's chest.

Riko was first startled by Shi Xiaobai's actions before she came round to. She came to a realization that Shi Xiaobai could store the powers of others in his body.

But at the moment Shi Xiaobai stabbed the sword into his chest, Riko immediately felt goosebumps all over her body. That feeling felt as though she was being intimately hugged by Shi Xiaobai.

Riko immediately felt the strong urge to resist.

“Bear with it!”

Riko heard Shi Xiaobai's fervent voice.

She was left in a daze, but she heard Shi Xiaobai say gently, “I need your power, can you bear with it a bit?”

Riko looked up and looked into Shi Xiaobai’s eyes for a few seconds. Her eyes gradually turned soft before she said with a serious face, “Hurry!”

“Thank you!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head heavily, as he turned to leave the field at a very fast speed.

Chapter 141: Hold It In Even If You Can't Accept It

After Shi Xiaobai left, Riko's face gradually turned red as her breathing also sped up. His superpower was way too evil. How could she withstand such intimacy between man and woman? She felt like she was about to die of embarrassment.

As the rookies saw the goddess in their hearts blushing, they were reminded of Tu Dahei's despicable groping hands and his mysterious superpower. Immediately, they felt extremely infuriated.

Why were things so unfair between people!?

The rookies turned their heads to look at their opponents. Their eyes were red as they charged at each other, hoping to vent the discontentment in their hearts.

The free-for-all began once again. This time, nearly no one held back as the scene turned explosive.

By the side of the field, Yama Minamiya glanced at Riko, who had her blushing face lowered as though she was enduring something. Sighing lightly, he asked, "You and Shi Xiaobai, the both of you..."

"You are not to ask!"

Riko immediately cut him off in a coy manner. Whatever that happened last night between her and Shi Xiaobai had to be a secret that sank to the bottom of the ocean!

Yama Minamiya's expression changed.

Riko really had that kind of relationship with that punk?

Sigh, my daughter has grown up after all!

Although Shi Xiaobai was a few years younger than his daughter, and he was not as excellent as Red Lotus on the whole, he was still a genius with monster-like talents despite him being unable to distinguish the actual proficiency level of Shi Xiaobai's "Crab Steps".

Furthermore, he was an S Class Psyker, reaching the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in twenty days.

Shi Xiaobai's future was limitless, barely worthy of his daughter.

Since the young couple had mutual feelings, he decided not to become that black-faced person who separated a loving couple. He would leave everything to run its natural course.

However...

"Why didn't you tell me earlier that Shi Xiaobai is already at the

fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm? If that were the case, would there even be a need for a division selection?”

Yama Minamiya was feeling slightly regretful. Eliminating Shi Xiaobai just like that was a great pity. Had he known that Shi Xiaobai was already at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, he would have internally fixed it!

Riko was stunned as she said with a bitter face, “Wasn’t I just trying to give you a pleasant surprise?”

Yama Minamiya’s eyes stared.

Indeed, I was surprised, but pleasant my ass.

At this moment, the intensity of the free-for-all on the field had reached unprecedented heights. However, Yama Minamiya was left greatly disappointed after taking a few glances at it. These rookies were still too poor in quality. Wang Lin, who was at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, could not even compare with the strongest in the three other divisions, much less talk about him stepping out of [Gaia]. He was definitely the weakest one.

A struggle flashed in Yama Minamiya’s eyes as he turned to look at Riko, who was looking annoyed because of Shi Xiaobai’s elimination. Immediately he heaved a sigh of relief.

“However, it’s not too late.” Yama Minamiya said softly as he

began walking towards the field.

Riko looked up in astonishment. She sensed the meaning behind Yama Minamiya's words and her eyes immediately lit up. She quickly followed behind.

At this moment, Yama Minamiya had arrived in the middle of the field as he shouted, "All of you, stop!"

The rookies who were engaging each other in battle like "glue" were surprised that it was Division Minister Minamiya. They all stopped and looked towards the center of the field where Yama Minamiya was standing.

"All of you are to return to the classroom. The division selection shall come to an end," Yama Minamiya said.

The rookies revealed incomprehensive looks.

"Why?"

"What's wrong?"

"What happened?"

"..."

Yama Minamiya surveyed the crowd until everyone slowly quietened down before he announced in a deadpan manner, “Tu Dahei will be representing [Annihilation] division for the collective training selection.”

The rookies immediately exclaimed in disbelief.

“What?”

“How can you do that?”

“That means it’s internally fixed?”

“...”

Yama Minamiya was silent as he quietly looked at the agitated crowd. However, his unperturbed demeanor made all the rookies gradually quieten down. They realized that Yama Minamiya had set his mind on it.

However, at the moment silence was about to reign supreme, a person suddenly lifted his hand.

“I can’t accept it!”

Everyone looked over and saw Wang Lin raise his hand. His expression was stern and filled with indignation.

Wang Lin expressed his unacceptance!

“I can’t accept it too...Si...”

Hua Pengju’s thighs were turned inwards as he held one hand to his groin, while he struggled to raise his other.

“We can’t accept it too!”

Ah One, Ah Two, Ah Five, Ah Six looked at each other as they resolutely raised their hands!

“I can’t accept it too!”

“Me too!”

“Can’t accept Tu Dahei!”

One rookie after another raised their hands, shouting their lack of acceptance over the matter. In fact, they had to be accepting of a Psyker at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, but if it was the hated Tu Dahei, who had emptied their wallets and hooked up with their goddess, they would never accept it!

Quickly, other than Ye Jiaquan and Xiang Wu, the other rookies had all raised their hands, shouting “can’t accept it”. They were staring intently at Yama Minamiya, expressing their firm opposition of his decision!

Even if you are a Division Minister, you can't ignore the objections of the lot of us, right?

Yama Minamiya frowned and scanned everyone again before sighing. He said loudly, "[Creation] rookie, Kevin, fifth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, C Class Psyker."

Upon hearing this, the rookies were confounded as they did not know the meaning behind Yama Minamiya's words.

But Yama Minamiya immediately bellowed loudly, "[Order] rookie Wen Hezheng, seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, no superpowers."

A number of rookies quietly lowered their hands.

Yama Minamiya sneered and bellowed once again, "[Chaos] rookie, Mu Yuesheng, ninth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, A Class Psyker."

A large number of rookies rapidly lowered their hands. The few rookies who still had their hands up now had stiff faces.

Yama Minamiya looked at everyone and said in a deep voice, "[Annihilation] rookie, Wang Lin, fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, no superpowers."

Wang Lin gaped his mouth and lowered his hand in embarrassment.

The remaining rookies also lowered their hands in a sparse manner.

Everyone fell silent as the atmosphere turned repressed. This was because Yama Minamiya had recited the names of the four rookies representing each division for the present batch. [Annihilation]'s representative should have been Shi Xiaobai, but since Shi Xiaobai had never appeared since training began, the rookie representative for [Annihilation] became Wang Lin.

Mu Yuesheng, who was ranked S– Class just like Shi Xiaobai, was also considered the cream of the crop even in China's first-tier organizations. And even if Kevin and Wen Hezheng were weak, they were still much stronger than Wang Lin.

“Do you know why today's selection format was decided to be a free-for-all?” Yama Minamiya suddenly asked.

The rookies were alarmed as they pricked their ears up.

“Because I do not have much hope in all of you,” Yama Minamiya said in a deadpan manner. “The free-for-all's goal was to let fowls like you peck at each other, so as to produce the strongest fowl.”

The rookies stared widely. Although the way he said it was infuriating, it sounded somewhat appropriate.

“But I never expected.” Yama Minamiya heaved a sigh of relief before saying, “I never ever expected that mixed in amongst the fowls was a young eagle. Tell me, who should I choose?”

At this moment, the rookies were too deep for tears.

What you said is very reasonable, we have nothing to offer to your viewpoint.

Yama Minamiya noticed that the time was right as he waved his hand and concluded, “Fowls need to have the understandings of a fowl. Don’t keep thinking of flying in the sky. Learn how to run in a garden before speaking! I gave the [Annihilation] nomination to Tu Dahei because he made me see hope, the hope of exceeding the other three divisions! And what you have shown me is only disappointment!”

“So, even if you can’t accept it, before you make me see any hope, you have to hold it in even if you can’t accept it!”

Chapter 142: Is Your Face Hurting Badly?

In Hisith's office.

“So, you came looking for me to ask about Chen Lingcun's location?”

Hisith looked at Shi Xiaobai coldly. He never expected Shi Xiaobai to dare take the initiative to look for him.

“It's not an inquiry, but an exchange.”

Shi Xiaobai coldly said, “You can design any game for This King to challenge. As a result, give the whereabouts of Chen Lingcun to This King.”

Hisith frowned slightly upon hearing this. He kept having the impression that the way Shi Xiaobai looked at him and the tone in his voice felt like he was repressing an anger more intense than his own.

Shi Xiaobai sneered dismissively and said, “Why, are you afraid? The past two games had been easily cracked by This King, so you are lacking in confidence now?”

Hisith's gaze immediately turned cold. The Shi Xiaobai in front of him was like a young cub that had bared its fangs while roaring. It made him feel extremely uncomfortable.

“Very good, but to challenge a ‘somewhat difficult’ game, you must first pass the test of a small game.”

Hisith sneered as he stretched his hand out, causing three tall glasses to fly out from a cabinet. They landed on the office desk, followed by a bottle of red wine flying into Hisith’s hand.

Hisith quickly filled the three glasses with red wine.

Shi Xiaobai remained expressionless.

The sides of Hisith’s mouth twitched as he coldly said, “The game’s rules are very simple. In the three glasses of red wine, one of them doesn’t have poison. There is a one third chance, and if you finish drinking a glass without any poison...”

Before Hisith finished his sentence, he saw Shi Xiaobai reach his hand out to drink a glass of red wine. He gulped it down extremely fast. After he placed the wine glass down, he immediately picked up another.

All three glasses of poisoned red wine were gulped down by Shi Xiaobai in an instant.

Hisith was surprised but he quickly sneered in his mind. The “Bonechewer Medicinal Agent” would act up soon. When that happened, he would enjoy the rash idiot’s painful expressions.

Hisith looked on in a confounded manner when a hand suddenly reached out to grab the bottle of red wine on the table!

Shi Xiaobai had grabbed the bottle of wine and immediately poured it down his throat!

Hisith immediately stared widely.

Was this rascal courting death? That's not right. Why hasn't the "Bonechewer Medicinal Agent" shown its effects?

"Peng!"

Moments later, Shi Xiaobai slammed the empty wine bottle on the table.

"Unleaking Turtle Aura" and "This Turtle Is Hardest" simultaneously came into effect. A refreshing numbness overwhelmed him. His flesh and blood defense value slowly rose. 1...2...3...3.5...

It finally fixed itself at a value of "7".

Shi Xiaobai exhaled and looked at the bewildered Hisith and coldly said, "The entire bottle of wine is poisonous, but unfortunately, This King is unafraid of poison. Are you aware? Your little tricks are as funny and laughable as a clown in This King's eyes. It is an insult to This King's intelligence."

Hisith's breathing stagnated as he found it hard to believe that he had encountered such derision. The situation before him had rendered him speechless. The anger he felt reached its limits, but his dignity of being belittled prevented him from killing Shi Xiaobai so easily.

His game had been easily cracked and it had even earned a scolding of being an "insult of intelligence"!

The way Hisith looked at Shi Xiaobai turned extremely cold.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said in a deep voice, "This King is very disappointed. This King was expecting that your game would be able to make This King frown a bit, but it's a game that is inferior to a three-year-old's game. This King shall give you a final chance. If your game is still as childish and ridiculous, then stop addressing yourself as 'Underworld King', and don't keep mentioning the word 'game'. Do you understand? From This King's point of view, you completely do not deserve it!"

"Very good! Very good! Very good!"

Hisith angrily sneered thrice. Shi Xiaobai had succeeded in provoking his anger and lifted his fighting spirit.

Since you want to experience a true game, I will let you know what it is to taste despair!

Hisith waved his hand forcefully.

Dozens of poker cards suddenly flew out before they formed the shape of a door!

Immediately following that, the places where the poker cards interleaved each other shot out beams of light, eventually combining into a blinding light.

A door of light formed from poker cards appeared in the office in seconds while a cold eerie aura emanated from inside the door.

“Behind this door is This...”

Hisith’s words came to an abrupt end once again because Shi Xiaobai had quickly rushed straight into the door to the Underworld, disappearing from the office.

He had originally wanted to say the words, “behind this door is This King’s Underworld. If you dare enter it, This King will make you witness what a true game is”, but instantly, he was left without an audience.

At this moment, Underworld King Hisith had made the preparations to address himself as “This King” in front of Shi Xiaobai, but he experienced a heartless and invisible rejection.

“Fuck!”

Hisith bellowed angrily as he forcefully flailed his hands, causing numerous poker cards to fly out.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Explosive sounds sounded from the office as cabinets collapsed. Walls were left damaged and while a cloud of dust filled the office. The entire office immediately turned into a mess.

A blob of red light flew out from Hisith’s chest and calmly stared at Hisith with its two black eyeballs.

The eyeballs seemed to say, “Hey, does your face hurt? Is your face hurting badly?”

“You wait and see. This King will make Shi Xiaobai regret that he came to this world. This King will make him suffer a complete breakdown in This King’s game. This King will personally destroy him!”

Hisith pointed at the red blob of light and loudly said, “You wait and see. Wait and see!”

The black eyeballs on the red blob of light shook a bit as it issued a dismissive laugh, “Based on past experience, This Seat seriously doubts if that day will come.”

...

...

Underworld.

Shi Xiaobai looked up at the three scarlet moons in the sky and clenched his fists tightly.

“This King is here.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed lightly. What followed was what truly mattered.

The figure of the bat, Mos, quickly appeared in the sky. As he flew over while flapping his bat wings, he heard Shi Xiaobai coldly say before he even landed, “Lead the way.”

“Follow me.”

Mos’ crimson eyes flashed a cold beam as he turned around to fly into the distance. His speed was extremely fast as he arrived at the ends of one’s vision nearly immediately.

Mos’ stopped where he was and slowly turned his head, prepared to wait for Shi Xiaobai. Suddenly, he heard a voice sound in front of him.

“Hurry up, This King is in a hurry.”

Mos turned his head in surprise and saw Shi Xiaobai waiting at the ends of his own vision, waiting for him.

How was this possible?

He had flown at a speed 10% of his maximum speed. Not only had this human kept up with him, but he had also exceeded him by so much!?

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly disappeared at the end of his vision.

Mos was alarmed as he immediately flapped his wings to fly over.

At 20% his maximum speed, he still failed to see Shi Xiaobai's figure.

30%, 40%, ...

Only when he reached 70% of his speed did Mos gradually see Shi Xiaobai at the end of his vision. However, the speed at which he was closing the distance was extremely slow.

What did this mean?

He was only slightly faster than this human at 70% his maximum speed?

Chapter 143: Beat O' Unyielding Heart!

After more than ten minutes of running, the duo arrived at the peripheral of the high wall.

Mos was annoyed. Thankfully, this journey was just a straight line path. If the human had ran amok, things would have become problematic. At the same time, he was secretly shocked at Shi Xiaobai's condition. After running at full speed for more than ten minutes, all he suffered from was being slightly out of breath.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the steep staircase in front of him and took a deep breath. At an extremely fast speed, he jumped onto it and arrived at the top of the high wall before he looked down.

A humongous white dragon was lying in the middle of four high walls, while a golden wing was covering the dragon's white body. Thousands of skulls were shooting red beams of light that converged at the dragon's chest, forming a gigantic outline of a heart.

That heart was slowly contracting and expanding. Nearly half a minute passed before it finished one cycle.

“Wait a moment, This King will save you soon.”

Shi Xiaobai had this thought in mind as he suddenly leaped off the high wall and landed on the ground with a loud thud. After barely getting his footing, he rushed forward and arrived at the

gigantic dragon's head in a few seconds.

Mos' expression changed slightly as he flapped his wings to fly towards Shi Xiaobai.

“What are you doing?”

Mos' voice was extremely cold.

“Slaying the dragon.”

Shi Xiaobai softly said those words and then turned his head to look at Mos. He coldly said, “Since the game's progression leads to a dragon, isn't it very obvious that the mission in the game is to let This King slay this dragon? Isn't that right?”

Mos was taken aback and asked in surprise, “How did you know?”

Shi Xiaobai pointed at his brain and snickered, “It's easy to guess just using the brain. With that idiot, Hisith's stupid intellect, what complex game can he think of? This King is long sick and tired of this kind of Dragon Quest-like RPG games.”

“Are you courting death!?” Mos angrily asked. Shi Xiaobai dared to verbally insult his master, Hisith, in front of him!

“Why? Are you turning your embarrassment into anger after

This King saw through it? Looks like the so-called ‘Underworld King’ and his servant is nothing special. Or are you afraid that This King will easily slay this dragon, easily passing this retarded game of yours?”

Shi Xiaobai stared fearlessly at Mos. The mockery in his eyes was enough to make one go crazy.

Mos took a deep breath and coldly said, “This demonic dragon has been imprisoned for a thousand years and yet it can’t be killed. Do you think you have the ability to do so?”

Shi Xiaobai curled his mouth and said, “To not be able to kill a dragon after a thousand years, your so-called ‘Underworld’ will be doomed sooner or later. This King shall let you bunch of crap see what it means to slay a dragon!”

The veins on Mos’ forehead protruded as Shi Xiaobai’s arrogance nearly drove him crazy. However, he could not help but look forward to seeing Shi Xiaobai’s expression after he realized that the dragon he killed under the illusion conjured by his master, Hisith, was the “Chen Lingcun” he was looking for.

Mos decided to endure a bit longer as he coldly said, “Three minutes later, the Specter Fire Mages and knife-wielding warriors will deal a wave of attacks to drain the dragon. Wait here for a moment and you will be given an hour. If you can’t kill the demonic dragon in an hour, I will kill you with my own hands.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes flickered before he said, “There’s no need.

Move the white dragon's wings away. This King will slay the dragon in three minutes.”

Shi Xiaobai heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. He was in such a rush to reach this place firstly because he was afraid that Riko's power could not last that long, and secondly, he did not wish for Chen Lingcun to endure even a single wave of “draining”.

Mos was sneering in his heart.

A weakling at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm was deluded to think that he could slaughter the holy dragon in three minutes?

It appeared that not only was this human extremely arrogant, but his brain was also very problematic.

Mos coldly glanced at Shi Xiaobai before flying towards the dragon's wing. As he grabbed a corner of the golden wing with one hand, he flew towards the right. The golden wing was slowly moved by Mos in this manner as a white chest was slowly revealed.

“I'm not supposed to help you, but since moving...”

Mos thought that he should give a reasonable explanation for helping him so as to prevent himself from arousing Shi Xiaobai's suspicion. Although this human was very dumb, there was no guarantee that he might see through the scheme through sheer luck.

“Shut up. Watch quietly.” Shi Xiaobai ruthlessly cut Mos off in a cold manner.

When Mos heard this, he was so angry that he roared, wishing he could immediately slaughter Shi Xiaobai there and then.

Shi Xiaobai ignored Mos’ wrath as he leaped onto the white dragon’s chest. Looking down, he saw the gigantic red outline of the heart slowly beating.

This weak heartbeat was Chen Lingcun’s final strength.

Shi Xiaobai looked up to scan the four rows of skulls that were shooting the red beams of light. According to what Mos said, these rows of skulls formed an S-class restraining array formation to seal Chen Lingcun’s heart, restricting the frequency and amplitude of Chen Lingcun’s heartbeats. By keeping the amplitude and frequency to its lowest levels, it resulted in the restraint of his motions.

Then, the most direct approach was to destroy the S-class restraining array formation, but Shi Xiaobai knew very well that he did not have the ability to destroy the rows of skulls under the watchful eyes of Mos.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai’s only method he had now was...to touch his own chest!

A beam of light appeared from Shi Xiaobai's chest as he slowly pulled out a dark blue sword from his body. This sword was Riko Minamiya's power!

Mos was slightly surprised but quickly calmed down. To be able to pull out a sword from his chest, it was apparent that this foolish human was a Psyker.

“Is this superpower the confidence that makes you believe you can kill the golden-white holy dragon? Very well, I will witness with my own eyes how you plan on killing the golden-white holy dragon before I cruelly tell you of the harsh truth.”

Mos looked at Shi Xiaobai with cold eyes, as a teasing smile suffused from the corner of his lips.

Using the superpower that you pride yourself on to kill the friend you have been looking for. Isn't this very interesting and despairing?

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai raised the dark blue sword high up as he faced the white dragon's heart outline!

Then, he gently pierced it downwards!

Gently, the dark blue sword's tip stabbed at the gigantic white dragon's tough skin!

Mos was surprised. He was so deluded to think that he could kill

the golden-white holy dragon with a strike without any strength?

However, the corner of Shi Xiaobai's lips suffused a smile.

This strike was to save Chen Lingcun!

Because this was not an ordinary sword.

But...

“High Frequency Vibrokinesis!”

Intense spatial vibrations were suddenly generated over the white dragon's body. It had struck the heart which the S-class restraining array formation was imprisoning!

“Beat! O' unyielding heart!”

Shi Xiaobai roared angrily in his heart!

Suddenly, the heart that was slowly contracting and expanding...

“Ba...dump!”

It forcefully produced a strong heartbeat which was immediately followed by...

“Badump... Badump... Badump...”

The heart outline looked like a gigantic hand tightly clenching and releasing, clenching and releasing...

“Badump! Badump! Badump!”

Under High Frequency Vibrokinesis, the gigantic dragon’s heart which was confined to a small space under the red restraining beams began to beat forcefully, as though it was an angry little bird that was about to break out of a cage!

Mos finally realized something was amiss. With a drastic change in expression, he charged at Shi Xiaobai!

At this moment, the gigantic white dragon opened its eyes as light burst out from its golden eyes!

“Roar!”

A deafening dragon’s roar resounded as the white dragon raised its head high up. A nearly transparent barrier suddenly appeared, blocking Mos’ attack!

Simultaneously, a divine white beam of light began to rapidly condense in front of the dragon’s throat before it spewed out a holy beam that shot straight into the sky!

The white dragon raised its neck and turned its head, slowly sweeping a circle around it!

“Boom! Boom! Boom....”

Within a few seconds, all the skulls were shattered by that beam of light. A huge gap opened up in the high wall!

“Roar!”

The gigantic white dragon looked up and roared. It was angry and free!

Chapter 144: Golden-White Holy Dragon Shows Its Prowess

The golden-white holy dragon spewed holy beams of light, destroying the four rows of skulls. The red beams of light that shot towards the dragon's heart immediately disappeared, as the S-class restraining array fell apart.

“Ba...dump! Ba...dump! Ba...dump! ...”

The sound of a vigorous heartbeat implied that the golden-white holy dragon had regained its freedom!

The golden-white holy dragon turned its head to look at Mos, its golden pupils filled with anger and hostility, and within them, an outburst of divine power was contained.

Mos' face turned extremely ugly as he suddenly felt a strong, imminent sense of danger. He hurriedly flew backwards in retreat.

“Roar!”

The golden-white holy dragon roared as a golden-white pillar of light suddenly burst out from the ground.

Mos' pupils violently contracted as all the white bandages on his body exploded instantly, revealing a purple-bodied contour. His squirming muscles were disgusting.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Mos used all his strength in a bid to retreat, but golden-white beams of light burst out around him in an incessant manner, like fountains shooting up from the ground. While Mos desperately struggled to dodge, a golden-white pillar of light scratched past one of his wings.

Mos let out a shrill scream as his right wing was burnt to a crisp just from making light contact with the golden beam of light!

Mos was appalled. This golden white holy dragon possessed the mighty power of Holy and Light which were perfect at countering calamity fiends that reveled in Darkness. If he had been struck directly by the golden-white pillar of light, he could very well be destroyed there and then.

At this moment, a loud bugle was sounded from above the high walls!

“Kill!”

Beneath the high wall, the saber-wielding soldiers raised their steel sabers and surged forward from all directions like a flood.

In the middle of the high wall, four rows of mages in black robes sent plumes of fire at the gigantic dragon.

“Roar!”

The golden-white holy dragon raised its head to roar as white light once again began to rapidly coalesce into a large ball of light at its throat!

A stream of white light containing holiness spewed out, forming a fiery rain. The blackish-red flames were immediately frozen, shattering into pieces during their falling process.

“Boom! Boom! Boom....”

The white stream of light swept from the middle of the high wall as the black-clothed mages were instantly turned into ice sculptures, blasting apart three seconds later.

Shi Xiaobai stared in bewilderment. This golden-white holy dragon was practically invincible!

At this moment, the golden-white holy dragon suddenly straightened its body. Shi Xiaobai, who was standing at the dragon’s chest, immediately slipped down.

Shi Xiaobai immediately struggled to climb towards the white dragon’s back, but was too deep for tears when he realized that the golden-white holy dragon’s body was as smooth as jade. There was no point where he could grasp.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and gave up resisting. He slid down the

dragon's body as though he was on a slide.

At this moment, a dragon claw stretched out to grab the sliding Shi Xiaobai and gently threw him up to its neck.

When Shi Xiaobai landed on the golden-white holy dragon's neck, he immediately saw a raised dragon scale. It was black in color, and appeared to be the only scale on the white dragon's body.

Shi Xiaobai immediately placed the dark blue sword back into his body and grabbed the dragon scale, and with a grin, he sat down.

“Very good, This King shall confer you the title—Mount of the King!”

Shi Xiaobai patted the black dragon scale and his constantly taut expression finally managed to relax at this moment.

The golden-white holy dragon's golden pupils flashed a hint of helplessness as it began to flap its golden wings, immediately stirring up a furious hurricane on the ground. The saber-wielding soldiers that were charging straight forward were immediately thrown to the ground by the hurricane in a uniform manner, like domino blocks

As the golden wings flapped, the dragon's massive body that was hundreds of meters long and about ten meters wide rose up from the ground. As hurricanes struck the ground, it slowly flew above

the high wall.

“Roar!”

The golden-white holy dragon roared and immediately flew beyond the high walls and headed towards the dark purple sky.

At this moment, a black spot suddenly appeared on the golden-white holy dragon's white as jade body. The black spot began spreading out in a few seconds, as though its sacred white body was tainted with a blackness that suffused an evil aura. It was like a drop of black ink dripping onto a snow-white piece of calligraphy paper, immediately spreading across the entire piece of paper.

“Roar! Roar! Roar...!”

The golden-white holy dragon's body suddenly began twitching in mid air. While tossing and turning, it let out an angry bellow.

“What's wrong!?”

Shi Xiaobai was nearly flung away as he hurriedly grabbed the black dragon scale.

Beneath the high wall, Mos was gasping. Having the white beam of light make contact with his wing, a holy power had been injected into his body, nearly burning all of his entrails.

Mos looked up at the golden-white holy dragon, his scarlet eyes filled with hate and anger. When the dragon issued out its scream while its body was dyed by a layer of blackness, he let out a few cold sneers.

“The master’s curse has been triggered. That darn holy dragon and human, This Demon will definitely tear you apart.”

Mos flapped his left wing and struggled to fly towards the high wall.

Hisith had previously placed a triggered curse on the golden-white holy dragon’s body and at this moment, it had finally activated, dealing tremendous damage to the golden-white holy dragon.

If it was still in its weak state while being imprisoned by the S-class restraining array, the golden-white holy dragon would probably die due to the additional damage.

But at this moment, the golden-white holy dragon was free and angry. Stimulated by “High Frequency Vibrokinesis”, its body had received a short-term recovery.

At this moment, it was filled with power!

“Roar!”

The dragon’s roar resounded as a holy white beam of light fell

from the sky, enveloping the golden-white holy dragon's body. The corrupted black color began to evaporate into a black mist, separating itself from the dragon's body.

Its body that had been dyed black had slowly recovered its sacred snow-white color.

At this moment, far into the distance, a dense blackness could be seen, as though a rolling black haze was sweeping towards them.

Shi Xiaobai had just heaved a sigh of relief, but when he saw the black haze, his scalp began to tingle.

It was a large uncountable mass of giant black bats, with a ugly calamity fiend sitting on each bat.

These bat riders were astounding in number, and their stance looked extremely threatening. They were like black sea waves surging over in the middle of the sky!

“Kill!”

A hissing roar coming from the black haze reverberated through the world. Numerous iron spears were thrown from the bat riders' hands in an attempt to kill the dragon!

The iron spears that exuded cold beams of light blotted out the sky, as they began to envelop the dragon.

“Roar!”

The dragon raised its head to roar as it suddenly stretched out its four dragon claws.

A humongous translucent barrier covered its entire body!

“Peng! Peng! Peng...”

When the iron spears struck the barrier, ear-splitting collision sounds boomed. As they rebounded and fell to the ground, more spears would strike the barrier.

Slowly, cracks began to appear on the barrier.

The translucent barrier could not hold on much longer!

Chapter 145: What You Said Makes A Lot Of Sense

The thrown iron spears that filled the sky struck the translucent barrier relentlessly, the barrier was the brink of shattering.

“Roar!”

The golden-white dragon issued another dragon roar as the protective barrier was coated with a new perfect layer of “shield film”.

The dragon’s roar was filled with fatigue.

After bearing the agony of the curse, it had consumed a great deal of power to barely heal itself. At this moment, resisting such a large scale iron spear attack was beginning to take its toll on the golden-white holy dragon. Its body had been forcefully reinvigorated by “High Frequency Vibrokinesis”, but it could no longer repress the fatigue that was beginning to overwhelm it.

The golden-white holy dragon looked at the dense horde of bat riders and let out another angry nellow. It turned around and flapped its golden wings and flew in another direction.

With a disadvantageous situation, they had to escape!

Mos was currently using his only wing to fly in mid air. Kicking a

calamity fiend, he sat on a bat and angrily thundered, “Chase!”

The bar riders responded in unison as their voices reverberated throughout the world in an ear-splitting manner.

“Kill!”

In the sky, the gigantic golden-white dragon was flying forward, while large numbers of bat riders were chasing from behind. At that moment, terrifying howls sounded from the lands beneath them.

...

...

In Hisith’s office.

Hisith was playing with a poker card with a gloomy face.

The red blob of light was issuing a schadenfreudian laugh. “This Seat was filled with anticipation to watch an interesting game. My pants were already down, and all you show This Seat is this?”

Hisith’s expression turned stiff as he said in a heavy tone, “Shi Xiaobai’s ‘superpower’ indeed took This King by surprise. It has slightly disrupted This King’s plans.”

“Slightly disrupted?” The red blob of light said with a teasing tone, “Why does This Seat think that your entire plan has been seen through by this human? From the beginning to the end, he has just been playing you for a fool. Be it that bottle of red wine, or saving the holy dragon, This Seat has a feeling that everything was within his plans.”

The corner of Hisith’s mouth twitched as he sneered, “It was just sheer luck. The game has only just begun. He is now in an inescapable situation.”

“How long can the golden-white holy dragon last with its temporary restoration of power? Just healing the damage caused by that triggered curse is enough to put it in a weak state. It will not be able to fly sooner or later. When the time comes, This King’s bat riders horde would tear them to pieces.”

“Furthermore, that is This King’s Underworld. This King would not open the door to the Underworld, so how is it possible for them to escape? It’s just a last-ditch struggle.”

Hisith forcefully analyzed the situation and looked at the red blob of light before concluding with a sneer, “So This King will definitely be the ultimate victor in this game.”

“What you said makes a lot of sense.”

The red blob of light laughed strangely before saying, “This Seat actually has the feeling of laughing. Since you have the absolute advantage right from the beginning of the game, and you have

already removed all possible chances of defeat, what is the point to victory in this game? This Seat remembers that what you pursue is not the game's ending but to enjoy the game's process. Hisith, you have changed."

Hisith's breathing stagnated as he looked at the blob of red light angrily before saying coldly, "What are you trying to express?"

The red blob of light gave a disdainful laugh and said, "Your will has been shaken. This Seat advises you to personally kill those two puny people immediately, so as to avoid any unforeseen circumstances."

Upon hearing this, a hint of a struggle flashed in Hisith's eyes. Moments later, he said in an affirmative tone, "There will not be any unforeseen circumstances. Even without This King doing anything, they are destined to die!"

...

...

In the Underworld.

After the chase lasted for several minutes, the golden-white holy dragon gradually began to feel exhausted. The exhaustion that it had forcefully repressed overwhelmed its entire body as the speed at which it flew became slower and slower. The large distance between them and the bat riders horde was slowly reducing with

time.

The bat riders horde would occasionally send a deluge of iron spears, and whenever that happened, the golden-white holy dragon would produce a gigantic barrier to defend. Its energy was constantly being used up, nearly to the point of drying up.

Shi Xiaobai, who was sitting on the dragon's neck, knew that he could not sit there and be a quiet adonis. He slowly stood up and pulled out the dark blue sword from his chest.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes focused at the sweeping black swarm and raised the sword forward.

A strong wind blew Shi Xiaobai's hair and clothes high up as Shi Xiaobai slashed out with an angry roar!

After the sword was done slashing, another slash was made!

Slash! Slash! Slash! Slash...

Shi Xiaobai brandished the sword in all directions, and within a few seconds, he sent out dozens of slashes in mid air!

Shi Xiaobai's actions fell into Mos' eyes, causing him to nearly burst out laughing.

As Shi Xiaobai had not grasped any sword techniques, the way

the dozens of slashes he produced was without any form. It was like waving a tree branch randomly. Furthermore, by slashing the sword in the air in that manner, not a single sword beam was produced!

Even with sword beams, they would instantly dissipate in the tumultuous winds.

These dozens of slashes were destined to hit nothing.

“Laughable, truly laughable. Do you actually plan on using your foolishness to scare us away?” Mos sneered.

“Ah! Ah! Ah...”

At this moment, loud screams sounded from the bat riders horde!

Mos turned his head in disbelief as he saw dense swaths of bat riders appear to suddenly slam into a zone that was constantly quaking. They began to tremble involuntarily.

While trembling, hundreds of bat riders crashed into the bat riders behind them, resulting in many to fall down the sky screaming.

“This is a superpower!”

Mos was alarmed as worry and killing intent flashed in his eyes.

He immediately ordered for the bat beneath him to decelerate. In contrast with him originally leading the charge, he slowly went into the middle of the group.

Fuck, this human is unscientific. It's best to let his minions test out any weird moves first!

...

After Shi Xiaobai was done producing the dozens of slashes, he lowered his sword in a high-spirited manner. However, his eyebrows frowned very quickly, as though he had encountered a difficulty.

“This sword...”

“What should this sword's name be called...?”

“This King's mighty strike should be given a mighty and domineering name. This is such a headache...”

Shi Xiaobai rubbed his chin as he began to ruminate over it.

The golden-white holy dragon gave a helpless roar beneath him. The roar was filled with fatigue, it could no longer hold on any further.

Shi Xiaobai clearly sensed the weakness of the golden-white holy

dragon's body. Looking up at the dense horde of bat riders, killing hundreds of bat riders through the use of High Frequency Vibrokinesis by brandishing his sword, was just a tip of the iceberg, considering the fact that he was up against tens of thousands of bat riders.

“It looks like, This King must use that move and just hope that... Violent Girl can endure this move!”

A trace of hesitation flashed in Shi Xiaobai's eyes as his eyes turned firm!

He did not plan on using this move to begin with, but at this point in time, he couldn't not use it!

As Shi Xiaobai grasped the dark blue sword with both hands, the sword suddenly changed into a dark blue blob of light. Shi Xiaobai's hands reached into the blob of light and began kneading it.

Moments later, the blob of light dispersed, leaving behind only a dark blue punching glove!

Shi Xiaobai grinned and wore the punching glove on his right hand. With his left hand grabbing the black dragon scale to stabilize his body, he bent his knees slightly and clenched his right hand into a fist. Using an extremely slow speed, he hit it against the strong winds towards the dense black mist!

Chapter 146: Invincibility Is Such Loneliness

Steel City, residential area in the southern zone, Riko's apartment.

Right after Riko returned home, she immediately sprang into bed and buried her head into her pillow.

She was very tired, a tiredness that came from the mind.

She had the constant feeling of being ambiguously touched, giving her great embarrassment and stress. But every time she thought of the expression Shi Xiaobai had before he left, she had a sense of foreboding. She was afraid that forcefully taking back her powers would result in disastrous consequences; hence, she kept forcefully suppressing the resistance in her heart.

That feeling felt like she was being hugged tightly by Shi Xiaobai. She was embarrassed and stressed over such intimate contact, but she also could not bear to push him directly away.

“Darn you Shi Xiaobai, how much did I owe you in my previous life!?”

Riko hugged her pillow and closed her eyes as she rolled around in bed.

At this moment, a strange feeling suffused from her arm, as though she had been gently pinched by someone.

“Ah!”

Riko screamed in alarm, but immediately, her thighs, arms, chest, hips and every part of her body had the feeling of being kneaded.

“Shi! Xiao! Bai!”

Riko’s face immediately blushed as she shouted the three syllables while gritting her teeth, nearly having gone wild.

Thankfully, that kneading feeling only lasted for about ten seconds before it came to an end

Riko’s forehead was covered in sweat as her eyes were slightly red. Her face was as red as an apple, while she was short of breath.

“When you return, I will definitely kill you!”

Riko roared angrily, as she got off the bed to rummage through her wardrobe for a piece of clothing.

She needed to take a bath to calm down!

..

..

Shi Xiaobai was brewing a tremendous attack. He had accumulated power in his Turtle-speed Divine Punch for nearly two minutes!

And this punch was not just an ordinary Turtle-speed Divine Punch, because his right fist was wearing a superpower punching glove that possessed the power of “High Frequency Vibrokinesis”!

In fact, this was a method Shi Xiaobai suddenly realized after numerous experiments with Riko. Every time he pulled out the dark blue sword, he sensed that the sword was actually just energy in its simplest form of existence.

He could manipulate this power to its origins as a “blob of light” to store in his body. He could also change the power into any shape he liked.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not tell this matter to Riko, firstly, because Riko did not ask, and secondly, his intuition told him that he was not to mention it.

What was the feeling after Shi Xiaobai merged the “blob of light” into his body?

It was probably the feeling of hugging Riko tightly in his arms.

When Shi Xiaobai transformed the “blob of light”, what was the

feeling when he reached his hand out to knead the power into a shape?

It was probably the feeling of kneading Riko's body from top to bottom.

For Shi Xiaobai...this did not give him any special feelings.

It was probably just softness and nice to the touch, warm as though he was hugging a warm water bottle.

But for Riko...

When Shi Xiaobai recalled how Riko would be infuriated when he touched her chest, he wisely understood that this might be a problem.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai did not plan on using this move, but now, he was forced to use it!

Riko's heart naturally produced a strong resistance, but she finally managed to repress it.

For this, Shi Xiaobai felt touched.

“It's not easy on Violent Girl. This King should take some time to learn the ‘Massage Technique of God’.”

In order to repay Riko, Shi Xiaobai felt that he needed to have better skills when kneading the blob of light!

..

The golden-white holy dragon's flying speed became slower and slower, but every time its pursuers closed the distance, it would forcefully squeeze energy out from its body to open up a gap again. In their relentless pursuit, the dense horde of bat riders would occasionally send out a rain of iron spears, and every time, it drained a bit of its energy that it no longer had much left.

Mos sneered.

In less than three minutes, the golden-white holy dragon would definitely be depleted of its energy. When that happened, the two bastards would be free for the slaughter!

Mos glanced at Shi Xiaobai and found it extremely ridiculous.

Three minutes ago, Shi Xiaobai had raised his fist.

Three minutes later, his punch was actually still not completed.

Was he here to be a fucking comedian?

Mos laughed in a stiff manner before he sighed. Immediately, he urged the giant bat beneath him to slow down, allowing him to fall

to the back of the horde.

Fuck, there's this nagging feeling that this punch would be very dangerous.

Mommy once said, when outside, safety first.

Mos always found this sentence very reasonable.

..

And it had to be said that Mos had made the right choice.

This punch had accumulated strength for nearly three minutes, to the point of nearly crippling Shi Xiaobai's entire arm. It had also increased Shi Xiaobai's right arm's defense value straight to "12"; furthermore, this punch had the power of "High Frequency Vibrokinesis"!

And at this moment, this punch had finally come to an end. It was like a turtle that had finished crawling its entire lifespan.

Shi Xiaobai's arm was fully extended at this moment!

His punch gently hit the air!

"Heaven! Collapsing! Earth! Shattering! Turtle! Empyrean!

Punch!”

Shi Xiaobai’s “Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch” smashed into the dark world!

At that moment, the sky broke apart!

The dark blue sky split apart in a gigantic black fissure from this one punch!

The bat riders who were in close pursuit did not manage to dodge in time. As they slammed into the black fissure, they were instantly minced by the spatial turbulence. The gigantic black fissure was like a gigantic meat grinder!

“Ah! Ah! Ah...”

Screams echoed throughout the sky as large swaths of bat riders transformed into a rain of blood and meat.

The dense black bat mist tore apart from the middle.

Mos, who was hiding right at the back, was bewildered. In his panic, he hurriedly urged the bat to fly downwards, narrowly dodging the gigantic black fissure. If he had not hidden at the back of the pack, this punch would have directly minced him to pieces!

“%!#@%#%#%#...”

Mos used his hometown's language to curse angrily.

A scum at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm had managed to use a single punch to kill more than ten thousand bat riders. What sort of fucking heavenly principle was this!?

The golden-white holy dragon also turned its head to watch the stunning scene and immediately gaped its mouth. It let out an angry roar. It didn't want to be a dragon in its next life, it wanted to be Shi Xiaobai.

After Shi Xiaobai's punch, the a third of the black swath of bat riders was gone.

On the golden-white holy dragon's back, Shi Xiaobai slowly retracted his fist and softly sighed.

“Invincibility is such...such loneliness.”

Shi Xiaobai slowly took off the punching glove.

“Invincibility is such...such emptiness.”

Shi Xiaobai held the punching glove with both hands.

“Standing alone at the pinnacle, the cold breeze constantly blows.”

The punching glove transformed into a purplish-blue blob of light.

“Who can comprehend the loneliness of This King.”

Shi Xiaobai’s profound gaze looked at the horde of bat riders that was still pursuing them like a dark cloud. His eyes burned with firm resolution.

This time, he will knead out a...

What should he knead?

“I’ll knead a bazooka.”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai inserted his two hands into the purplish-blue blob of light.

..

Far in another world, Riko was lying in a hot bathtub while taking a warm bath when she suddenly felt a chill arise in her body. A strong sense of foreboding overwhelmed her!

..

Chapter 147: Able To Posture Even While Not Being Awesome

If you were a babe, imagine yourself having a warm bath. Your whole body is feeling nice and warm as you close your eyes comfortably, you cannot help but hum a song. Suddenly, an invisible hand begins kneading your body. Oh, that's not right, it's a constant kneading of every spot of your body in a wanton manner. What sort of feeling would that be?

Even if you were not a babe, but a male, or a transvestite, or a hermaphrodite, or a cross-dresser, try imagining the paragraph above, and imagine what sort of feelings you would have.

Riko only had one feeling—This is it!

Riko endured it for five seconds until Shi Xiaobai began making poking motions while creating his bazooka. Finally, she could not endure it any further and stared widely and resisted wildly.

As her inner heart resisted, her power was gradually recalled back, as Riko exhaled with lingering fear.

She nearly felt that her chest had been poked through, but the illusion felt too real. [1](#)

“Hmph, I’ve done my best!”

Riko grunted but she could not help but frown gently.

She was still very worried for Shi Xiaobai. She did not know if forcefully withdrawing her powers would impact Shi Xiaobai, but she hoped that nothing bad would happen.

It was all the fault of that poking. Thankfully, the poking spot was still considered an admissible area. If it was a certain spot, this novel would probably be 404-ed due to anti-pornographic laws.

...

...

Shi Xiaobai was enjoying his time constructing a bazooka, and once it was completed, he could produce a “Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Bazooka”. When that happened, he could destroy a large number of bat riders with a single blast. It would definitely feel very cool and good.

However, just as Shi Xiaobai was forming the bazooka’s barrel, he had instinctively reached out his hand to bore a hole, forming the barrel by poking, but he immediately met with Riko’s strong resistance.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai could still use his “power of conquest” to forcefully detain Riko’s power, and be able to control it for a short period of time.

But Shi Xiaobai apparently did not do so, because he was a person who knew his own limitations!

“This King’s massage technique is still inadequate at conquering Violent Girl.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed helplessly. It made him more determined to self-learn the “Massage Technique of God”. To conquer a person’s soul, he had to first conquer the person’s body!

Shi Xiaobai looked up to see the bat riders dozens of meters away. Those bat riders were still trembling in fear, lacking the courage to fly too fast. They were even deliberately spread out instead of being too densely concentrated. Clearly, they were afraid of Shi Xiaobai using that terrifying technique once again. That “Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch” left deep mental scars in them.

However, Shi Xiaobai had already lost Riko’s power, so he was unable to produce “High Frequency Vibrokinesis” again. And his offensive methods were only limited to “Pig Slaughtering Knife” and “Turtle-speed Divine Punch”, two melee offensive skills.

This was fucking awkward.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and raised his fist once again.

“Heaven! Collapsing! Earth! Shattering...”

Shi Xiaobai did not use Turtle-speed Divine Punch this time because his right hand could no longer withstand the burden of Turtle-speed Divine Punch again.

However, this punch of Shi Xiaobai looked no different from Turtle-speed Divine Punch.

It was as slow as a turtle's crawl, and looked soft and seemed to be lacking in strength.

When Mos saw Shi Xiaobai's actions and heard Shi Xiaobai loudly pronounce those few words, he immediately shouted at the bat riders, "Disperse, hurry up and disperse!"

The bat riders immediately screamed as they plunged downwards, instantly scattering like loose sand.

Upon seeing this, a sneer suffused on Shi Xiaobai's lips.

"This King is awesome when truly awesome, and can posture even when not being awesome!"

...

...

After several minutes, Mos and company realized something was amiss. This was because Shi Xiaobai's act of "Heaven Collapsing

Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch” had taken too long!

“This kid can only use it once!”

Mos’ eyes lit up. If such an exaggerated technique could be used continuously at no cost, it would have been too heaven-defying. This bastard must have been acting!

Mos immediately howled at the bat riders, “Go on up! Tear them apart!”

“Kill!”

The bat riders roared. They were already long incensed.

This human must die!

Shi Xiaobai clicked his tongue and sat down helplessly. There was no other way. At this moment, he truly had nothing he could do to the horde of bat riders. He could only silently be an adonis.

At this moment, deep in Shi Xiaobai’s heart, he suddenly heard a call.

“Save...Save...Save...”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes immediately lit up. This call came from that

rusted black sword!

He immediately recalled the apocalyptic heaven collapsing and earth shattering scene after he pulled the black sword out. That was literally a heaven collapsing and earth shattering scene, even one of the moons exploded.

Without any doubt, if he were to pull that sword out, this world would very likely be destroyed.

Then...

“This King remembers that the bastard, Sisi, said that this was his Underworld?”

If it's Hisith's Underworld...

Then...

It has to be destroyed!

Shi Xiaobai grinned and stood up in high spirits. Looking at the horde of bat riders that were closing in on him, he shouted loudly, “Tremble! And be filled with despair! Foolish bats, your doom is about to befall!”

...

When Mos heard Shi Xiaobai's "arrogant speech", he was infuriated. Looking at the increasingly tired and weakened golden-white holy dragon and how the distance was constantly shortening, he was immediately filled with anticipation.

The moment of him slaughtering Shi Xiaobai was finally about to come!

"Keep on laughing, in a while, you will not even be able to cry."

Mos sneered in his heart. He was unable to endure thirst of abusing Shi Xiaobai.

At this moment, Mos suddenly realized the golden-white holy dragon was plummeting straight down. Immediately, his eyes lit up and he roared, "The holy dragon can't hold on further! Quick, chase!"

All the bat riders immediately changed directions and charged towards the ground.

This pursuit was finally coming to an end!

Suddenly Mos' pupils violently contracted because he had been focusing on Shi Xiaobai's actions all this while. He was aghast to realize that Shi Xiaobai ran straight in a particular direction after he landed on the ground, and in that direction, there was a black broadsword embedded in the ground.

“This bastard is thinking of pulling out the World Suppression Sword!?”

After feeling alarmed momentarily, he immediately found it laughable.

“Just making a last-ditch struggle.”

The World Suppression Sword appeared not long after this “Underworld” was born. Despite the there being numerous changes in Underworld Kings over the countless years, there had never been a person who managed to pull it out.

Legends said that if the World Suppression Sword was pulled out, the “Underworld” would usher in a true apocalypse!

More than a thousand bat riders were already in place, as they were about to surround the golden-white holy dragon and Shi Xiaobai.

“Your end is here, you hateful human,” Mos sneered and said.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai gently pulled out the World Suppression Sword from the ground.

Chapter 148: Cherish Life, Stay Clear From Shi Xiaobai

At the moment Shi Xiaobai pulled out the black broadsword, all the Underworld bats let out a shrill scream simultaneously! Simultaneously, the lands suddenly began to quake violently. The dark purple sky began to melt like an oil painting, and one of the three scarlet moons began to vibrate like a Christmas ball ornament.

Deafening sounds sounded from every corner of the black lands. Roars, hisses, screams that were filled with fear, madness and anger...

As the tens of thousands of flying bats began to scream at this moment, they began to plummet to the ground while flinching in great pain.

“Quick stick the sword back!” Mos gave a horrified scream.

The legends were true! Once the World Suppression Sword was pulled out, the apocalypse of the “Underworld” would really befall?

Why was this human able to pull the World Suppression Sword out!?

Mos’ eyes were filled with anger and fear as he flapped his left wing and abruptly charged at Shi Xiaobai.

“Roar!”

The golden-white holy dragon turned its head and glanced at Mos. A holy stream of light shot out as Mos immediately retreated with an angry curse.

“Quick stick the sword back!” Mos roared angrily once again. The calamity fiends had already jumped off the backs of the convulsing bats, and were beginning to surround the duo with surging killing intent.

“There is no way for you to escape. Quick stick the World Suppression Sword back, or else...”

Mos’ angry and anxious words came to an abrupt halt because the golden-white holy dragon had already thrown Shi Xiaobai back onto its neck once again. With a flap of its wings, it had flown back into the sky.

Mos surveyed his surroundings and he realized that all the bats were convulsing and crying on the ground. They did not react no matter how much the calamity fiends beat or scolded them. If they were unable to ride the bats, this bunch of low-level calamity fiends were unable to travel the skies.

The golden-white holy dragon turned its head and spat out a holy stream of light at Mos, making him retreat more than a dozen steps back in fear. At the same time, the golden-white holy dragon was working hard at flapping its wings towards the “melting” sky.

Soon, it disappeared in the distant horizon.

They escaped just like that?

They escaped in such a fucking simple way?

Mos' face turned livid. The only who could pursue them through flying was him, but...

Mos was reminded of the holy power that was utterly terrifying for him and Shi Xiaobai, who would always abruptly give him a fright. He turned around and flew away. The Underworld was about to be destroyed and probably his master, Hisith, would personally do something. The best choice for him now was to hurry to the exit and wait there, just in case.

At this moment, a stunning voice filled with sinful desires roared from under the constantly rupturing grounds.

“Food...food...food...”

Immediately, Mos felt infinite horror, but his body had turned stiff, preventing him from even moving a muscle. The bats were still convulsing and screaming in pain, while all the muddled calamity fiends could sense a fear that came right from the bottom of their hearts. They screamed in fear, but were unable to move.

“Boom!”

At this moment, the second scarlet moon in the sky exploded. The dark purple sky was still melting like an oil painting, and more than half the sky had turned into a cold grayness. Bolts of black lightning began to appear in the gray sky, producing loud thunder that seemed to resound endlessly.

The fissures in the ground became larger and larger as hundreds of bats and calamity fiends fell into the abyss.

A small figure suddenly floated out from the dark abyss.

The figure was in the shape of a human, just shrunk down ten times in size. Black light suffused and twirled around it, preventing one from seeing its face. It was unknown if it was man or woman. One could not tell if it was even human. Only its body shape resembled a human.

This tiny black-lit person was floating slowly as it sucked up all the calamity fiends and bats on the ground!

“Food!”

The tiny black-lit person slowly opened its mouth as the calamity fiends and bats let out heart-wrenching howls, but they were unable to put up any resistance. They instantly flew towards the tiny black-lit person.

A strange scene happened as the calamity fiends and bats were

pulled before the tiny black-lit person. Their bodies began to suddenly contort and twirl constantly, as they slowly became tiny black dots. Following that, they were sucked into the tiny black-lit person's open mouth.

All of this happened in an instant as countless calamity fiends and bats twirled and contorted, becoming tiny black dots in an instant. They were sucked one after another by the tiny black-lit person into its mouth.

“No, why did things turn out this way!” Mos screamed in horror. This was because he was unable to resist the tiny black-lit person's suction. As he watched the calamity fiends and bats being sucked in one by one, despair seemed to head right at him.

“No!!”

At this moment, if Mos was given a chance to redo things. If, he possessed the system of “Make your choice, Calamity fiend”, then, he would have definitely killed Shi Xiaobai right from the beginning. Even if he had failed killing him, he would also have run far away, staying far away from this hateful human.

Cherish life, stay clear of Shi Xiaobai!

But everything was too late.

Nothing could be done over again.

At fifth place out of the Underworld King's seven servants, having finally ushered in a "blissful" life after the first four servants were destroyed by Kali, it was unfortunate that this was the moment the curtain fell.

"Ah!"

Mos screamed as he distorted into a tiny black dot. He was sucked into the tiny black-lit person's mouth along with tens of thousands of bats and calamity fiends.

In moments, all the bats and calamity fiends had completely disappeared!

The tiny black-lit person's body seemed to increase a bit in size. It appeared to go from 10% of a human's size to 11%.

"Food...food..."

The tiny black-lit person did not seem satiated as it opened its mouth widely once again as large swaths of the ruptured land were thrown up and sucked into darkness!

Moments later, in a radius of ten kilometers, there was not a bit of land, just darkness, endless darkness.

The tiny black-lit person had grown in size once again, but it was not obvious. It suddenly turned and faced the shrouded gray sky, and the only remaining scarlet moon was shaking and swelling up,

as though it would burst at any moment.

“Food...”

The tiny black-lit person opened its mouth while facing the scarlet moon.

The scarlet moon suddenly vibrated violently as though it was resisting against something, but eventually it failed and plummeted to the ground. As the scarlet moon approached the ground, its large surface area covered more than half the swath of darkness. The darkness species that were originally trembling in fear in the Underworld lands all expressed complete despair at this moment.

As the scarlet moon was about to strike the ground, it began shrinking, shrinking, shrinking...till it shrunk to the size of a tiny black dot and it was sucked into the tiny black-lit person's mouth!

The tiny black-lit person's body increased a tiny bit once again, but it was still not very obvious.

“Food...”

The tiny black-lit person's unsatisfied desires were expressed in its shout once again. It surveyed its surroundings, as though it was considering which direction had more food.

“Food!”

The tiny black-lit person suddenly let out an anxious voice, as though it had discovered a treasure and could not wait any further.

It floated towards a particular direction at a rapid pace. As it moved, the ground began to rupture and rise up before being sucked into the tiny black-lit person's mouth, turning to endless darkness.

And at this moment, where the tiny black-lit person was heading happened to be the direction Shi Xiaobai and the golden-white holy dragon were flying towards!

Chapter 149: Don't Stick It Back

When Shi Xiaobai pulled out the World Suppression Sword, Hisith's expression changed drastically as the red blob of light violently trembled once.

The red blob of light said in a panicked and anxious voice, "Quick stop him!"

Hisith naturally realized the gravity of the situation.

There were three Underworlds, each one used to contain all the dead spirits and any wandering soul that lacked any form of consciousness; however, only the "Underworld" that he governed had a World Suppression Sword.

The third Overlord had once told him when he inherited the position of Underworld King that the "Underworld" he governed was previously an abandoned ground which was later discovered by the "Abyss" and then made into an "Underworld".

This World Suppression Sword had also existed in this "Underworld" before the "Abyss" came. According to the seers of the Abyss, if the World Suppression Sword was ever pulled out, then the "Underworld" would be annihilated, even to the point of bringing about the apocalypse to the human world.

Hisith did not dare delay any further. He immediately prepared to open the door leading to the Underworld in order to rush there

and personally kill Shi Xiaobai and the golden-white holy dragon, sticking the World Suppression Sword back in its place as well.

However, before Hisith could finish unfolding his poker cards, a beam of light suddenly appeared, a purple-haired girl dressed in a black gothic dress walking out of it.

“It’s time to end this here before you completely infuriate me.”

Kali walked out of the light and into the office. Her eyes exhibited a hint of helplessness. In order to not interfere with Shi Xiaobai’s life and destiny, she had exercised a great deal of restraint by not helping him. However, Shi Xiaobai was able to stir up huge trouble every single time, without fail. Every time, he would challenge something leagues ahead of him, usually something many levels above him.

Last time, it was just a tiny puppet from a terrorist organization.

This time, it was the “Abyss” and an Underworld King.

Shi Xiaobai’s ability to stir trouble was truly unmatched.

However, when it came to Kali, be it the Church of Virtuality, or the “Abyss”, they were essentially no different. They were all just...a bunch of weaklings.

With the situation developing to this point, even if she did not know the cause and effect of the situation, Kali knew that she

could no longer sit back and do nothing. If Hisith were to personally make his move, it would be impossible for Shi Xiaobai to withstand him. She would still have to intervene when that time came.

Hence, she decided that she might as well appear now and settle the situation without Shi Xiaobai knowing.

Kali had truly gone to great lengths for her little boyfriend.

Upon hearing Kali's words, Hisith's expression changed. Although he was unsure of the outcome if he completely infuriated her, he could not help but have a strong sense of foreboding. He also felt lucky that he had not let things go too far.

However, Hisith could not care about this at the moment. His eyes flickered. If the "Underworld" were to be destroyed, then it would be just a small matter of losing the title of Underworld King; however, if the "Abyss" blamed him for its destruction, then it would be quite the serious matter. Regardless of anything, he had to rush to the "Underworld" as soon as possible.

"I will definitely not make things difficult for Shi Xiaobai. I just wish for him to place the 'World Suppression Sword' back. If this goes on, the 'Underworld' will probably be destroyed. I hope you can make an exception."

Hisith decided to reason with Kali.

“What has the Underworld’s destruction got anything to do with me?” Kali sneered.

Although currently, Shi Xiaobai had yet to come to harm, and although Hisith had not completely infuriated her, Hisith had made an unforgivable mistake by ignoring her tiny warning.

Since she had now come out, there was no way this matter could be settled wishy-washily. She was only considering how she would punish Hisith.

Seeing that Kali had no intentions of being reasonable, Hisith could only stiffly look at the red blob of light.

The red blob of light had been waiting for just this moment. The moment Hisith pleaded for his help would be the moment he could posture.

“Pixie, do you know just who This Seat is?”

The red blob of light chuckled in its mind. It believed that once the words “Abyss Ghost King” were mentioned, the pixie in front of him would have a great change in expression, revealing expressions of hesitation and worry. No one in this world dared to offend it, not only because it was the “Abyss Ghost King”, but also because he was the third son of the Abyss’ Overlord!

My Dad is the Overlord, who dares to mess with me!?

Just as the red blob of light was about to announce its identity to Kali, the latter suddenly waved her hand, producing a black hole beside her. A large blue blob of light was suddenly thrown out of the black hole, smashing into the office's wall.

“Who is it!? Who took This Overlord...”

The large blue blob of light issued a grimacing sound after smashing into the wall. The black eyeballs on the blue blob of light swivelled around, and it was about to shout out obscenities, but immediately stopped upon the sight of Kali. It began to stammer, “It...it’s you...No...how can it be you. This...This...”

The red blob of light was alarmed and shouted, “Dad, why are you...”

The blue blob of light rolled its eyes and upon the red blob of light, it immediately understood all that had just transpired. It cursed angrily, “You evil son...what have you done? Will you only be willing to rest until you cause your dad’s death?”

Kali frowned before waving her hand and said, “Get lost. The ‘Abyss’ shall be given an additional thousand year ban. Considering that it’s still a child, I’ll spare him this one time.”

Having received amnesty, the blue blob of light immediately charged towards the red blob of light and wrapped it up completely. It then moved at an impossibly fast speed into the black hole.

Hisith's face went completely pale.

This was fucking bullshit.

Now, Hisith, who was instinctively afraid of Kali, no longer had the courage to resist.

“Speak, explain this situation clearly.”

Kali's voice was extremely cold. Although she had been paying attention to Shi Xiaobai all this while, there were certain matters that she was still unsure of. For example, the reason why Shi Xiaobai saved the golden-white holy dragon as if he had a plan, as well as the true motive of Hisith's game.

Hisith immediately found himself to be extremely lucky, thankful of the fact that Shi Xiaobai did not kill Chen Lingcun, else he would have probably had to “say goodbye” to this world.

“The situation is this. Shi Xiaobai heard that the scenery in the ‘Underworld’ was pretty good and he was planning on touring it and playing a tiny game in passing, then...”

Hisith planned to tell a story of harmonious fraternity.

Suddenly, ten poker cards flew out of Hisith's body. Card by card, they came in front of Hisith, before turning to ashes with a “poof”.

Hisith stared with widened eyes.

No! This card took him a month's time to refine it!

No! This card cost him six months!

Oh. My. God! This card needed three A Class Astral Calamity Beasts' astral cores!

Seeing the poker cards turn to ashes, Hisith felt as though he was seeing the beautiful times of the past shattering. His heart was bleeding for the cards!

“Carry on.”

Kali said in a deadpan manner.

Hisith gaped his mouth and he was somewhat speechless.

How was he to continue spinning his story?

...

...

In the Underworld.

Shi Xiaobai was in a dilemma.

The land was constantly quaking and cracking. In one hand, he was holding Chen Lingcun, who had returned to his human form, but was now unconscious. In the other, he was holding the rusty black broadsword, eyes filled with puzzlement.

“This King clearly remembers that there was a door here...”

Shi Xiaobai felt quite helpless to discover that the “Underworld Door” had disappeared. Well, it was likely closed by Hisith.

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his head as he looked up at the gray sky. He then lowered his head to glance at the quaking and cracking land, before turning to look at the black metallic broadsword in his hand.

“Forget it, it’s better to stick it back in.”

Shi Xiaobai previously believed that since he could escape the “Underworld”, he could burn his bridges. Now, however, he realized that although the bridge was on the brink of collapse, he was still on the bridge. He had no choice but to stick the sword back.

At this moment, a desperate and inarticulate voice sounded from his consciousness.

“Don’t...don’t...stick...stick...it...back...”

The inarticulate voice sounded like a little girl who had just learned to speak.

Shi Xiaobai immediately raised the black broadsword in front of him puzzledly said, “Don’t stick you back in?”

“U...Use...Use...Use...”

Shi Xiaobai asked in wonderment, “Use you?”

The black broadsword immediately quivered and let out a crisp sword hum.

At the same moment, the tiny black-lit person who was headed for Shi Xiaobai’s location suddenly shouted “food” loudly. He no longer consumed the ground along the way but began to charge forward like a black beam of light.

...

Chapter 150: An Honest Person Does Not “Play With Swords”

A sword that determined the survival of the “Underworld” which was able to communicate with a Shi Xiaobai’s consciousness and even took the initiative to ask him to use her was definitely not a simple sword even if it was entirely black and covered in rust.

Furthermore, the sword’s voice in Shi Xiaobai’s consciousness was very cute, like a six or seven year old little loli.

And most important of all, this sword even produced such a sound.

“Big...Big...Bro...Brother...”

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt uplifted. He immediately felt that the sword was a noble sword, a pure sword, a moral sword and a sword that was void of tastelessness!

However, before Shi Xiaobai could ask how he could use her, he suddenly fell into a huge crisis.

This was because the grounds around him had suddenly broke apart. The entire ground he was standing on would collapse downwards in just seconds!

At this moment, Chen Lingcun had already returned to the shape

of a human and he had fainted due to extreme weakness. So, there was no way Shi Xiaobai could go into the air!

At that close juncture, Shi Xiaobai was surprisingly clear-headed. As he carried Chen Lingcun on his shoulder, he held the black broadsword in his other hand, and began to use Crab Steps to charge forward.

As he jumped on the lands that were constantly in a state of collapse, every step he took was a matter of life and death. A wrong step or taking one step slower might result in him falling straight down the chasm.

However, Shi Xiaobai was extremely calm and did not make a single mistake. Soon, he escaped the falling zone.

However, before Shi Xiaobai could catch his breath, a bigger situation ensued. The gray sky was beginning to collapse at that moment.

Shi Xiaobai looked up and saw the gray firmament sagging downwards, and it was collapsing to the ground at a speed visible to the naked eye!

Shi Xiaobai: "..."

The sky that extended over the lands was falling down like a ceiling. No one could escape that. The whining roars from the Underworld's grounds were awash with hysterical madness and

despair.

At the same time, the tiny black-lit person came to a distance ten kilometers from Shi Xiaobai at an extremely fast speed. It was constantly spitting out the word “food” with a burning desire.

At that sudden juncture, Shi Xiaobai was inspired as he lifted the black broadsword up and stabbed it forcefully into the ground!

It was unknown if the black broadsword was too sharp or if the ground that looked extremely firm was very soft, but Shi Xiaobai had managed to effortlessly penetrate the ground deeply with the black broadsword!

The quaking lands instantly fell silent. The collapsing gray sky also stopped at that moment!

The tiny black-lit person’s figure that was charging forward came to an abrupt stop as it let out a wrenching scream before involuntarily retreating backwards, as though it had recalled the terror of it being imprisoned under the lands by that sword.

Shi Xiaobai heaved a sigh of relief. He did not expect his last ditch effort to actually succeed. Just putting the sword back into the ground made the entire Underworld “calm” down immediately.

“Big...Bro...ther...Save...Save...”

The black broadsword immediately issued a pitiful cry, as though

a cute little loli had lost her way and was asking for help.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and pulled the black broadsword out once again.

The lands immediately began to tremble violently once again as the gray sky plummeted. The tiny black-lit person who wanted to retreat but could not bear to do so shouted “food” before charging forward again.

Shi Xiaobai stuck the black broadsword into the ground in a deadpan manner once again!

The Underworld immediately “quietened” down, as the tiny black-lit person ten kilometers away gave out a horrible bellow, but with every step it retreated, it looked back three times.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly grinned and shouted, “Tremble, Underworld!”

As Shi Xiaobai shouted, he simultaneously pulled out the sword!

The tiny black-lit person greedily shouted “food” before heading straight for Shi Xiaobai again.

“Surrender, Underworld!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted once again, stabbing the broadsword back

into the ground.

The tiny black-lit person screamed out and retreated while sobbing.

Shi Xiaobai: “Tremble, Underworld!”

Shi Xiaobai: “Surrender, Underworld!”

“Tremble, Underworld!”

“Surrender, Underworld!”

“...”

Shi Xiaobai constantly pulled the sword in and out of the ground, resulting in the entire Underworld to move with his actions, up and down. Shi Xiaobai swore that this was not fun at all, after all, he got sick of it after playing it a few dozen times.

If the Underworld (Sister), which got penetrated in and out like this could speak, it would probably curse, “Fuck, there’s a fool!”

The tiny black-lit person who constantly proceeded forward and retreated backwards did so for forty-three times. Finally, at the forty-fourth time, it could no longer bear this. With a sorrowful “you win” bellow in its heart, it ran in the opposite direction.

...

Shi Xiaobai did not know that there was a terrifying tiny black-lit person suffering more than ten kilometers away because of the actions he did on a whim. It eventually left in grief and anger.

The last time Shi Xiaobai stabbed the black broadsword into the ground, he said with a sigh at the black broadsword, "This King wants to save you, but..."

With the Heavens falling and the Earth shattering, he could not save himself either.

The sword spirit in the black broadsword seemed to understand the present situation as she fell into a moment of silence before saying once again, "Use...use..."

Shi Xiaobai was startled and asked, "Oh?"

The cute loli voice immediately transmitted, "Ex...ca...li..bur!"

Shi Xiaobai could not help but stare. Excalibur? He had seen such a move!

Well, but it was in a game.

Shi Xiaobai remembered that as he just before he crossed over to this world, he had consumed the life of the character he controlled

in a game to strike out “Excalibur”, eventually, sacrificing himself with the Great Demon God. With the character in the game dying, he ended up crossing worlds.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai had a deep impression of this name.

But...

“This strike that can destroy the world is something This King would usually not use.” Shi Xiaobai said without missing a beat.

“Okay.”

The little sword spirit in the black sword was somewhat disappointed before she said with a cute voice moments later, “Heaven Collapsing...Earth Shattering...Sword..of...Rupture?

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He had indeed created a Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch himself, but for the Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Sword of Rupture, he had truly never heard of it.

Noticing how Shi Xiaobai was silent, the little sword spirit probed once again, “God Annihilating...Demon Vanquishing Pilgrim’s Sword?”

Shi Xiaobai: “...”

“Demon Slaying...Holy Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Great Sword of...Light?”

“ ... ”

“Nine Heavens...Thunderclap Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Astral...Holy Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Wind Fire Thunder Divine Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Three Thousand Waters Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Hundred Eighty Thousand Li Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Three Thousand Li Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Beginner Sword?”

“ ... ”

“You don’t even know Beginner Sword...Big Brother, you are so stupid!”

The tone made one involuntarily flash the cute image of a six or seven year old little girl pursing her lips and pretending to be angry in one’s mind.

Shi Xiaobai was rendered helpless. He could only use the Pig Slaughtering Knife, and did not know how to use a sword.

Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders. He had basically never heard of those sword techniques before. And even if he had heard them, he certainly wasn’t able to use them.

“How can an honest person like This King ‘play with swords’?”

Chapter 151: Coach, I Want To Learn Swords

Following that, the little sword spirit in the sword asked Shi Xiaobai of more than a dozen sword techniques that Shi Xiaobai had never heard of.

The little sword spirit's cute loli voice also became more and more fluid, filling itself with more and more emotion. From how she was inarticulate from the beginning, she slowly became somewhat childlike, finally having a pettishly charming tone that complained a little.

It was as though the little sword's speaking difficulties in the beginning was due to disuse after having not communicated for too long. And finally, she had slowly recovered to the innocence of a child.

However, why did a sword spirit of a sword that had existed for eons have such a childlike voice, even to the point of having the emotions of a six-or seven-year-old child?

Shi Xiaobai was slightly puzzled but did not take it to heart. He did not specifically doubt her, as from his point of view, the voice sounded very cute and righteous. As long as it was greatly different from the Arch-Cardinal, that was enough.

“Alright, This King will be looking for an exit. This King will come back and save you after finding one.”

Shi Xiaobai patted the sword hilt and turned around as he planned to leave. Clearly, he could not bring the sword along with him. Once the sword was pulled out, the sky would collapse. There was nowhere for him to hide.

“Hold on...Big Brother...Hold on...”

But the pitiful loli voice was heard once again, this time with a hint of anxiety.

Shi Xiaobai's footsteps paused.

“I have a method, a method to let Big Brother get out of here.”

A hint of hesitation seemed to lurk in the little sword spirit's voice.

Upon hearing that, Shi Xiaobai could not help but turn around and ask, “Really? This King will make things clear first, This King will not learn any sword (wretched) moves.”

As to the extent to how awesome the sword was, Shi Xiaobai was without the slightest doubt. He believed the sword definitely had a real method to allow him to leave the Underworld. However, if the method involved using “Excalibur”, Shi Xiaobai would be rendered helpless.

When the little sword spirit heard this, she fell silent before saying hesitantly moments later, “Big Brother can sign a...pact...to

become the sword's master.”

The little sword spirit appeared to be unwilling for Shi Xiaobai to use such a method, which made her sound as though she was doing it out of no other choice.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up. The words signing a blood pact perked him up. With this sword being so awesome, if he were to sign a contract making the sword his, then...learning a wretched move or two was acceptable.

Shi Xiaobai immediately asked, “What is needed to sign the pact?”

“Blood...blood.”

When the little sword spirit said the word “blood”, she sounded like a timid child and was somewhat nervous.

Shi Xiaobai appeared enlightened. What this little sword spirit must be referring to a Blood...Pact!

He had previously signed such a pact with Little Fatso.

“What's your name?”

Shi Xiaobai naturally did not have problems signing a blood pact, but he felt that it had to be more formal, hence he asked for the

sword spirit's name.

“I...don't have a name...I was in this world from the moment I was born...No one has been able to hear my voice...No one could save me...Only Big Brother could.”

The little sword spirit's voice sounded somewhat dejected, like a lonely little girl.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent upon hearing this before suddenly grinning. He said, “If that's the case, This King shall help you by giving you a name.”

Giving names was something he was pretty good at. For example, Kevin's “Blondy Narcissist”, Yang Yang's “Pleasant Goat”, Ye Jiaquan's “Steel Wall Shaking Powerful Ox”, as well as the name “Tu Dahei” he gave himself, were all masterpieces of Shi Xiaobai.

“Alright!”

The little sword spirit sounded somewhat pleasantly surprised as her voice had a tinge of anticipation.

Shi Xiaobai immediately began ruminating. Giving names was something that needed careful consideration. Many things needed to be taken into account, and it was a matter that imbued a lot of knowledge in it.

“Got it!”

After ruminating for a long time, Shi Xiaobai said contentedly, “Since you look so black...you shall be named Little Black!”

“Ah?”

The little sword spirit seemed somewhat shocked before hesitating and whispered, “But...I’m...not black at all...”

Shi Xiaobai rolled his eyes. He wanted to say, “You are the blackest sword This King has ever seen”. However, he was always more loving towards a little loli, so he said in all seriousness, “The name Little Black is very cute.”

Little sword spirit: “...”

After a few moments, the little sword spirit said grievingly, “Little Black will listen to Big Brother.”

Seeing the little sword spirit address herself as Little Black, Shi Xiaobai nodded his head with satisfaction and reached out his hand to grab the sword’s hilt. “Time to begin the pact.”

“Yea!”

Little Black’s cheerful voice resounded.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and suddenly pulled the black

broadsword up into the sky, raising it up high!

The land immediately quaked as the gray skies began collapsing. Black lightning scintillated as thunder rumbled. Howling and growling began coming from every corner of the world.

While facing the scene of doomsday, Shi Xiaobai had a solemn expression as he lifted the black broadsword high into the sky as he shouted out, “Implode reality, pulverize thy spirit. By banishing this world, comply with the blood pact, thou art serve the King, becoming This King’s sword, the holy sword that slays demons—Little Black!”

Shi Xiaobai was impassioned as he recited the pact’s words in a highly-spirited manner!

However...

Three seconds passed, but nothing had happened.

All that was in the wind was noise.

Little Black’s somewhat helpless voice squeaked, “Big Brother, you need to drip blood...”

Before Little Black finished her words, a golden beam of light suddenly fell from the sky, hitting the black sword’s edge straight on!

Little Black said in disbelief, “This...can...actually...do!?”

After the golden beam of light hit the back sword’s edge, the black sword was bathed in golden light as its black surface began to peel off, as though it was molting to reveal a bright golden blade.

Inside this golden light, Shi Xiaobai vaguely saw a fuzzy picture.

In the picture, a blond girl wearing a long dark-blue dress and silver armor was raising a sword high up with both hands. Countless dots of golden light amassed towards the sword, transforming into a gigantic golden sword image that surged towards the sky.

The blond girl used a dark blue hair band to coil her hair up. Bangs that split in the middle rolled down the two sides of her white face. Her icy-blue eyes flashed a killing intent, and she suddenly brandished her sword towards the heaven and earth while shouting something unknown!

The sword landed, and the heaven and earth that was filled with golden light exploded. Every living creature of darkness in the world was reduced to smithereens instantly by the golden light!

“So powerful.”

That was just a scene that flashed for an instant, but Shi Xiaobai was stunned by this strike. This strike may not have a world-

shaking impetus, but the radiating golden light that filled the world was able to devour the heaven and earth.

This short and fuzzy scene, as well as the stunning strike, made Shi Xiaobai suddenly have a feeling—"Coach, I want to learn swords".

At the same time, the golden beam of light that fell had slowly converged, revealing the true face of the black broadsword.

Shi Xiaobai was immediately startled. This black broadsword wasn't some black broadsword. At this moment, the sword's blade had an internal golden sheen to it, with pale golden light swirling around it. And the sword's hilt had a sacred look of pure whiteness. Holding it in his hand, it was like a warm piece of white jade.

Chapter 152: This Tests Skill

After the black broadsword pared away its black surface, its body also “slimmed down” greatly. It went from a blunt broadsword to a sharp golden sword.

As Shi Xiaobai held the sword’s jade-white hilt, his mind kept replaying that shocking scene from before. That strike from blond girl with coiled up hair like a Knight rider gave him an inexplicable impulse.

He wanted to slash out such a strike too!

This was an intense desire that went deep into his bone. He wanted to restore that strike!

Shi Xiaobai’s black eyes turned extremely stern and solemn. As he clenched the golden sword in both hands, he made an identical pose as that blond girl!

“Ha!”

Shi Xiaobai roared out loudly and slashed towards the constantly cracking lands and the plummeting firmament!

There was no golden beam that gathered together for this strike.

Nor were there any sword beams bursting out.

Nor was there the golden explosion that filled the world when the blond girl slashed it out.

This extremely simple strike did not even manage to overwhelm the howling winds.

However, after Shi Xiaobai was done slashing, he began to laugh out uncontrollably, his voice filled with joy and satisfaction.

“Wahaha...”

Shi Xiaobai looked up as he laughed, as though he had killed thousands of calamity fiends in one strike.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai also knew that his strike was a world's difference from the blond girl's strike, but just imitating the pose of the blond girl made Shi Xiaobai feel an inexplicable sense of satisfaction.

“It appears that This King has to take some time out to learn sword techniques.”

This strike had made Shi Xiaobai fall in love with swords (being wretched).

“Kacha, kacha, kacha...”

Suddenly, the sound of egg shells shattering sounded in front of him. Shi Xiaobai could not help but stare widely as he saw the space he had just slashed gradually break apart!

White light constantly suffused out of the cracking space as an ice-cold aura emanated.

The spatial fissure turned into the shape of a narrow door moments later!

“Door to the Underworld!?”

Shi Xiaobai was surprised. This strike had managed to slash open an extremely similar fissure just like the door to the Underworld formed from Hisith’s poker cards?

Shi Xiaobai immediately came round to it. So this was the method that Little Black mentioned about leaving the Underworld? A simple strike like this had managed to open up the door to the Underworld?

Or should it be said that his strike...was actually not ordinary at all?

“Little Black, see that? This King managed to use Excalibur!”

Shi Xiaobai grinned. How could a strike from him be an ordinary one? Only the name of “Excalibur” was worthy to live up to his strike, and only then, would it live up to the shocking strike from

that blond girl.

However, Little Black did not respond even after several seconds passed.

“Little Black?” Shi Xiaobai called out once again, but Little Black did not respond.

Shi Xiaobai immediately used his mind to perceive the golden sword. Ever since he signed the “blood pact”, he felt that he had a vague connection with the sword.

Moments later, Shi Xiaobai exclaimed lightly and muttered to himself, “Fell asleep?”

He felt that the breath of life in the sword appeared to be deep in slumber.

Shi Xiaobai found it somewhat regretful. Although he would not go so far as to keep shouting “Coach, I want to learn swords”, he still wanted to obtain some information from Little Black through some probing. After all, Little Black had previously listed down many sword techniques he had never heard of before.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had generated intense interest in “swords”.

Shi Xiaobai looked up at the gray sky that was about to collapse a mountain and knew he had to leave soon. Just before he entered

the “door to the Underworld”, he carried Chen Lingcun, who he had mercilessly thrown on the ground because he needed both hands to hold the sword.

At that moment, the golden sword suddenly began to shrink in Shi Xiaobai’s palm. It transformed into a golden blob of light before quickly circling around and tunneling into the back of Shi Xiaobai’s right hand.

Shi Xiaobai felt a slight pain as he raised his right hand. A unique golden pattern appeared on the back of his hand.

“Afraid of strangers?”

Shi Xiaobai sensed a resistance coming from the golden sword that had tunneled into the back of his right hand. He felt slight regret as he wanted to show this golden sword to Kali, Riko, Lingcun, Steel Ox and others, before displaying the King’s swordplay. He never expected that this golden sword was afraid of strangers, preventing him from showing it to others.

Shi Xiaobai was puzzled. Wasn’t Little Black asleep? Could another sword spirit in the golden sword be controlling the sword’s behavior? Or should it be said that Little Black was not speaking not because she was asleep?

Shi Xiaobai pondered for it for a moment before abandoning the questions which he could not immediately answer. He shook his head and while holding Chen Lingcun, he stepped through the “door to the Underworld”.

...

When Shi Xiaobai walked into the “Door to the Underworld”, a bright light suddenly bloomed as Kali walked out of the light, into the Underworld that was facing imminent collapse.

Kali had a smile in her eyes. In order to prevent Shi Xiaobai from discovering her aid for him, she had waited for Shi Xiaobai to slash out that simple strike to seamlessly open the “door to the Underworld”.

“This tests skill.”

Kali found it somewhat amusing herself. She could have opened the “door to the Underworld” earlier on, but she was again worried that Shi Xiaobai would turn suspicious. Through inference, he might guess that she was helping him behind the scenes.

Don’t fault her Shi Xiaobai for being usually silly. Back then, the intelligence he displayed in his choice to save Dan Liang and those convicts had left her a little surprised.

Kali did not want Shi Xiaobai to one day look at her as a “benefactor”. As such, she would definitely not do anything unless as a last resort.

However, this matter had left Kali with many doubts.

Shi Xiaobai's actions of saving Chen Lingcun appeared as though he was clairvoyant. His resolute and calm wisdom appeared to be methodologically carried out. It could be said that it was done "step by step", and other than failing to consider that Hisith would forcefully close the "door to the Underworld", everything else he did could be said to be perfect.

This...was not one bit like Shi Xiaobai!

And the greatest mystery came from that black sword.

As far as she knew, this sword was only a holy sword used as a sealant that activated a sealing array. It did not have a sword spirit to begin with, but a young sword spirit had been born after eons passed.

Why did this young sword spirit choose Shi Xiaobai to be the contractee?

What were those unheard of words that Shi Xiaobai said in his pact?

Why was he able to force the holy sword's spirit to recognize him as master without needing him to drip any blood?

"It appears that he has some secrets I do not know."

A smile suffused across Kali's lips. Although she was rather curious about these questions, she did not want to delve too deeply

into them. This was because she liked a Shi Xiaobai she could not fully see through.

“I have to say that I need to thank Xiaobai. If not for Xiaobai, I probably would not have discovered that the next apocalypse’s ‘Original Sin of Gluttony’ is actually hidden in such a place.”

Kali looked far into the distance. There, a tiny black-lit person was constantly devouring the lands and the dead spirits of the Underworld, causing its body to constantly become bigger.

The tiny black-lit person was one of the Seven Deadly Sins of the Original Sin of Calamity, named “Gluttony”.

...

...

After stepping through the “door to the Underworld” with Chen Lingcun in his arms, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat dumbfounded.

“Where...is this?”

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings. There were passers-by constantly walking past him, with several stalls on both sides of the road. There were a variety of stores in front and behind him, as though this was a particularly busy street.

At this moment, a red-haired beauty holding a silver-haired youth's arm walked over. The couple walked past Shi Xiaobai and the comatose Chen Lingcun. The silver-haired youth frowned slightly but he did not turn back as he continued walking forward, quickly disappearing from the crowd.

...

Chapter 153: Massage Technique Of God

In the middle of the “Underworld”, the gray firmament was in a constant plunge downwards. The tiny black-lit person was still devouring the lands and dead spirits, while its body was constantly increasing in size. After devouring what it had for unknown period of time, it had finally reached about 20% the size of a normal human.

Its suction radius was constantly expanding, while its tiny mouth that acted as a black hole had already sucked in countless dead spirits.

Kali was constantly following the tiny black-lit person from behind as she quietly studied it, her eyes flickering with a trace of hesitation.

If she had not guessed wrongly, this tiny black-lit person was one of the Seven Deadly Sins of the “Original Sin of Calamity”—“Gluttony”.

The greatest calamity for the human world—“Apocalypse” was still fraught with mysteries. Even Kali did not know everything, but there was one thing Kali was sure.

If the human world wanted to survive the fourth “Apocalypse” by paying the least possible price, it had to be able to withstand the strongest destruction of the “Original Sin of Calamity” during the “Apocalypse”.

Years ago, the World Tree and the pixies were powerless against the “Original Sin of Calamity”, and were completely annihilated within a minute.

As a result, the “Original Sin of Calamity” was an enemy Kali hated the most. Even the powerful her did not possess the sufficient confidence to kill the “Original Sin of Calamity”, she even had the thoughts of letting it be an internecine sacrifice.

Kali had to kill the “Original Sin of Calamity” regardless of the reason being to save the human world or to seek revenge for the destruction of her race.

This was the reason why she had never given her heart to anyone for ten thousand years. She had spent ten thousand years to make herself stronger, to the point of near-invincibility. However, all of that would still very likely lead to a tragic outcome.

Then, why would she make others sad over her death?

However, Shi Xiaobai changed her way of thinking.

The current her was still firm in destroying the “Original Sin of Calamity”, but she now desired to survive.

As a result, she had recently begun to make every preparation to kill the “Original Sin of Calamity”.

According to what happened in the previous three apocalypses,

the “Original Sin of Calamity” was always hidden in the human world.

In the first apocalypse, the “Original Sin of Calamity” was a weak, old, blind man.

In the second apocalypse, the “Original Sin of Calamity” was a king who ruled over half a continent.

In the third apocalypse, the “Original Sin of Calamity” was a three-year-old child.

According to Kali’s deduction, the “Original Sin of Calamity” was in the human world, and needed a period of dormancy before it could transform completely. Furthermore, each transformation only lasted for a very short period of time.

This was probably the reason why the human world was not completely destroyed despite being powerless against three “Apocalypses”.

During each apocalyptic wave, the “Original Sin of Calamity” would only survive for less than an hour, but in that short period of time, it would nearly destroy the entire world. If not for the top warriors sending themselves to their deaths to stop it, the “Original Sin of Calamity” would have long destroyed the entire human world!

As a result, Kali had been always been searching for the human

which the “Original Sin of Calamity” lay dormant in, but unfortunately, the concealment of the “Original Sin of Calamity” could be said to be perfect.

The humans that concealed the “Original Sin of Calamity” in each wave would not know that they were the “Original Sin of Calamity” before it awoken in them. The incubator was no different from normal humans. The incubator might be a beggar with broken legs who suffered all sorts of maltreatment, but might awaken the next day to become the “Original Sin of Calamity”, bringing forth the fourth apocalypse.

Kali was unable to find the “Original Sin of Calamity”, but thankfully, due to Shi Xiaobai, she had finally found one of the Seven Deadly Sins of the “Original Sin of Calamity”, “Gluttony”.

If it was said that the “Original Sin of Calamity” needed 99% of the top warriors of the human world to send themselves to death to buy for time, then the Deadly Sins were the main reason why there were few humans left after an apocalyptical wave.

The Deadly Sins would appear for a period of as long as three days. They were not as powerful as the “Original Sin of Calamity”, but they were still monsters that humans were powerless against.

These Seven Deadly Sins were separately , “Pride”, “Envy”, “Gluttony”, “Lust”, “Wrath”, “Sloth” and “Greed”.

The Deadly Sins were different from the “Original Sin of Calamity”. Their powers would drop drastically after an

apocalyptic wave before they hid themselves.

When the “Original Sin of Calamity” appeared, they would appear once again and rapidly recover their strength. For example, “Gluttony” would devour all sorts of food, while “Lust” would drain the life essence of humans...

And this “Gluttony” would only appear again when the fourth apocalyptic wave began, but due to blind chance, Shi Xiaobai had released it.

This “Gluttony” probably believed that the “Original Sin of Calamity” had appeared, which resulted in it beginning to devour the “Underworld” to restore its strength.

The exposed “Gluttony” was currently in an extremely weak state. Kali could vanquish it in minutes, ridding a latent danger for the next apocalypse.

However, Kali was currently in a dilemma.

As her true goal was the “Original Sin of Calamity”, if she did not kill “Gluttony” now, “Gluttony” might search for the human vessel of the “Original Sin of Calamity”. If that was the case, she could kill the “Original Sin of Calamity” while it was still in its cradle.

Kali struggled for a moment before making up her mind. She waved her hand at the tiny black-lit person, causing a white beam of light to bloom. Instantly, she dispersed the black light that

swirled around the tiny black-lit person.

What was revealed was a tiny human who did not have any skin, and a tangled mess of flesh and blood.

The tiny black-lit person let out a horrified scream and charged straight forward. It wailed, as though it was experiencing an immense pain. Soon, it reached the ends of the horizon.

Kali slowly retracted her hand. She did not directly destroy “Gluttony”, but left a sacred seal on it, preventing it from becoming stronger.

Her target was the “Original Sin of Calamity”, as such, she temporarily spared “Gluttony”.

She would monitor the Deadly Sin, waiting for it to one day instinctively locate the “Original Sin of Calamity”.

...

...

After Shi Xiaobai stepped out the “door to the Underworld”, he was first surprised by the busy street, but he soon calmed down. Since he had safely left the “Underworld”, it did not matter where he was sent to.

However, a voice that sounded in his mind alarmed Shi Xiaobai!

“Absolute Choice completed. Congratulations on obtaining a ‘B-level reward’—Grasped Basics of [Massage Technique of God]: By flexibly using the Massage Technique of God, you can solve every problem in the world!”

Shi Xiaobai had previously considered learning a Massage Technique of God, but who knew that the Absolute Choice system would directly award him with it. It didn’t even change the name.

However, this was a B-level reward, and all it rewarded him was a Massage Technique of God?

...

Chapter 154: Will You Feel Regret

While Shi Xiaobai was pondering, large amounts of information squeezed into his brain. All the information regarding the Massage Technique of God was forcefully crammed in his brain in seconds, allowing the “offensive skill”, Massage Technique of God, to directly reach the Grasped Basics realm.

You didn't read wrong, it's an offensive skill!

As applications of Massage Technique of God constantly flashed in Shi Xiaobai's head, he could not help but falter and say, “This is actually possible?”

After fully understanding the profound intricacies of the Massage Technique of God, Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt the informative note, “by flexibly using the Massage Technique of God, you can solve every problem in the world”, very reasonable.

There were no problems in the world that the Massage Technique of God could not solve. And if there was one, it was not the problem's problem, but the problem of how you used the Massage Technique of God!

As Shi Xiaobai felt greatly taken aback, he was also pleasantly surprised. All he could think of was to find someone to test the Massage Technique of God.

Shi Xiaobai, who was immersed in this experience, did not notice

the silver-haired youth and the red-haired girl passing him by. Only at the moment of them disappearing into the crowd did Shi Xiaobai happen to catch a glance of the silver-haired youth.

Just this glance was sufficient for Shi Xiaobai to identify that person's true identity.

“Stop!” Shi Xiaobai yelled at the top of his lungs. Gritting his teeth, he lifted Chen Lingcun and began using Crab Steps to charge into the crowd.

While passing through the crowd, with the continuous use of fake moves, he caused the densely packed crowd to open up a path for him.

Many people were given a fright by Shi Xiaobai as they panicked and bumped into others.

“Aiyah!

A few painful cries and grumbles resounded.

Shi Xiaobai did not care about this at that moment because he knew that he had to chase up, because the elder brother Chen Lingcun had always been looking for was just in front.

“Stop! Chen Lingcun is here!”

Shi Xiaobai bellowed once again, and very soon, he saw through the gap opened by the crowd the back of the silver-haired youth who had long come to a stop.

The red-haired girl beside the silver-haired youth had already turned around to look at Shi Xiaobai, her face revealing a look of surprise. However, she was just surprised at Shi Xiaobai's high attainment in his movement technique.

At the same time, she was also taken aback that the youth beside her who was usually aloof would suddenly come to a stop. Was it because of the "stop" that the youth yelled while running over?

The red-haired girl received her answer very quickly because Shi Xiaobai had already come in front of the duo, or it could be said, in front of the silver-haired youth.

The red-haired girl turned her head to glance at the silver-haired youth and was immediately startled. This was the first time she had seen such rich expressions on the silver-haired youth's face. The usually cold and calm him was revealing struggled expressions of pain.

Only when she traced the silver-haired youth's gaze that was filled with complex emotions did the red-haired girl realize that there was a silver-haired teenager being carried by Shi Xiaobai.

She was immediately enlightened. The weak presence and silver-haired looks were just too similar.

This teenager is his...

“This King’s intuition can’t be wrong. You are Chen Lingcun’s elder brother.”

Shi Xiaobai stood in front of them and said it categorically after sizing up the silver-haired youth.

The silver-haired youth did not deny it, but instead worriedly looked at the unconscious Chen Lingcun, before saying, “How’s Little Cun?”

Shi Xiaobai lowered Chen Lingcun from his shoulders and pushed him towards the silver-haired youth who caught it in response, holding Chen Lingcun in his arms.

Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders and said, “He was drained of his divine strength, and was unable to maintain his state as a mount, so he’s temporarily in a sleeping state.”

The silver-haired youth reacted after a moment of shock, before his eyes flashed with a solemn glint. He said, “Someone found out his identity?”

After hearing this, Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before nodding and said, “Don’t worry. All the problems have been resolved by This King. You just need to take good care of him. This King shall hand him over to you.”

Upon hearing this, the silver-haired youth showed a look of surprise and hesitation, as he said, "Since you know my identity, I believe Little Cun has told you a lot of things. You should understand that I cannot be with him. The moment he sees me, he will feel guilty, and when I see him..."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his mild expression immediately turned serious. With a little bit of thought, he said, "He said that the toys you gave him were very boring."

Upon hearing this, the silver-haired youth's breathing faltered as he revealed a self-mocking smile. "I know..."

"You don't."

Shi Xiaobai said with a deep voice, "You do not know that toys weren't the things that truly makes him happy, but because you were by his side, accompanying him."

The silver-haired youth's eyebrows twitched as he looked tenderly at the silver-haired teenager in his arms that he had not seen for many years. The teenager looked rather grown up now.

Shi Xiaobai seriously said, "At a most dangerous juncture, he had made a last wish with This King, he wished that This King will communicate the words "thank you" and "sorry" to you."

The silver-haired youth gaped his mouth slightly and said with a wry smile, "The person who should said sorry and thank you

should be me.”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment before using a most serious tone to say, “He said that being your younger brother was the luckiest thing in his life.”

Upon hearing this, the hand he used to hug Chen Lingcun grabbed tighter. His eyes lit up slightly before turning gloomy. “No, my existence is just misfortune to him.”

If he had not secretly left the village back then, if his identity was not discovered by that organization, if he had not revealed the secret of the golden-white holy dragon after being hypnotized, his clansmen would not have died. Chen Lingcun would also not collapse and blame himself.

His existence was a kind of misfortune.

“You are still alive, and he is also alive. This is the greatest fortune.”

Shi Xiaobai pointed his finger at Chen Lingcun and said loudly, “Think carefully. If he suddenly dies at an unknown location one day, what sort of feeling would you have?”

The silver-haired youth’s heart jumped. He could not help but wonder what his own feelings would be if his brother died alone in an unknown corner of this world.

He would probably feel great pain, a pain so painful that he would attempt to drown his sorrows in alcohol, and hope to use alcohol to temporarily numb the pain.

Shi Xiaobai said loudly once again, “Will you feel regret over every minute and second that you once missed?”

The silver-haired youth gaped his mouth and was unable to respond.

Would he regret?

Of course he would, maybe...he would even find it hard to breathe from the regret that would overwhelm him.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai said with a deep voice once again, “Do not regret only when you have lost. He needs your companionship, because you being alive is the most fortunate thing for him.”

Upon hearing this, the silver-haired youth fell silent for a few moments as he tightly hugged Chen Lingcun. He looked seriously into Shi Xiaobai’s eyes and sincerely said, “Thank you.”

Chapter 155: Let's Celebrate By Getting A Room

Seeing how the silver-haired youth had his thoughts straight, Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “He still owes This King a promise. This King will come back in the future, so take good care of him.”

In this world, Chen Lingcun had yet to address him as “King”. Shi Xiaobai wished that Chen Lingcun would sincerely address him as “Sire” the next time, and not add the darn “adorable” term before the salutation.

The silver-haired youth nodded and said, “I’m very happy that Little Cun managed to have such a friend like you. Thanks to your words, I know what to do now.”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “The boy is worth teaching, then excuse This King!”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai immediately turned and quickly entered the crowd.

The silver-haired youth was stunned but in moments, Shi Xiaobai had already disappeared into the crowd.

Shi Xiaobai had left too suddenly that he did not even have a chance to inquire of his name.

“Truly an...interesting young man.”

The corners of the silver-haired youth's lips revealed a smile.

“Phew, this fellow's bearing is too overpowering that even I did not dare butt in.”

The red-haired girl who had been quiet finally spoke, “He kept addressing himself as ‘This King’, could he be... No that's not right. His body's aura is clearly only at the Psionic Mortal Realm, how can he be one of the seven legendary Regal Dukes.”

The silver-haired youth shook his head and said, “Even if he's not one of the seven noble kings, his origins must definitely be extraordinary. Not only was he able to sense my presence in the crowd, but he was also able to ignore the snake demon aura from your body. At his age, that is quite impressive. Anyways, him calling himself ‘This King’ is definitely not because he is chuunibyou.”

The red-haired girl clicked her tongue. “Your evaluation of him is really high. Indeed, how can a teenager who is capable of delivering chicken soup for the soul to a wooden block like you be a chuunibyou teen. By the way, that younger brother of yours is rather cute and handsome. I wonder if he has a little girlfriend. If he doesn't, I'll introduce him one.”

The silver-haired youth shook his head and laughed. “Let's go. Let's celebrate by getting a room.”

“Ah?”

The red-haired girl let out a cry as her face turned red.

Was this bastard so happy?

“I’m getting a presidential suite room for my younger brother to get a good proper rest. We can drink a bit of alcohol to celebrate... celebrating my newfound meaning to life.” The silver-haired youth said.

The red-haired girl was first irritated when she heard this. She was embarrassed by the silver-haired youth’s sudden change in actions after saying those leading words. Seriously, she had been happy and embarrassed for nothing.

However, when she heard the words “meaning to life”, she immediately felt her heart turn heavy. She looked at the silver-haired youth with eyes filled with love.

What a jerk for him to keep tugging at her heartstrings.

“Let’s go and get a room!”

The red-haired girl shouted and pulled the silver-haired youth’s hands and left. When passers-by heard this, they raised their eyebrows and looked at the red-haired girl’s beautiful looks and voluptuous figure. Immediately, they sighed.

Why do you need to do this? Go ahead and get a room, but why do you need to shout so loudly for us to hear it? Don't you know that the wrath of a bachelor dog is very terrifying?

...

...

On the other side, Shi Xiaobai, who had left in a hurry, had a slightly bleak look in his eyes.

“Living is the greatest fortune.”

Shi Xiaobai muttered softly to himself as a wry smile suffused on his lips. If this sentence was the truth, he was actually not that fortunate.

Shi Xiaobai quickly left the bustling streets and after a few turns, he arrived in a quiet alley.

Shi Xiaobai quietly stood there for a moment before his lonely expression gradually returned to normal.

“Took me a while to find you. Why are you here?”

Suddenly, a soft and sweet voice sounded from behind him.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and saw that familiar black gothic dress and long purple hair.

Who else could it be but Kali?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up as he revealed a smile and said, "Why is This King here? That will entail a long explanation. It is a long story, do you want to hear it?"

Kali walked forward and leaned on the alley wall beside Shi Xiaobai and with a blink, she softly said, "As long as it's your story, I want to hear them all."

Shi Xiaobai immediately told his encounters in the "Underworld" in high spirits. He naturally did not mention the Absolute Choice, nor the two failures he had encountered prior, but instead described the story of how he saved Chen Lingcun in great detail.

In the story, he was a courageous king. Chen Lingcun was his mount, the "Dragon of Supreme Command". He saved Chen Lingcun from the forces of evil, the "Underworld", and signed a blood pact with the demon-slaying holy sword. Finally, he used "Excalibur" to forcefully open the door to the Underworld.

Shi Xiaobai even mentioned the creation of his own technique, "Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch", describing that one punch in an extremely vivid fashion.

Kali listened to him with great enjoyment. Although she had almost seen everything with her own eyes, it was also because she knew what had happened that made her find it interesting when heard from Shi Xiaobai's perspective.

Even towards a few embellishments Shi Xiaobai made, she did not fault him and instead realized that the plot could be understood in such a manner. She found it quite interesting from how it was narrated by Shi Xiaobai.

In short, Kali liked Shi Xiaobai's story a lot. This was probably what it meant by the statement that love sees no fault.

“This King returned to the human world from the door to the Underworld, but due to This King's overly-powerful existence, it caused disorder in the space-time continuum, resulting in a tiny error in the warping destination, so This King was sent here.”

Shi Xiaobai narrated his own understanding in a solemn fashion. As for being warped to the street for his chance encounter with Chen Lingcun's brother, Shi Xiaobai was also scratching his head, before he concluded that this was the “King's Luck”.

Kali was amused hearing this, but she was also relieved.

For Shi Xiaobai to be so conveniently sent to where Chen Lingcun's brother was was of course due to her “machinations”.

Suddenly, Kali felt something strange.

She turned her head and realized that Shi Xiaobai's eyes were fixated at her chest.

Kali's heart began to race as she recalled of her bold moves at Riko's apartment last night. She felt a sudden rush of embarrassment.

Why was he looking at that spot?

Could it be...

My heavens, Shi Xiaobai, you are still so young, how can you be so lustful!?

Kali rolled her eyes at Shi Xiaobai.

Only then did Shi Xiaobai come round to as he reluctantly withdrew his gaze.

The reason why he was looking at Kali's chest was naturally not because of some decadent matters.

It was because he could not suppress the desires in his heart. He wanted to give the "Massage Technique of God" he had just received a try!

As long as he used the Massage Technique of God on Kali's chest,

there was a large chance of achieving the effects of “breast enlargement”!

Cut your suspicions. Massaging for breast enlargement is just child’s play for the Massage Technique of God!

Every problem in the world could be resolved with the Massage Technique of God!

Shi Xiaobai kept having the thoughts of putting the secrets of the Massage Technique of God in his brain to practice.

And if it’s massaging for breast enlargement, Kali’s mosquito bites were clearly the best experimental subjects.

However, Shi Xiaobai recalled how Riko nearly blew up because of him accidentally touching that spot, so he immediately shelved the idea.

“This King will one day let you witness This King’s Massage Technique of God. Just you wait!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai stared at Kali’s chest once again.

“Let’s go home!”

Shi Xiaobai felt that he had many things to do. Filthy Turtle

Divine Technique, Massage Technique of God as well as his superpower were all in desperate need of development. Hence, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat anxious to return to Steel City.

However, he was taken aback after taking two steps.

Where was this?

How was This King to return?

Kali grinned and tugged Shi Xiaobai's sleeve as she pointed to herself, playfully winking at him.

Shi Xiaobai immediately remembered how Kali had brought him to Southern Gold City previously. She knew how to teleport!

Shi Xiaobai naturally reached out his hand to grab Kali's soft and somewhat cold hand.

“Let's go!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt that the biological creature known as “girlfriend” wasn't as terrifying as Comrade Yang Wei had depicted.

...

Chapter 156: Plans Of A King

Riko happened to be out when Shi Xiaobai returned to Riko's apartment with Kali. Kali stayed for a short while, but she turned flustered when she noticed how Shi Xiaobai was constantly eyeing her chest "nefariously".

Kali had always deliberately ignored her mosquito bites that had stopped developing. As she never cared about the opinions of how the opposite sex viewed her, she never had an inferiority complex.

But during the thousands of years, she would inadvertently encounter female creatures who did not know any better. They were jealous of her looks, so they could only direct their creative juices at her breasts that had stopped development. Of course, the outcome of those female creatures was typically terrible.

Kali still cared about this somewhat, especially after secretly comparing with Riko last night, she had begun to pay them more attention.

At this moment, sensing how Shi Xiaobai appeared "nefarious" to her tiny breasts, she immediately turned shy but also a little bit of joy.

Who said there was no market for flat chests. It's just a problem with your consumption habits!

However, Kali could not stand Shi Xiaobai's unadulterated gaze

at her breasts. She naturally could not coquettishly say things like “what are you looking at!” like Riko. As such, Kali found an excuse to leave the apartment.

Shi Xiaobai watched Kali as she left through the light. He slightly sighed, because he could not let it go. He could not let go of the obsession, “Divine Massage Guarantees You Big Boobs”. He truly wanted to experiment this move.

Shi Xiaobai took a long period of time to calm down. With a thought, he took out a notebook and a pen from the room.

Shi Xiaobai decided to create a detailed “Plans of a King” on how he could become stronger.

The powers he currently possessed were numerous, so it was time to tidy them up.

Firstly, his Psionic Ability realm had reached the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. According to Riko, there was no major step from the fourth to the ninth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Progression would be relatively fast, while the difference in strength between each level wasn’t considered huge.

Of course, Shi Xiaobai did not feel like there was an existence of any “major step”. For him, improving his Psionic Mortal Realm was easy and enjoyable.

Wasn’t it just Cogitation? Wasn’t that just dreaming in the day,

dreaming at night, dreaming while eating, dreaming while on the toilet, dreaming while lying down, dreaming while standing, dreaming while having his eyes close, dreaming while having his eyes open?

Shi Xiaobai was very willing to immerse himself in the Cogitation world, freely turning his fantasies into masterpieces.

After Shi Xiaobai wrote the words “Psionic Ability Cultivation”, he appended the text “commit to stepping up the development and transformation of the ‘King’s World’!”

Shi Xiaobai smiled with satisfaction.

The next line he wrote was “Crab Steps of the King”.

Regarding Crab Steps, he had already reached the Dominating Refinement realm, and it would be quite difficult for him to immediately break through to the “Crest of Perfection” realm.

As such, Shi Xiaobai believed that he could leave Crab Steps on the back burner for the time being.

Shi Xiaobai appended the words, “Inspect This King’s city boundaries by using King of Crab Steps daily”, after “Crab Steps”.

Shi Xiaobai immediately followed up with the words “Filthy Turtle Divine Technique”.

The Filthy Turtle Divine Technique's system was relatively more complex, but the cultivation method for Filthy Turtle Divine Technique was actually the simplest.

The endurance technique, "Unleaking Turtle Aura" similarly had a proficiency rating. Shi Xiaobai was still at the "Grasped Basics" level, and with an upgrade in proficiency, Shi Xiaobai would be able to more effectively inhibit more intense pain.

However, the proficiency of "Unleaking Turtle Aura" could only be improved while it was activated. That meant that Shi Xiaobai needed to constantly take damage to increase the level of "Unleaking Turtle Aura".

As for the body-tempering technique, "This Turtle Is Hardest", it was even more obvious to be a technique that needed him to receive abuse.

The cultivation technique, "This Turtle Is Hardest", did not have any proficiency level itself, but the physical defenses it increased had their level differences.

Shi Xiaobai knew that a person's body defense was divided into three major divisions, "Mortal Body", "Extraordinary Body", "Consecrated Body". Each division had ten sub-divisions.

Currently, Shi Xiaobai's physical defense was the weakest, "Mortal Body Level 1". However, after drinking Hisith's bottle of poisonous wine, his flesh and blood defense level had attained the

value of “7”. Once it reached “10”, his flesh and blood defenses would reach Mortal Body Level 2.

And with Shi Xiaobai using “Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch”, the bone defense on his right hand had directly attained the value of “12”, pushing it into Mortal Body Level 2.

As such, Shi Xiaobai’s current physical defense would be:

[Skin defense: Mortal Body Level 1 (1)]

[Flesh and Blood defense: Mortal Body Level 1 (7)]

[Bones defense: Right hand at Mortal Body Level 2 (12), rest of body at Mortal Body Level 1 (1)]

[Mental defense: Unknown]

In this world’s nine years of compulsory education, the average value of one’s physical defense had to reach an average of Mortal Body Level 2 to graduate after nine years. As such, Shi Xiaobai’s physical defense numbers were not even passable.

However, Shi Xiaobai possessed the body-tempering technique,

“This Turtle Is Hardest”, which was very moldable and fast-growing.

As long as he got beaten up...that's not right, as long as he received damage, regardless of what form it was, Shi Xiaobai's physical defense numbers would rise rapidly.

The means of improvement were much simpler and brutal than other body-tempering techniques.

The Filthy Turtle Divine Technique's third technique, “Turtle-speed Divine Punch” was equivalent to a Psionic Ability offensive skill, and similarly had proficiency levels which he was currently at “Grasped Basics”.

However, the improvement of “Turtle-speed Divine Punch” was rather difficult. Every time he used “Turtle-speed Divine Punch”, Shi Xiaobai had to rest for a long period of time, so to improve “Turtle-speed Divine Punch” quickly, he could not waste every punch.

And what it meant to not waste them was to not hit nothing. The effects that came from using “Turtle-speed Divine Punch” in battle were the best.

In summary, the improvement of Filthy Turtle Divine Technique was simple and clear—either receive damage, or inflict damage.

Pondering over it, Shi Xiaobai wrote the words “Reflect three

times a day, have you received and inflicted damage? Have you received and inflicted damage? Have you received and inflicted damage?”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and was very satisfied with his “Plans of a King”.

Quickly, Shi Xiaobai wrote the words, “Massage Technique of God”.

The Massage Technique of God had a variety of amazing applications. It was barely classified as a offensive skill because it possessed a bit of combat ability; hence, the Massage Technique of God also possessed a proficiency level.

And having just received the Massage Technique of God, Shi Xiaobai was at the “Grasped Basics” level.

And the way to improve the Massage Technique of God’s proficiency level was somewhat special. It was not simply improved by massaging a target, but would only improve if there were effects from the massage.

For example, “Divine Massage Guarantees You Big Boobs” needed to ensure that the target’s breasts were enlarged before the proficiency level of the Massage Technique of God would increase.

It could be said that to improve his proficiency in the “Massage Technique of God”, Shi Xiaobai needed to find someone with real

needs and “massage” them.

With a thought, Shi Xiaobai wrote the words “Seize every chance of using the Massage Technique of God!” after “Massage Technique of God”.

With this, Shi Xiaobai’s “Plans of a King” was basically done. As for the psionic defensive skill, “Wavelet Shield” as well as his superpower, “Power of the King”, Shi Xiaobai needed to receive damage to improve his “Filthy Turtle Divine Technique”, so Shi Xiaobai directly ignored the former. As for the latter, he temporarily was unsure of how to improve it. After all, he still knew little about his “Power of the King”.

With this, Shi Xiaobai’s “Plans of a King” were as follows.

[Psionic Ability Cultivation (Psionic Mortal Realm, Fourth Level): Commit to stepping up the development and transformation of the “King’s World”]

[King of Crab Steps (Dominating Refinement): Inspect This King’s city boundaries by using King of Crab Steps daily”]

[Filthy Turtle Divine Technique (Grasped Basics): Reflect three times a day, have you received and inflicted damage? Have you received and inflicted damage? Have you received and inflicted damage?]

[Massage Technique of God (Grasped Basics): Seize every chance of using the Massage Technique of God!]

Taking a few more looks at it, he closed the notebook and returned to his room. There, he closed his eyes and began “Cogitation”.

Chapter 157: Big Peru Shi

Having lost track of time in “Cogitation”, Shi Xiaobai was only awoken when Riko shouted for him to eat dinner outside. He was surprised to realize that it had gone dark.

Shi Xiaobai stretched his stiff body and after coming out from his room, he saw Riko, who was sitting at the dining table, looking austere. There were dishes already placed on the dining table.

Shi Xiaobai sat beside Riko and could not help but ask, “Violent Girl, is there somewhere in your mortal body that feels uncomfortable?”

Shi Xiaobai looked earnestly at Riko, hoping that she would answer that a particular spot on her body was sore. He could then smoothly say “Let This King massage you. You are guaranteed to feel comfort”.

Shi Xiaobai was now desperately searching for someone to test his Massage Technique of God.

Upon hearing Shi Xiaobai’s question, Riko was left dumbfounded. She suddenly recalled of the incident in the morning.

Where was I uncomfortable? My body is uncomfortable all over!

Riko had matters to do in the afternoon and had taken a drive to

calm her heart. It was not easy for her to finally suppress the matter, but now, with Shi Xiaobai mentioning it, she nearly blew a gasket.

“Peng!”

Riko slammed the dining table forcefully, making the dining table tremble. Her face was blushing red as she stared at Shi Xiaobai with her teeth gritted, “Shi Xiaobai, you bastard!”

Shi Xiaobai sensed that he had accidentally stepped onto a minefield. With a bitter smile, he immediately began to eat, feeling the regret for having lost another opportunity to use the Massage Technique of God.

Riko stared at Shi Xiaobai for a moment before snorting. Scooping some soup for herself, she was appeased after praising herself silently of how invincible her culinary skills were.

After Riko calmed down, she recalled that she still had something important to tell Shi Xiaobai. Hence, she said, “Don’t keep eating. Listen to the three things I have to say!”

Shi Xiaobai stuffed another mouthful of food into his mouth as he uttered an “Orh”. As he slurred, “Report on whatever matters you need to report. This King is listening.”

Riko rolled her eyes, but seeing how Shi Xiaobai liked her food so much, she was pleased. She said, “Firstly, you have received

[Annihilation] division's nomination. You are already qualified to participate in the organizations' mass training to select ten candidates!"

Despite hearing this, Shi Xiaobai continued eating after uttering an "Orh".

"Eh? Why is your reaction so dull? Aren't you pleasantly surprised?"

Riko was stunned. Shi Xiaobai's reaction had exceeded her expectations.

Shouldn't he excitedly ask, "really?", or ask curiously, "what's the matter, wasn't This King eliminated?". Why was he so calm?

Shi Xiaobai glanced at Riko strangely and wondered how this was a pleasant surprise.

He swallowed the food in his mouth and said, "Isn't it taken for granted that This King would be selected?"

Riko was utterly dumbfounded.

Why was this fellow so narcissistic!

"Hmph, you were eliminated the moment the free-for-all selection began. If not for me...Hmph, if not for my dad being

Division Minister, would you have the chance? You need to be grateful, do you understand?”

Riko crinkled her nose and her angry look was surprisingly cute.

Shi Xiaobai considered for a moment before nodding and said, “Well done on this matter.”

Riko grunted before continuing on, “Secondly, the organizations’ large-scale selection will be held four days later, in Shanghai. When that happens, nearly a thousand rookies from various organizations will participate in the selection, eventually choosing ten rookies who would participate in the two faction’s collective training.”

“According to my sources, amongst the rookies participating in the selection, there are a few freaks rated as “super rookies”. There are even some shameless bastards who fake their identities as rookies. In summary, the mass selection four days later will be very difficult.”

“For this batch, [Gaia] has produced a Mu Yuesheng, who has a tiny chance of entering the top ten. However, the chances are minute. As for you and the other two rookies, the organization only wishes that you are able to enter the top hundred. So three days later, you do not need to feel too much pressure. Just do your best and try to accumulate a bit of experience.”

Just as Riko was done with her words, Shi Xiaobai immediately looked up and said, “This King will come in first.”

Riko immediately burst out into laughter. She had already guessed that Shi Xiaobai would refuse to admit defeat and retort her, yet she never expected Shi Xiaobai to claim taking first place.

Indeed, Riko realized that she had underestimated the “confidence” Shi Xiaobai had.

However, entering the top hundred at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm was already an impressive feat. If he could enter the top ten, that would be called a “miracle”, but to come in first? Those few “super rookies” were not weaker than Shi Xiaobai’s dual S talents. In terms of their Psionic Ability realms, they flung Shi Xiaobai far behind.

It was impossible to obtain first place.

“If you obtain first place, I’ll...”

Riko did not want to strike a blow on Shi Xiaobai’s “confidence”; hence, she was prepared to promise sizable rewards to encourage his unreal thoughts.

“If This King comes in first, you just need to accede to one of This King’s request.”

Shi Xiaobai naturally would not miss this opportunity. His fiery eyes scanned Riko’s body. This was free experimental material for “Massage Technique of God”.

Riko was alarmed when she noticed how Shi Xiaobai was nefariously staring at her. “A request”?

Could this little pervert ask her for...

Riko immediately said embarrassingly, “Shi Xiaobai, you should change your name to Shi Dahuang¹ in the future! Your brain is stuffed with messed up thoughts. Hmph!”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He did not understand why he had to change his name to Shi Dahuang, but he naturally refused to give up. He immediately responded, “Are you afraid?”

Riko’s breathing faltered as she thought how the little pervert definitely would not cinch first place out of the thousand people selection.

What was there to be afraid about? She was willing to accept this taunt!

“Alright, if you obtain first place, I’ll accede to any request!”

Riko stared at Shi Xiaobai.

Anyway, it was something that was impossible...well, and even if it happened, she could turn her back on her promise.

Shi Xiaobai wouldn't force her to do something difficult, right?

After a while, Riko remembered that she still had an important matter to tell him. She said, "There's still a third thing. As the mass selection is a large-scale selection of a thousand people, there might be cooperative situations during the selection process. As such, the organization wishes that the four rookies that will be participating in the selection will get to know each other and become friends."

"Hence, in the following three days, the organization will place the four of you into a small three-day training camp. The four Division Ministers will take turns to serve as training instructors. The organization has placed a lot of importance on this mass selection."

Upon saying this, Riko suddenly smiled with a wink. "Also, Teacher One-Pun has made an exception to take some time out of his busy schedule to answer Psionic Ability cultivation questions the four of you might have. Hehe, this bonus was obtained by me for the four of you."

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai gaped his mouth and with some hesitation, he said, "Can This King not go?"

Chapter 158: Fragrance And Odor

Shi Xiaobai had little interest in the little training camp. He did not have much desire to listen to Uncle Baldy's explanation.

What a joke. A King's path does not need anyone's guidance!

Riko immediately stared with widened eyes.

He actually asked if he could skip such a good thing?

Right, Shi Xiaobai's way of thinking typically exceeded her expectations.

"You have to go!" Riko waved her fist and said.

Although she did not know what was on Shi Xiaobai's mind, the three-day training camp was extremely necessary. If the mass selection had any free-for-all segments, it was imperative that the four rookies were of one mind.

It was obvious that the three-day training camp could not significantly increase the strength of the four rookies, as it was instead meant to fix as many issues as they had and answer any doubts they had on their minds. It could also let the rookies get to know each other. So, it was possible for the training camp to accomplish all these points.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated a moment before saying “Orh” and continued with dinner. Although he was not looking forward to the three day training camp, he was not especially resistant towards it, as long as it did not affect his “Plans of a King”.

...

...

The next morning, Shi Xiaobai had once again spent the whole night in “Cogitation” and was woken up by Riko.

After washing up and eating breakfast, he sat in Riko’s sports car and they headed for the center of Steel City.

The small training camp’s venue was chosen to be held at a place where [Gaia]’s headquarters devoted to the nurturing of excellent rookies. It was named “Gaia Collective Training Camp”.

Riko led Shi Xiaobai to the training camp’s large lounge.

Having just entered the lounge, the duo was slightly surprised because there was already someone sitting in there. It was not even seven in the morning, while the gathering time was eight, yet there was already someone there.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but take another glance at that person.

The person was a young girl approximately thirteen or fourteen years of age. She had brown hair that reached her shoulders, and she wore a white short sleeve shirt under a thin sweater worn specially for summer. Her bottom was a gray, pleated short skirt with white tall socks. This dressing combination seemed to lack a particular aesthetic flair to it.

However, compared to the “regrettable dressing”, her unmade-up face was extremely pretty. The way she closed her eyes gave her a delicate air, as well as a tough and strong individualistic feeling.

“Mu Yuesheng.” Riko whispered into Shi Xiaobai’s ears and said, “Her Mind Expanse is only at E Class, and is bottom amongst this batch of rookies. So even though she possesses A Class Psy-genes, and even scored nearly full marks on her ability test, she only received an S- Class evaluation. However, at the age of fourteen, she has already reached the ninth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm and is ranked first amongst this batch of rookies. So, her efforts in Psionic Ability cultivation can only be said to be extremely taxing on her. I guess she must have been waiting here in the lounge since last night, spending the entire time in ‘Cogitation’.”

After hearing Riko’s introduction, Shi Xiaobai immediately had a good impression of the girl named Mu Yuesheng. A person who replaced sleeping with “Cogitation” like him needed to be given a Like.

Mu Yuesheng’s eyebrows moved slightly, but she was still in “Cogitation” with her eyes closed. She did not stop her cultivation despite sensing Shi Xiaobai and Riko’s appearance.

“Alright, I’ll be leaving first. Know your place during the next three days, and you must not ’cause trouble’!”

Riko waved her hand at Shi Xiaobai before leaving the lounge.

After watching Riko leave, he glanced at Mu Yuesheng, before finding a random spot right in front of the lounge to sit down. He closed his eyes and began “Cogitation” cultivation as well.

...

After some time, the sound of footsteps was heard coming from outside the lounge. Shi Xiaobai slowly opened one eye and when he saw the person who entered, he could not help but grin and beckoned, “Blondy Narcissist!”

The blond youth, Kevin, heard the infuriating address the moment he stepped in. Turning his head, he saw Shi Xiaobai’s face that he had not seen for several days. Recalling all sorts of rumors regarding “Tu Dahei” in recent days, he felt even more irritated.

“Retard!” Kevin coldly grunted and turned his head to look at Mu Yuesheng. His face became uglier. Immediately, there were two “geniuses” in the lounge that he needed to look up to. This made Kevin, who always claimed to be a genius, very unhappy.

He decided to simply keep it out of sight and out of mind. Walking to another side of the lounge, he began using his cellphone, tapping heavily on it to send short messages.

Soon after, slightly heavy footsteps were heard outside the door.

A little fatso, or to be precise, a fat girl who was rotund like a ball, about 1.5 meters tall, walked into the lounge.

When the short and rotund female fatso saw Shi Xiaobai, she cocked her head and thought for a moment before walking in front of Shi Xiaobai and said in a cheerful tone, “Hello there. You must be the most, most, most, most...most genius, Shi Xiao...Oh, your name is now Tu Dahei. Hehe, I idolize you a lot. By the way, my name is Wen Hezheng. I’m very lucky to be a rookie that will be taking part in the upcoming mass selection. Kindly give me your advice!”

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback before he nodded with a smile. “Very good, This King thinks highly of you.”

Shi Xiaobai enjoyed the cheerful and lively female fatso’s way of addressing him as the “most, most, most, most...most genius”. Immediately, he looked at the female fatso with amiability.

The female fatso laughed once again. Her laughter was as pleasant as pearly bells. Yes, most people who heard this voice would think that it came from a very cute moe girl, but they would probably wish for death when they saw her in person.

Well, God shut the doors tightly on her, but he had at least given her a chimney.

Wen Hezheng turned around and saw Mu Yuesheng, who was deep in Cogitation. Her eyes flickered with a deep sense of worship before turning her head to see Kevin.

She immediately frolicked over to Kevin to greet him.

However, before she was halfway there, Kevin revealed a disgusted expression when he looked up and saw her. With a cold and heartless voice, he scolded her, “Don’t you come over, you disgusting fat pig. Dirty mortal, you are not to approach me. Don’t let me smell the disgusting odor of swine from your body.”

Kevin was already irritated because of Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng. Now, seeing a fat female pig who had no Psy-genes walk towards him, he immediately swore without mercy.

He glanced at Wen Hezheng in disgust and even reached out his hands to cover his mouth and nose, as though he could smell a stench from meters away.

Wen Hezheng was dumbfounded as her eyes turned gloomy, but it was just fleeting. She smiled and said “sorry” to Kevin before finding a seat that was located far away from the three.

Shi Xiaobai glanced at Kevin as he frowned slightly.

How was Wen Hezheng smelly? It was just the opposite. She had a natural fragrance to her.

Back when Wen Hezheng came close to him, Shi Xiaobai had the feeling that her smell was similar to Kali and Riko. They were very pleasing to the nostrils.

Shi Xiaobai turned around to glance at Wen Hezheng and saw how she was using her plump hands to hold up her chubby face. Her eyes were squinted, as though she was thinking of some pleasant matters.

She did not seem affected.

Such a state of mind is well-liked by This King.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but smile as he turned his head to close his eyes and enter “Cogitation”.

At the same time, time came to a sudden halt.

“Make your choice, youth!”

The familiar fiery voice resounded in his head as the black text slowly materialized in front of his eyes.

[Choice 1: In three days, make Kevin’s affection for Wen Hezheng reach 80 (Like). Currently at -95 (Extreme Disgust) — (Reward: C-level)]

[Choice 2: In three days, make Wen Hezheng's affection for you reach 80 (Like). Currently at 50 (Friendly) — (Reward: E-level)]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “daily-style choice” where there is only one opportunity after choosing. Successfully completing the choice's mission will yield a reward, and failure will lead to punishment of the same level.)

“Make your choice, youth!”

Chapter 159: Mozzie

This sudden appearance of the Absolute Choice made Shi Xiaobai hesitate for a grand total of...three seconds.

Three seconds later, Shi Xiaobai made his choice, allowing time to tick again.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to glance at Wen Hezheng and frowned slightly. Although the choice was very simple, how he completed the choice's mission needed proper planning.

With a thought, Shi Xiaobai got up and walked towards Wen Hezheng. In fact, regardless of which choice he made, he needed to know the fat girl first. Fortunately, he had left a good impression on Wen Hezheng up to now.

“Wen...”

When Shi Xiaobai came in front of Wen Hezheng, he suddenly realized that he had forgotten what the fat girl's name was...

“Mozzie (Xiao Wenzi)^{[1](#)}!”

Wen Hezheng looked up at Shi Xiaobai and her eyes narrowed into a slit. She was already aware that Shi Xiaobai did not remember her name. Well, this was nothing that needed her to be sad about. The name, “Wen Hezheng”, which sounded like a boy's

name was a name she did not like too much. It was best if he did not remember it.

Wen Hezheng said with a tone that was filled with longing and hesitation, “When I was young, my friends called me Mozzie. Although when I grew up...hehe. If you can... please call me Mozzie.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned. He was still considering if he should bestow the fat girl a more astounding title. Who knew that the fatso already had the name of “Mozzie”. Shi Xiaobai immediately felt a sense of pity, feeling regretful for not being able to bestow a title for the fat girl.

“Mozzie, This King has something to talk to you about.”

Shi Xiaobai naturally shouted “Mozzie” and immediately went straight to the main topic.

“Yea, yea, yea. Go ahead!”

Wen Hezheng’s eyes were flashing with looks of disbelief while frantically nodding her head.

In fact, her fatness and the cute nickname, “Mozzie”, did not match at all. When most people heard of such a childhood nickname, they would tease her either out of good faith or malicious intent. This was the first time after growing up that someone would very naturally shout out that name. Furthermore,

it was a stranger who she had met the first time.

Ah, Lord Shi Xiaobai, you are not only a genius, but also a nice person. I wonder...if you are a seme ²] or uke³.

As Wen Hezheng was having such thoughts, she turned her head to glance at Kevin and frowned. If this were normal times, a Fujoshi⁴ like her would have fantasized intimate scenes of Shi Xiaobai and Kevin, and then guess who was the seme and who was the uke. But now, with the contrasting attitudes Shi Xiaobai and Kevin had for her, Wen Hezheng came to a conclusion—No, Kevin was not a good match to the kind Lord Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai gave a strange glance at Wen Hezheng and coughed before he began to touch on proper matters. He said, “If This King...”

At this moment, the sound of clear footsteps came from outside the door, interrupting Shi Xiaobai’s words.

Wen Hezheng, who was on the edge of her seat, tugged Shi Xiaobai’s sleeve to quickly find a seat. She whispered, “It must be one of the Division Ministers. I heard the four Division Ministers will take turns to be our training instructor. I’m looking forward to it. Hurry, find a seat and sit down.”

Realizing that he had three days time, Shi Xiaobai felt there was no hurry. He nodded and just sat beside Wen Hezheng.

Wen Hezheng gave Shi Xiaobai an odd look and was immediately touched.

Ah, Lord Shi Xiaobai, you are truly too kind. Such a kind you is definitely not a “seme“. Ooohoo, I wonder which handsome hunk would be a worthy match to Lord Shi Xiaobai.

Wen Hezheng began to choose the beautiful men she had seen before, attempting to locate the most qualified person to match with Shi Xiaobai.

And during this period of time, Shi Xiaobai had an inexplicable chill rise up his heart.

At this moment, someone walked in from outside. It was a burly middle-aged man, Yama Minamiya, the Division Minister of [Annihilation].

The moment Yama Minamiya entered, he noticed that the four rookies were already here and gave a satisfied nod. He then said in a deep voice, “Hello everybody, I’m [Annihilation]’s Division Minister, Yama Minamiya. I’m very glad to serve as the first instructor of your three-day training camp. I have high expectations for all of you. I wish that you would not disappoint me in the upcoming training process.”

Kevin and Wen Hezheng immediately gave a serious look as a response.

Shi Xiaobai nonchalantly glanced at Yama Minamiya, while Mu Yuesheng did not even open her eyes. She only nodded to indicate that she was listening. She was already accustomed to being in Cogitation while listening to class.

Yama Minamiya was not too badly affected by the two S- Class rookies' attitude. The way he looked at Shi Xiaobai now was like he was looking at a son-in-law. He had also long heard of Mu Yuesheng's "bad habits".

Geniuses were bound to receive a bit of special treatment.

"I have to say that all of you are very fortunate. In a while, His Excellency One-Pun will spare some time to answer questions on your cultivation. You will have the entire morning to get pointers from His Excellency One-Pun!"

When Yama Minamiya announced this news, his tone was filled with happiness and envy. If he had obtained the chance to receive the pointers of a mighty figure like His Excellency One-Pun when he was young, he would truly have been fortunate.

Everyone would encounter more or less some "difficulties" during cultivation, so for anyone, be they top geniuses or not, being able to listen to answers from a world-class mighty hero, One-Pun, that was definitely something to be happy about.

This was all thanks to Riko's pleading. If not, why would One-Pun, who was busy in various calamity zones, waste time on guiding a few rookies?

Other than Shi Xiaobai, that was obviously the moment the other three rookies learned of the news.

Wen Hezheng immediately stared with widened eyes and shouted “Really?”.

Kevin’s eyes burned. He was wondering how he could showcase himself in front of His Excellency One-Pun. If he caught His Excellency One-Pun’s fancy, and become his student, that...that would be no trifling matter!

Even Mu Yuesheng opened her eyes at that moment. Her bright brown eyes flickered with a look of pleasant surprise, but she closed her eyes quickly once again. She was indeed in urgent need of a truly mighty figure to answer burning questions on her mind, so if it was done by His Excellency One-Pun, it could not be any better.

Yama Minamiya scanned the reactions of the four rookies and could not help but think highly of Mu Yuesheng and Shi Xiaobai.

These two were too darn calm.

Especially Shi Xiaobai, what was that look of repulsiveness for?

Yama Minamiya looked at Wen Hezheng and answered, “Of course it’s true. His Excellency One-Pun is likely to arrive soon.”

Before he finished his sentence, clear footsteps were heard coming from outside. Not a while later, a bald man with a white cape and tight yellow overalls walked in. Who else could it be but One-Pun!?

It was truly speaking of the One-Pun!

Chapter 160: Truly Heh Heh

When One-Pun entered, he nodded at Yama Minamiya before going to a desk in front of the lounge and scanned the four rookies.

Kevin and Wen Hezheng were looking at One-Pun with eyes of admiration and worship.

This baldy with simple facial features and glazed eyes was known as a world-class hero who “no one dared to be his enemy”, one of the top pillars of support for China’s heroes, the super man, One-Pun!

Mu Yuesheng opened her eyes once again to size One-Pun up before closing her eyes again.

Shi Xiaobai was without much expression, but gave One-Pun a courtesy glance, giving him sufficient respect. After all, Uncle Baldy had previously saved him. Insta-killing the Chimera with one punch on television was also extremely cool.

Oh, but compared to his “Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch”, it was still slightly inferior.

After One-Pun had taken in the four people’s reaction, he smiled and said, “Everyone should know the reason why I’m here. Since I have agreed to answer any doubts on your cultivation, I will definitely do my best. This afternoon, I will treat all of you as my own students, and would answer anything to the best of my

abilities. Then, let's not waste anyone's time. Feel free to ask any questions you have!"

The moment One-Pun was done, Kevin immediately raised his hand.

One-Pun gave Kevin a nod.

Kevin immediately stood up and said with passionate eyes, "May I ask Your Excellency One-Pun, what are the specific requirements for you to take in a disciple?"

One-Pun was taken aback before looking seriously into Kevin's eyes and said solemnly, "Sorry, I will only take in one student my entire life. That position has already been filled. Also, it's best you do not ask questions outside of cultivation. I would typically refuse to answer such questions."

Kevin's face turned stiff before he gave an awkward smile. He immediately changed the subject and said, "Sorry, I was being reckless. Then, I would like to ask you that as a Psyker, how should one maximize one's superpower advantage, preventing other Psionites of the same level from being able to put up any form of resistance?"

One-Pun looked curiously at Kevin and said extremely firmly, "Firstly, Psykers will never be able to use their superpowers to prevent Psionites of the same level from putting up any form of resistance. The combat system is divided into four categories—offensive, defensive, flash motion and superpowers. The

importance of these four categories are nearly equal. Superpowers are not superior to the other three. It can only be said that Psykers have one more important means of combat compared to Psionites, so they have a certain bit of advantage. However, to determine eventual victory or defeat, it is an amalgamation of the four major categories.”

“As for how to maximize your own superpower’s advantage, I am unable to give you a specific answer because this needs to be decided after careful consideration of the superpower’s effects, conditions and limitations. And these three points are precisely the most important secrets of Psykers. I do not know your superpower’s three characteristics, and even if you are willing to tell me, I will also refuse to listen to it. So on this matter, you need to experiment and ponder over it yourself.”

“The advice I can give you is to synergize your superpower with the other three categories. By fusing your superpower into them, you can create unique offensive skills, defensive skills and movement techniques of your own.”

Upon hearing One-Pun’s answer, Kevin’s expression turned stiffer and his mood turned for the worse. Although One-Pun’s answers were very reasonable, they were not the answers he wanted to hear.

He wanted to hear One-Pun praise and hype up the powers of superpowers. It would be better if he could belittle Psionites in the process.

Shouldn’t they as fellow Psykers take pride in possessing

superpowers?

Why did he say that “superpowers are not superior to the other three”? Why did he say that it was “only one more important means of combat”?

Heh heh, the so-called His Excellency One-Pun was nothing remarkable after all. What use was all that power he had when he did not have any brains? He was just an idiot who would mislead his students.

Kevin cursed in his heart, but he did not dare show any signs of discontent. Instead, he continued saying respectfully, “Alright, thank you for Your Excellency One-Pun’s answer. I still have another question that I wonder if I should continue asking?”

One-Pun nodded and said, “You can ask any question you want this morning. However, after you ask this one question, let’s take another person’s question. It’s better if everyone takes turns asking their questions.”

Kevin took a deep breath before asking, “I have an offensive skill ‘Black Bear Dominating Palm’ at the ‘Familiarized Proficiency’ level, a defensive skill, ‘Bronze Shield’ at the ‘Familiarized Proficiency’ level and a movement technique, ‘Cloud Traversal Steps’ at the ‘Grasped Basics’ level. I would like to ask, which new combat skill should I practice next?”

When Kevin finished speaking, he intentionally glanced at the other three rookies. He turned his nose up at One-Pun. The

motives behind him asking this question was to showcase his abilities to the other three rookies.

Hmph, with two battle techniques at the “Familiarized Proficiency” level, do the bunch of plebeians like you understand of my prowess?

However, Kevin was disappointed to see Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng still having their eyes closed in Cogitation. And that darn little fat chick was giggling herself foolish while staring at One-Pun, as if she was undergoing mental masturbation.

Furthermore, One-Pun’s response that immediately followed made Kevin almost curse out loud.

He heard One-Pun say the following, “Learn new combat skills? Child, keep in mind never to bite off more than you can chew! Your three combat skills have to achieve the minimum level of ‘Exemplary Mastery’ before you can cut back on your training. I believe you should put more effort into your three combat skills. Also, the three skills that you have chosen and matched is actually very problematic.”

“Firstly, your body’s build and strength is not suitable for ‘Black Bear Dominating Palm’. This is a sort of savage combat technique that tries to overpower your enemy through strength. I suggest you to quickly change it to ‘Black Bear Smacking Palm’. As for ‘Bronze Shield’, it is an E-class defensive skill, and in fact isn’t very malleable and the growth potential isn’t promising. Its practical usage is barely tolerable. Training it to the level of ‘Familiarized Proficiency’ is already quite a waste of time. Do not attempt at

raising it again.”

“And most important of all, your movement technique, ‘Cloud Traversal Steps’ should actually be the one you should improve on the most, yet you have only reached the level of ‘Grasped Basics’. This is already having the order reversed. I believe that in battles at the Psionic Mortal Realm, and even at the Psionic Soul Realm, the person with the better movement technique typically will have a greater advantage than offensive skills or defensive skills. So I recommend that you work hard on your ‘Cloud Traversal Steps’. You should at minimum, raise it to the ‘Exemplary Mastery’ before considering other combat skills.”

One-Pun patiently answered Kevin’s questions in detail.

Yama Minamiya was feeling envious by the side. This Kevin was indeed lucky. One-Pun had so meticulously answered his queries and every answer hit the nail on the head. If Kevin could understand this fully, his road ahead would be even more promising.

However, the person in question, Kevin, did not share the same thoughts. In his opinion, whatever One-Pun said was a bunch of bullshit, it was all baloney.

He could ignore how he was not praised for his proficiency attainment, but he had even denigrated his Bronze Shield and Black Bear Dominating Palm, that was truly Heh heh.

Chapter 161: The Girl Who Doesn't Drink Chicken Soup

“Thank you very much for His Excellency One-Pun’s answers. As a student, I have greatly benefited from it.” Kevin said insincerely while sitting down with a stiff expression on his face. From that moment onwards, he went from a fan of One-Pun to an anti-fan!

After Kevin sat down, Wen Hezheng immediately raised her hand.

One-Pun nodded at Wen Hezheng with a smile.

Wen Hezheng stood up and first let out a habitual pearly chuckle before asking, “Your Excellency One-Pun, you previously said that at the Psionic Mortal Realm, and even the Psionic Soul Realm, flash motion is most important. However, looking at my fat body, I can’t be flexible. Boohooohoo, I want to ask, is there any hope for me? I wish for Your Excellency One-Pun’s advice!”

Wen Hezheng’s amiable way of speaking and “matured” manner of self-deprecation immediately won her a good impression from One-Pun. He began to seriously consider the question.

Kevin glanced at Wen Hezheng in disgust. He cursed in his heart at the fat pig’s lack of shame.

It’s fine that she looks so disgusting, but she even fucking tries to act cute? Feeling inferior and hiding in a small dark room to feel

sorry for your existence is what your lifestyle should be, disgusting pig!

Wen Hezheng sensed Kevin's hateful gaze and found him more and more irritating. There was no way of comparing him to Lord Shi Xiaobai.

Tsk, I wish you would be embraced by the most wretched beggar uncle and then love each other for all eternity!

At the same time, One-Pun was done thinking. He looked at Wen Hezheng and said, "Since time immemorial, the number of peerless warriors who do not rely on movement techniques to the point of not even using movement techniques are nearly countless in number. So you do not need to worry about being inflexible yourself. What you should consider is how to put to maximize the advantage of your body size."

"Firstly, for offensive skills, it's best you choose a brute-force technique that can beat an enemy by relying on strength alone. However, you have to supplement it with an expender that is fast in speed. Brute strength will be your main focus, while the expender will be used as a supplementary move. Through this two-pronged approach, you will be able to have the greater advantage in a stalemate. It will also be easier to deal with a flexible enemy."

"In terms of defensive skills, due to your relatively larger surface area, shield-based defensive skills might be difficult to result in a perfect defense. As such, I recommend you to cultivate barrier-based defensive techniques."

“However, barrier-based defensive techniques will apparently not be enough, so your body’s defense will be particularly critical. Let me put it this way, I believe what is most suitable for your cultivation path is body-tempering, body-tempering, and body-tempering!”

“Choose a suitable body-tempering cultivation technique and constantly raise your physical defenses. At the same time, learn an appropriate endurance cultivation technique to allow you to fight protracted battles. Your exact fighting form should be a half meat-shield and half-melee warrior.”

“As for which body-tempering and endurance cultivation technique to cultivate, in a few days, I will personally choose the most suitable one for you.”

One-Pun’s long and detailed answer immediately stirred Wen Hezheng’s heart and gave her excitement.

She had benefited greatly from his words, and the final promise made her feel flattered.

Wen Hezheng was cheering in her heart.

Your Excellency One-Pun, you are truly too handsome and too empowering. If not for the age difference, I would have reluctantly given Lord Shi Xiaobai to you. Ooohoo, unfortunately when you were born, he was yet to be born, and when he was born, you were already old.

“Thank you! Thank you, Your Excellency One-Pun!” Wen Hezheng sincerely thanked him before sitting down.

“Are there any more questions? Feel free to ask.”

One-Pun scanned the four rookies. He was rather open to help rookies and only was unable to teach others due to the lack of time from doing rescue missions. The reason why he came today was because he could not stand Riko’s pleading, and secondly, because he had high hopes for the two rookies, Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng.

However, these two people did not seem very enthusiastic?

At this moment, Mu Yuesheng opened her eyes and after a moment of hesitation, she slowly raised her hand.

One-Pun immediately nodded at her.

Mu Yuesheng gently stood up and after some careful thought, she asked, “Does Mind Expanse necessarily affect the speed of psionic cultivation? Are there any means to improve one’s Mind Expanse?”

Actually, experts already had conclusive answers to the two questions. However, Mu Yuesheng still decided on asking. She did not hold much expectation, but she wanted to hear and see how the well-learned One-Pun would answer.

She was already resigned to the fact that her Mind Expanse was low, but she had used her own means to fight against her destiny. The improvement in cultivation depended on cultivation speed multiplied by cultivation time. Since her low Mind Expanse meant a slow cultivation speed, she just needed to spend more time on cultivation.

One-Pun had clearly heard of Mu Yuesheng's situation. Towards an adamant fourteen-year-old girl, he had four words to describe her—pitiable, respectable, terrifying, inestimable.

Towards Mu Yuesheng's question, he did not wish to answer in euphemisms or embellish his answer. Instead, he said flatly, "One's Mind Expanse will definitely affect one's psionic cultivation speed. Although psionic cultivation has the three means of Cogitation, training and battle, the fastest and most suitable path is Cogitation. One's Mind Expanse determines one's Cogitation intensity, so it will definitely influence one's psionic cultivation speed."

"Unfortunately, numerous biologists have been researching methods to improve the Mind Expanse of humans since a long time ago, but they have failed to make any true developments. One's Mind Expanse is determined by nature, and nurture has little impact on it. It will probably be a situation that will never change in a hundred years."

"However, you should understand that one's cultivation speed does not determine a person's destiny. Warriors that take a decade to sharpen their sword aren't stories of legend; hence, you can do it

too. There are very few true geniuses in the world, and most of the geniuses are mortals who are more hardworking.”

“Mu Yuesheng, you just need to hold on to your beliefs and work hard as usual. You will certainly succeed.”

One-Pun’s words were completely like chicken soup for the soul which Yama Minamiya nodded silently as a response. Shi Xiaobai also nodded in agreement. Wen Hezheng’s impression of One-Pun increased once again, finding it unbearable to “marry” Lord Shi Xiaobai to One-Pun.

Kevin was feeling extremely jealous. One-Pun had called out Mu Yuesheng’s name while he did not even get his name called out. This made him rather furious. He found it unfair. Mu Yuesheng’s psionic cultivation realm was just slightly higher than his, so it was without doubt that her combat skills were lacking and of crappy proficiency levels. If he had not spent time cultivating his combat skills, he would certainly have reached the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

The person with the most insipid response was Mu Yuesheng. She smiled and said “thank you” to One-Pun before sitting down. She then closed her eyes to continue Cogitation cultivation.

One-Pun’s uneuphemistic answer was within her expectations, so she was not disappointed. She was thankful for One-Pun’s chicken soup for the soul, but she would not have felt excited because of it.

She was a girl who had no need for any chicken soup for the soul

because she knew the meaning behind hard work, and was more hardworking than anyone.

Chapter 162: Who Is Messing With Who

One-Pun found it regretful for Mu Yuesheng once again in his heart. If this girl's Mind Expanse were slightly higher, it would be highly probable that she would be labeled as a "super rookie". After all, not only was her superpower rated A Class, she was one of the few who had an A Class rating which closely approached an S Class rating.

One-Pun silently sighed and turned his head to look at Shi Xiaobai. Now, there was only this interesting fellow who had yet to ask a question. What would he ask? He was somewhat curious.

If One-Pun knew that Shi Xiaobai did not even have a question that he wanted to ask, he would probably find it hard to stay calm.

Yama Minamiya was clearly also most curious over the questions that Shi Xiaobai would ask. However, he noticed that Shi Xiaobai did not have the intention of raising his hand, while Kevin appeared eager to raise his hand. Immediately he coughed and said, "Shi Xiaobai, if you have any questions, there's no need to be shy. Feel free and ask."

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He was wondering what This King had to be shy about. The issue at hand was that This King did not have any questions to ask?

Wen Hezheng tugged at Shi Xiaobai's sleeves and whispered, "Don't worry. His Excellency One-Pun is a very nice person. You can ask him any question that's on your mind."

Any question would do?

Shi Xiaobai frowned. If he really needed to ask questions, it was not that he could not squeeze a few out. However, could Uncle Baldy actually answer the questions of a King? Shi Xiaobai expressed his skepticism.

One-Pun noticed Shi Xiaobai's hesitant look and thought that Shi Xiaobai was hesitant to ask. Immediately, he said in a soft voice, "Don't worry, ask any question you have. If I can answer, I will try my best to answer them."

Upon hearing One-Pun's words, Shi Xiaobai did not hesitate and raised his head to ask, "Uncle, do you know sword techniques?"

One-Pun was slightly stunned. He was asked if he knew sword techniques?

Wasn't this question obvious?

The weapon he used was a katana blade, which was very similar to a sword. Although he used blade techniques, most of them were sword techniques.

After all, in this day and age, the field of sword techniques was far superior to the field of blade techniques. There were a lot more people who used a sword instead of a blade.

“Yes, a little.”

One-Pun answered with a nod. Although sword techniques were his secondary offensive skill, he was still labeled as one of the top ten Sword Masters in the world.

The others were rolling their eyes. They were rendered quite speechless over Shi Xiaobai’s question and One-Pun’s humble answer.

Upon hearing that One-Pun knew how to use swords, Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up and asked, “Do you know how to use Excalibur?”

Since the signing of the pact yesterday, the sword spirit, Little Black, did not make a single sound. This made Shi Xiaobai feel like he was bursting with questions.

He wanted to learn sword techniques now!

Upon hearing Shi Xiaobai’s question, One-Pun frowned. What was Excalibur? He had never heard of it before!

After some thought, One-Pun shook his head and said, “I don’t!”

Since he did not know, One-Pun did not make up any excuse. Hence, he only responded with those two words.

Shi Xiaobai did not reveal any looks of disappointment. In his point of view, it was only reasonable that Uncle Baldy did not know.

Shi Xiaobai continued asking, “Then what about Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Sword of Rupture, do you know of that?”

“I don’t.”

One-Pun was feeling very helpless.

“God Annihilating Demon Vanquishing Pilgrim’s Sword?” Shi Xiaobai asked again.

“I don’t!”

One-Pun was beginning to sweat. He had never heard of the three sword techniques that the young fellow just mentioned.

“Demon Slaying Holy Sword?”

“I don’t...”

“Great Sword of Light?”

“I’ve heard of it, but I don’t.”

“Nine Heavens Thunderclap Sword?”

“Heard of it...”

“Astral Holy Sword?”

“I think I’ve heard of it...”

“Wind Fire Thunder Divine Sword?”

“ ... ”

Three Thousand Waters Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Hundred-eighty Thousand Li Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Three Thousand Li Sword?”

“ ... ”

“Beginner Sword?”

“...”

“You don’t even know Beginner Sword. Uncle, what should This King say about you?” Shi Xiaobai sighed. So it was not that he knew little, the truth was that the sword techniques Little Black mentioned were just too profound.

One-Pun wiped his sweat. He had never heard of a large number of the sword techniques Shi Xiaobai mentioned. Even if he had heard of them, he had never practiced them. He knew a bit, but to say that he truly “knew” was just pushing it. Actually, he knew Beginner Sword, but how could he say that with a straight face!?

The others were already dumbstruck. They were surprised at Shi Xiaobai’s knowledge of so many sword techniques that His Excellency One-Pun did not know.

Was he a sword fanatic?

One-Pun did not insist on upholding his reputation, and instead said directly, “My research into the field of swords is currently still too shallow. Unfortunately, I am unable to help you. You can ask any question from other fields. I will answer them to the best of my ability.”

By the side, Yama Minamiya was wiping his sweat. For one of the top ten Sword Masters of the world to actually claim to have such

shallow knowledge in sword techniques, how were other swordsmen to live?

Shi Xiaobai frowned. What was there to ask? He did not seem to have any.

“Oh yes, This King wants to ask. How can This King attract more derision and hatred from others?”

Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes. He had an urgent need to “receive and inflict damage”!

One-Pun was stunned, his mouth agape in shock. This question... I have to say, when it comes to attracting derision, aren't you invincible in this matter?

“This question... I believe that people should live in harmony and help each other out. After all, in this world, humans have several common enemies. In order to build a better home for survival, shouldn't we be united against external forces?” One-Pun answered with deep emotions.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He found what One-Pun said was somewhat reasonable, but...his answer seemed to be out of the point.

He did not insist on this question and after a moment of thought, he continued asking, “Uncle, have you done any research on massage therapy?”

The Massage Technique of God was also a technique that Shi Xiaobai currently had fairly deep interest in. He was very willing to discuss it with others if possible.

The others were dumbfounded hearing this.

Holy fucking massage? Are you asking a world-class hero if he knew a second-rate job's massaging techniques?

"I don't!" One-Pun answered firmly.

"Sigh." Shi Xiaobai sighed and with a bit of hesitation, asked, "Then, Uncle, do you need a massage?"

Shi Xiaobai believed that it would be extremely good if One-Pun could be his experimental subject.

"I don't need one!"

One-Pun was feeling quite depressed.

Isn't this little rascal acting a bit too naughty? What sort of questions are these...?

One-Pun sighed and said, "Ask some questions on cultivation."

Shi Xiaobai was startled. Wasn't he asking questions on cultivation?

Shi Xiaobai seriously looked One-Pun in the eye and wondered out loud, "Uncle, when you answered the other three, you were not like this. Why do you not know a thing when it comes to This King? Say, are you messing with This King!?"

One-Pun nearly spewed out blood. He was still wondering if Shi Xiaobai was messing with him, and never expected Shi Xiaobai to strike him first!

"Your questions...have rendered me speechless!"

One-Pun suddenly felt that coming here today was a huge mistake. No, if it weren't for Shi Xiaobai, then everything would have been beautiful.

Shi Xiaobai sighed as he sat down. Thankfully, he did not hold his hopes up too high when he came here. Indeed, the path of a king was not something others could guide!

Wen Hezheng sensed that the atmosphere had turned awkward, so she immediately raised her hand to ask a question.

One-Pun's eyes lit up and nodded at Wen Hezheng for her to stand up.

At least he could communicate with ordinary people to recover

that lost beauty...

Chapter 163: A Person Should Be More Like Shi Xiaobai

The morning question and answer was a long grueling process. After his first round of questions, Shi Xiaobai did not ask any questions after that. Similarly, Yama Minamiya did not dare request him to ask any more questions. Mu Yuesheng had very few questions as well. Occasionally, she would ask a somewhat more profound question, and in contrast, Kevin would frequently raise his hand and ask brainless questions that Yama Minamiya wanted to smack him for.

Only Wen Hezheng's giggling questions were somewhat normal, perfectly playing up to the role as the cheerful fat chick. Yama Minamiya was feeling a sense of pity. If not for her being so fat that even her real mother could not love, she would definitely be a cute young lady that everyone loved.

In summary, this round of question and answer made the always composed Yama Minamiya nearly want to reprimand the other three rookies other than Wen Hezheng.

Fuck, this was an opportunity others yearned for, but you three bastards did not treasure it at all!

Thankfully, One-Pun was quite a magnanimous person. He was not petty when it came to such trivial matters. Other than Shi Xiaobai rendering him speechless, Mu Yuesheng's questions were very intricate despite few in number. The questions Kevin asked might be brainless, but they were all quite refreshing. The fat

chick's questions did not seem very refined, but they were very timely.

In summary, the question and answer came to quite a perfect close. At least the four rookies probably would more or less gain something after listening to One-Pun's "thoughts and insights" an entire morning...Yes, probably.

Lunch in the afternoon was long prepared by a few [Gaia] staff. The quantity of food was not much, but they were all very exquisite. The taste and nutritional value were excellent and the meal's quality was considered quite high.

Shi Xiaobai was planning on discussing matters with Wen Hezheng during lunch time. After all, he had just received an Absolute Choice, and the key to his mission was Wen Hezheng.

However, Wen Hezheng spent less than a minute to finish all the food the staff brought her. Using the reason of "not being sufficiently satiated", she left the lounge, as though she was heading to a restaurant nearby to have a feast.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the tiny bit of food he had consumed on his plate and finally understood that the development and nurturing of every fatso was not easy. He did not chase after her but instead continued on with his meal. This matter was not something he could rush.

After finishing lunch, Shi Xiaobai surveyed the lounge. Kevin had already gone somewhere else, while Mu Yuesheng only ate a

mouthful or two before entering Cogitation again.

Shi Xiaobai took a few serious glances at Mu Yuesheng before turning his head to begin his Cogitation.

...

At two in the afternoon, Yama Minamiya came to the lounge punctually. Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes slowly, and realized that Wen Hezheng and Kevin had already returned to the lounge.

Yama Minamiya scanned the four people and said in a deep voice, “This afternoon, we will begin some actual collective training. Everyone should understand that it is impossible for you to have any tremendous improvement in three days, so do not hope that you make any frantic last moment efforts.”

“However, since we gathered you to undergo a three-day training camp, there are clearly some goals. The main goal of the three-day training camp is to prepare you for possible segments of the trials in advance!”

The moment Yama Minamiya finished his words, Kevin’s doubtful voice rang. “Prepare for the trials’ segments in advance? Division Minister Minamiya, from what I know, the trial’s segments are highly confidential, aren’t they? Could you have received some information or...do you have a spy?”

Yama Minamiya shook his head upon hearing this and said,

“Unfortunately, we are unable to know of the information prior to the trials. The national organization senate has maintained high secrecy on this matter, so not a bit of information has been leaked out.”

Kevin immediately frowned and said, “If that’s the case, how are we to prepare for the trial’s segments in advance? Are we going to just guess?”

Kevin’s tone was filled with an undetectable derisive tone.

This made Yama Minamiya involuntarily frown slightly.

This blond kid needs to learn to be more courteous. If he was a rookie from his division, he would definitely be pulled to the office for some education.

However, realizing that Kevin’s Division Minister was Creation’s sultry bitch, he immediately felt better. That sultry bitch would usually rear such youths with slightly better looks in the bedroom.

“You are right. We will be relying on guesswork.” Yama Minamiya responded with a deadpan expression.

Kevin was stunned agape and immediately thought of disparaging a bit, but looking at Yama Minamiya’s solemn expression, he finally realized that he had been rude. He hurriedly lowered his voice and said, “I understand. It must be the organization’s intelligence department using accurate data and

statistics to analyze with robust logic for inference to deduce what the segments the national organization senate will come up with! That must be what it is!”

Kevin heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. He gave a pat on his back for being wise to suddenly suck up.

Unfortunately, Kevin’s sucking up was ineffective.

Yama Minamiya slightly coughed and said, “Child, you overthink things. It’s not as impressive as you think. It is just purely a guess. All the four Division Ministers will make a guess. Anyway, if we guess it correctly, that’s just a bonus, and there’s no loss to guessing it wrongly.”

To put it in simple words, they were just going for broke!

“Ah?”

Kevin was dumbfounded.

How could [Gaia] do things this way? This will cause them to be doomed sooner or later! Also...can your insta-smack of the face be lighter?

“Pfft!”

A pearly laughter burst out as though someone could not restrain

it further.

Kevin immediately turned his head and saw Wen Hezheng's rotund face biting her lips as though she was suppressing her laughter.

Angry sparks immediately flashed in Kevin's eyes.

This darn fat pig was laughing at him?

Wen Hezheng waved her hands apologetically at Kevin, indicating how it was not deliberate on her part. While listening to the two's conversation, she had automatically envisioned a scene of Yama Minamiya and Kevin being seme and uke. After that, she could not help but burst out laughing. That scene was just too contrasting!

As Kevin looked at Wen Hezheng's giggling face, his fury grew in intensity. If not for Yama Minamiya being present, he would have blown up there and then. His hatred for Wen Hezheng had reached an extremum.

Yama Minamiya noticed Kevin's reaction and shook his head.

This child was still too young. Look at Shi Xiaobai. He infuriated people all day, but have you ever seen him suffer or turn angry?

A person should be more like Shi Xiaobai!

Yama Minamiya coughed and went straight to the main topic. He said, “Although it’s based on guesswork, we certainly have reasons behind our theories. In my opinion, with a large-scale selection of a thousand people, there will definitely be a large-scale elimination segment at the beginning. A simple but brutal competition will eliminate a large number of candidates.”

“With so many people at the beginning, it’s not suitable for a free-for-all, or elimination matches that can easily lead to problems in the selection later. So in my opinion, the first selection segment will be an endurance battle!”

Chapter 164: Come, Let's Have A Good Battle

“Through a most simple and direct endurance competition, it will first eliminate a batch of people of the worst quality. It will not result in lasting problems, nor would it result in a fiery atmosphere at the onset.”

“Then, what do you think is the most possible endurance competition?”

After Yama Minamiya gave his analysis, he “cheekily” threw this small problem at them.

“A segment that tests the consumption of Psionic Power?”

Kevin upheld his usual style by giving an answer without any substance.

“If it's a competition of endurance, could it be...a food eating competition to see who can eat the most...Hehe. If that's the case, I will definitely not be eliminated!”

Wen Hezheng maintained her silly and cute style as well. She made the atmosphere turn lively and cheery.

Mu Yuesheng and Shi Xiaobai also maintained their consistent style of remaining silent.

Yama Minamiya sighed and immediately felt that the question he asked was retarded. He said helplessly, “When it comes to endurance, the best segment is apparently—long distance running!”

“Ah!”

At this moment, Wen Hezheng was dumbfounded. “No way, if it’s long-distance running...”

If the first round was long-distance running, she could feel at ease to be a personal shopper for others. [1](#)

Kevin immediately took the opportunity to kick her while she was down by saying, “What Division Minister Minamiya says makes sense. Long-distance running tests endurance, stamina, Psionic Power and the candidates’ will and allocation of wisdom. It is indeed the most suitable first line of elimination. Indeed, we should practice our long-distance running!”

Finally, Kevin’s fawning hit its mark.

Yama Minamiya nodded his head in a gratified manner and said, “What you said is very good. So I will not belabor you on why we should practice long-distance running. In short, today’s training program is long-distance running and it’s very simple. Just running a hundred times around the special track in the training grounds will do.”

“Pu! What!? A hundred rounds?”

At this moment, Wen Hezheng could no longer sit still. The special track in the training grounds was four thousand meters a lap. Wouldn't a hundred laps be four hundred kilometers?

Heavens, wouldn't this be killing her?

She only wanted to be a carefree little pig, and silently look at her male gods tie the knot. Why was she tortured in this manner!?

Kevin's face stiffened too.

Four hundred kilometers.

With his stamina, he would not be able to finish running it even if he gave his all.

Fuck, this was really him lifting a stone to smash himself in the foot!

Shi Xiaobai was rather calm. He did not know that the track was four thousand meters per lap, and even if he knew, he would not be afraid.

Even calmer was Mu Yuesheng. She did not even open her pretty eyes. Her brows didn't even wrinkle at all.

“Let’s go. Gather at the track.”

Yama Minamiya did not give Wen Hezheng and Kevin time to complain and directly walked out the door.

Kevin’s breathing stagnated and angrily stared at Wen Hezheng.

This was all that fat pig’s fault.

If not for her...he would not have acted on impulse and agreed with the long-distance running training. At least, he would have tried to negotiate it. After all, four hundred kilometers was just too exaggerated.

Kevin silently cursed at Wen Hezheng. His resentment for her had deepened once again!

...

Ten minutes later, the group gathered in front of the track. Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised, but his heart immediately ignited with fighting spirit. Only a four hundred kilometer run was challenging enough.

Wen Hezheng had an aggrieved face while Kevin had a sullen face. Only Mu Yuesheng remained placid.

However, what was most surprising was Mu Yuesheng walking to

the outermost circle, opening up a distance with the other three.

Yama Minamiya glanced thoughtfully at Mu Yuesheng and gestured for them to be prepared.

The four rookies immediately focused.

“Three, two, one, go!”

Yama Minamiya shouted the command.

Before Yama Minamiya was done, a bolt of lightning shot forward!

This was not a description, but a true bolt of lightning!

Even Shi Xiaobai widened his eyes. He had just begun using Crab Steps when he saw that bolt of lightning. In the span of a blink, icy-blue lightning suffused from the body of that girl with brown hair and eyes. She appeared at the other end of the straight track instantly.

That was a true bolt of lightning. When Mu Yuesheng charged forward, there was electric buzzes emanating from her body as well as the tearing of air. She had transformed into a icy-blue bolt of lightning that shot forward.

A lap was four thousand meters, and the two straight parts of the

track were each fifteen hundred meters long. The bends were five hundred meters long, so in a blink of an eye—in less than a second—Mu Yuesheng had traversed a distance of fifteen hundred meters!

What did this mean? This was nearly teleportation. If not for that icy-blue bolt of lightning being so blinding, there was no way to see her charging figure.

Mu Yuesheng's speed had actually reached such a point!

“Wow! What a powerful superpower. No wonder it's an A Class superpower.” Wen Hezheng exclaimed. The three rookies were so astonished by Mu Yuesheng that they stood in their spots.

Their eyes looked at Mu Yuesheng and at this moment, Mu Yuesheng was using a normal speed to run around the bends. That speed was already considered extremely fast compared to normal people, but it was not as amazing.

However, once Mu Yuesheng finished the bend and reached the straight path, her body suffused an icy-blue current and transformed into a bolt of lightning to charge forward. In a blink of an eye, she had once again finished running fifteen hundred meters.

After staring with full focus, Shi Xiaobai finally understood the truth behind the matter.

Mu Yuesheng did not truly become a bolt of lightning. Instead, there were icy-blue electric currents that were sparking around her; hence, when her body surged forward, it made it difficult for others to see her body. The naked eye could only capture the blinding leap in electric current. As such, it looked as though she had transformed into a bolt of lightning.

Mu Yuesheng returned to a normal person's speed once she reached the bend. That speed was approximately equivalent to Wind Walk at the "Familiarized Proficiency" realm.

From the looks of it, Mu Yuesheng's "Lightning Flashstep" could only be used in a straight line.

The three rookies looked at Mu Yuesheng in a daze. Furthermore, Mu Yuesheng was about to finish one lap and arrive beside them. And all of this took about a dozen seconds.

Yama Minamiya nodded his head in relief. It was truly fortunate for [Gaia] to recruit such a rookie. If Mu Yuesheng could rise to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm before the mass selection, it was not impossible for her to be amongst the top ten.

"Why aren't you running? Stop dazing around." Yama Minamiya shouted at the other three rookies.

Wen Hezheng immediately began running with a bitter face. Her hulking figure was in stark contrast to the beam of light that Mu Yuesheng constituted.

Kevin's face was extremely ugly. He never expected that a second-tier organization like [Gaia] could have recruited a rookie like Mu Yuesheng. Just her "Lightning Flashstep" made it obvious how powerful she was. He gritted his teeth and began using "Cloud Traversal Steps" to charge forward. Instantly, he overtook Wen Hezheng. He had to at least fling that darn fat pig and that wretched Shi Xiaobai far behind!

As for Shi Xiaobai, who was still standing at the starting line, he turned his head to focus his eyes on Mu Yuesheng. His eyes were burning with fighting spirit.

He was waiting.

He wanted to wait for her to step onto the same starting line as him.

He wanted to compete with her to see who was faster!

Although in terms of straight line speed, Shi Xiaobai knew that his Crab Steps would be trashed by "Lightning Flashstep", he could completely trash her on the bends.

In that case, it was still an unknown who was faster!

Ever since his Crab Steps reached the "Dominating Refinement" realm, Shi Xiaobai had been waiting for an opponent who could give him pressure, someone who could allow him to surpass his limits.

He never expected that what he thought would be a boring training camp would allow him to encounter such an interesting and powerful opponent.

Shi Xiaobai was burning with fighting spirit. The moment Mu Yuesheng finished her final bend, the “battle” would begin!

“Come on, This King’s Crab Steps of the King is unable to endure the thirst!”

Come, let’s have a good battle!

...

Chapter 165: Be Faster For This King

Mu Yuesheng did not feel contempt for the long-distance running, but she did not have any expectations for it.

She only wanted to finish the hundred laps quickly and continue her Cogitation. As such, she did her best right from the beginning.

However, just as she was about to finish her first round, she saw Shi Xiaobai, who was still standing at the starting line.

Mu Yuesheng was slightly surprised. She had heard rumors of Shi Xiaobai's deeds. The attitude he gave Wen Hezheng was something that she appreciated. As such, she still had a good evaluation of Shi Xiaobai on her mind.

However, when she saw how Shi Xiaobai had yet to run, she was somewhat disappointed. Since she had chose to stay in [Gaia], she had a sense of belonging to [Gaia]. Personally, she wished for a few more excellent figures in the current batch of [Gaia] rookies.

However, if Shi Xiaobai was “scared silly” just because of that, such a state of mind was quite a pity.

When Mu Yuesheng reached the end of the bend, she gave Shi Xiaobai a nonchalant glance before transforming into a bolt of lightning to charge forward. Instantly, she surpassed Wen Hezheng and Kevin. Her speed was truly amazing.

Wen Hezheng watched Mu Yuesheng's back and her eyes flashed with a hint of worship. This was Mu Yuesheng, a person who was labeled by [Gaia] rookies as "the most hardworking Rookie Queen". Her strength and effort rendered people speechless.

At this moment, a sudden gust of wind blew past Wen Hezheng. At the edge of her vision, she saw a bolting figure.

"So fast!" Wen Hezheng exclaimed in surprise.

The speediness was completely different from Mu Yuesheng's undetectable "teleportation". The figure that brushed past her shoulders was as fast as the wind. She could sense its trajectory, hence, she could deeply comprehend how fast it was.

Wen Hezheng hurriedly turned her head to catch a glimpse of that wind-like figure. At a glance, she saw Shi Xiaobai's back, which was moving at an extremely fast speed ahead of her, opening a gap from her. Immediately, she opened her mouth widely.

Awesome, my Lord Shi Xiaobai. I never knew you were so fierce! It looks like I need to reassess you to know if you are a seme or uke!

Tiny stars of worship sparkled in Wen Hezheng's eyes.

As for Kevin, he was staring at Mu Yuesheng, who was around the bend. His eyes were flashing with deep jealousy. He was rendered speechless by her "Lightning Flashstep" along the

straight track. Furthermore, even Mu Yuesheng's speed around the bend far exceeded his. This made Kevin feel humiliated.

He was clearly the rookie representative of his division. His Mind Expanse far exceeded hers, but why was he so lacking so much in the field of flash motion?

Kevin slowly recalled how One-Pun had previously told him that having his "Cloud Traversal Steps" at the "Grasped Basics" realm was doing things in reverse.

So that was the case. So what One-Pun said was true?

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's figure mercilessly overtook Kevin.

Similarly, the wind-like figure that brushed past his shoulders stunned Kevin. As he saw Shi Xiaobai quickly opening up a distance from him, Kevin felt like he had been struck by lightning.

This figure, this footwork...why did it resemble the idol in his heart, "God DogLeading"?

A few curiosities that Kevin had forcefully repressed deep in his heart immediately jumped out—they were both from Gaia, they were both at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, they both called themselves 'This King', and at this moment, they both possessed the same powerful flash motion movement technique?

With so many coincidences lumped together, it was already an

irrefutable fact.

Shi Xiaobai is “God DogLeading”!?

Kevin’s mood turned mixed. On one side was God DogLeading, who he cheered on, while the other side was that wretched Shi Xiaobai. He could not reconcile the two together!

How could he be the same person!?

Impossible!

Kevin roared in his heart. He definitely could not admit the fact that Shi Xiaobai was God DogLeading. God DogLeading was a person who did not bat an eyelid despite facing the Arch-Cardinal and the undead legion!

...

Shi Xiaobai gave his all while using Crab Steps. Although his speed on a straight line path was not as exaggerated as Mu Yuesheng’s, his speed was still shockingly fast. Furthermore, he was relying purely on his movement technique’s speed, and had not relied on his superpower at all!

Yama Minamiya’s eyes lit up and his mouth gaped slightly. Previously, in the free-for-all battle on the field, Shi Xiaobai had used Crab Steps to dodge Hua Pengju and company’s attacks, but Shi Xiaobai did not give his all back then. As such, Yama Minamiya

was unable to produce an accurate judgment.

But at this moment, Shi Xiaobai was giving his all, and Yama Minamiya quickly realized that not only was this Crab Steps, but it had also reached the terrifying realm of “Dominating Refinement”.

And Shi Xiaobai was only at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. What did this mean? It was like a primary school student getting near perfect results on a university exam!

This was the rookie of his [Gaia]! This was his [Annihilation] division's rookie!

Yama Minamiya felt his chest uplifted and felt extremely proud. The way he looked at Shi Xiaobai turned tenderer.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had already reached the bend, while Mu Yuesheng was approaching the last part of the bend.

A scene that shocked Yama Minamiya happened.

Shi Xiaobai was still accelerating!

Heavens, Shi Xiaobai was able to accelerate during the bend, and run faster than while he was running straight!

Shi Xiaobai was indeed accelerating, not because he was holding back on the straight pathway, nor was he better at running on

bends. It was because he saw Mu Yuesheng's figure about to step out of the bend. Shi Xiaobai knew that if he maintained his current speed, there was no way for him to chase up.

As such, at the moment he stepped into the bend, he told himself something. He was shouting to himself in his heart in the form of a roar.

A little bit faster!

Be faster for This King!

At times, breaking through one's limits was this simple. When you encounter an opponent you yearn to surpass, with the strong desire to become stronger reaching a critical value, and the possession of a pure, fiery and unadulterated urge, that was when you could surpass yourself!

Shi Xiaobai was surpassing himself!

So, at the bend's exit, he had overtaken Mu Yuesheng!

At that moment, Yama Minamiya, Wen Hezheng and Kevin, who saw this scene, could not help but stare with bewildered eyes.

However, this was just a short-lived moment. This was because Shi Xiaobai had only surpassed Mu Yuesheng by less than a body's length, and once Mu Yuesheng stepped onto the straight-line stretch, she transformed into a beam of light and appeared at the

other end of the track.

Shi Xiaobai immediately went from having a one meter advantage to being lagging behind by fifteen hundred meters.

Yama Minamiya shook his head with a bitter smile. Wen Hezheng exclaimed with regret, while Kevin's eyes were filled with complex emotions.

At that moment, they all had similar thoughts.

Mu Yuesheng's "Lightning Flashstep" was just too powerful. No one who could compete with her when it came to speed. Although Shi Xiaobai was good, he was still trashed by his opponent.

But at that moment, Shi Xiaobai's figure that stepped onto the straight stretch was still resolutely rushing forward, as though he was slightly faster than before!

Chapter 166: Still Able To Do Another Few Hundred Rounds

Shi Xiaobai's overtaking of Mu Yuesheng only lasted for an instant. This made Mu Yuesheng think that the figure she glimpsed at the corner of her eyes was just an illusion.

But soon, she realized that she was wrong. It was not an illusion!

Because at every bend, Shi Xiaobai would overtake her at the end of the bend. It was a small distance that could be neglected since every time she came in front of the straight stretch, she would immediately open a distance between them. However, Shi Xiaobai was able to chase her at the bends, and even overtake her!

What did this mean?

This meant that Shi Xiaobai's speed around the bends far exceeded hers. The amount he exceeded her was enough to make up for the difference of fifteen hundred meters along the straight stretch!

She was using an A Class superpower, while Shi Xiaobai was only using his flash motion movement technique to stay at a comparable speed to hers!

What realm was his flash motion movement technique at to be able to do so?

At this moment, the corner of Mu Yuesheng's mouth revealed a smile. The person who liked a serious opponent was not limited to Shi Xiaobai. She was one too!

Since Shi Xiaobai was not only catching up to her and even attempted to overtake her, how could she be willing to accept the status quo?

She wanted to become faster. Be it on the straight path or the bends, she wanted to surpass herself and leave Shi Xiaobai in the dust!

Mu Yuesheng accelerated!

At the next bend, Shi Xiaobai was just one body's distance behind her!

Shi Xiaobai similarly had a pleasant smile on his lips. This was just perfect. Compared to a fixed goal, he preferred to chase after a figure that was constantly accelerating.

This feeling was very good!

Two rounds later, Shi Xiaobai managed to overtake Mu Yuesheng once again at the end of the bend!

However, two bends later, Mu Yuesheng once again became

faster, causing Shi Xiaobai to fall behind her once more!

The duo repeatedly overtook each other. They were both surpassing each other and themselves. No one was overwhelmed by the other, nor did they seem discouraged. Even if they fell behind, they still had the resolute confidence that they could surpass the other!

As Yama Minamiya watched the scene, he went from shock to admiration to gratification to numbness. Finally, it transformed into a sigh. It was truly great for there to be two little monsters like that.

As for Kevin and Wen Hezheng, who had been left in the dust by the two monsters lap after lap, were long numb to this. They were cognizant of the sorrowful reality that they did not belong to the same world.

More importantly, their feet had gone sore from their running, and they were finding it tougher for every step they took. They finally faced an important question.

How were they to finish running a hundred laps?

At the same time, they suddenly thought of a ridiculous question.

How was Shi Xiaobai going to maintain this speed and complete a hundred laps?

Three kilometers of each lap was completed using Mu Yuesheng's superpower, which did not deplete much of her stamina. So, she just needed to sprint a kilometer per lap.

As for Shi Xiaobai?

He was sprinting at full speed like a madman from beginning to end. Regardless of how good his stamina was, how long could he last?

This question was naturally on the minds of Yama Minamiya and Mu Yuesheng.

Yama Minamiya also found it impressive that Shi Xiaobai was able to keep up with Mu Yuesheng. Being able to maintain his full speed while sprinting for thirty to forty laps was enough.

Mu Yuesheng was feeling a slight bit of regret, and simultaneously felt somewhat ashamed of her power that was bordering on 'cheating'. If she could, she was willing to fight Shi Xiaobai fair and square.

Unfortunately, the moment she stopped using her 'superpower', Shi Xiaobai would leave her in the dust.

He was a terrifying but worthy opponent. It made her do her best, preventing her from admitting defeat but she did not have the desire to win.

If possible, she wished that this ‘competition’ could end in a tie, with the situation coming to a temporary close with them being equals!

But clearly, Shi Xiaobai’s stamina could not last for a hundred laps. He would eventually stop as a result of exhaustion, but she would not slow down because of that!

However....

Shi Xiaobai was a person that could not be measured through common sense. The four other people present neglected one matter—when it came to Shi Xiaobai, anything was possible!

As such, they deserved to be slapped painfully in the face.

Shi Xiaobai finished running a hundred laps at full speed!

This was all thanks to the powerful endurance the ability, Unleaking Turtle Aura, gave him and the rebound in his stamina coming from This Turtle Is Hardest, as well as the stamina allocation Shi Xiaobai had figured out himself.

And finally, the most important thing was Shi Xiaobai’s will!

Even though Unleaking Turtle Aura could not withstand the burden of his stamina being drained, Shi Xiaobai still clenched his teeth and sprinted at full speed forward!

And the final outcome of this four hundred kilometer race was just as Mu Yuesheng wished.

No one beat anyone. They were attempting to beat each other, but no one succeeded. Instead, they had defeated themselves numerous times!

Shi Xiaobai felt that his Crab Steps had improved a notch once again. Although he was still far from the “Crest of Perfection” realm, there was an obvious improvement.

As for Mu Yuesheng’s ‘Lightning Steps’ she used around the bends, it was constantly improving from the realm of “Familiarized Proficiency”. She was almost at the threshold of “Exemplary Mastery”.

There was no loser, as both of them were winners.

Yama Minamiya was rather satisfied with this. Despite being usually unsmiling, his face was now all smiles.

As Mu Yuesheng exceeded Shi Xiaobai by one round at the beginning, Shi Xiaobai was still lagging one lap behind her after she was done with her hundredth lap.

At that moment, Mu Yuesheng did not quickly find a spot to continue her Cogitation as per usual. Instead, she began ‘wasting time’ by standing in her spot and watch Shi Xiaobai finish running

his last lap.

At the last lap, Shi Xiaobai passed by Wen Hezheng. The fat chick was panting and her footsteps were turning heavy. She was on the brink of collapsing, but she had only finished twenty laps.

Shi Xiaobai ran past Kevin. At that moment, the blond youth's breathing was disorderly. His speed was much slower, and he had only run thirty laps.

When Shi Xiaobai approached the finish line, Mu Yuesheng nodded her head at him before she prepared to leave.

Yama Minamiya immediately walked up in preparation to check Shi Xiaobai's physical condition. Shi Xiaobai was clearly suppressing his limits!

But at this moment, Shi Xiaobai made a surprising move!

Shi Xiaobai did not stop at the finish line. Under Mu Yuesheng's surprised gaze and Yama Minamiya's cry, he continued running his hundred and first lap!

With firm steps, without any breaks or slowing down, he began running his hundred and first lap!

What was...Shi Xiaobai doing?

Mu Yuesheng and Yama Minamiya were completely puzzled. At the same time, they fixated their sights on Shi Xiaobai.

The truth was quickly revealed.

When Shi Xiaobai passed by Wen Hezheng, he dropped his speed to its lowest.

He patted Wen Hezheng, who was about to faint from exhaustion, on the shoulder heavily and shouted loudly, “Come on!”

After cheering her on, Shi Xiaobai charged forward once again.

At that moment, Yama Minamiya and Mu Yuesheng were moved by Shi Xiaobai’s actions.

Yama Minamiya said, “What a good child.”

Mu Yuesheng said, “A truly worthy opponent.”

The person who was most moved was Wen Hezheng. She was extremely touched as an inexplicable force welled up inside her. With Shi Xiaobai’s cheering her on, she felt that she was given energy to persist on!

Hey? It seems like...I fucking have more strength now?

Wen Hezheng stared, surprised to realize that her exhausted body now had the energy to run a bit more. Although there was only a tiny bit of energy, it was a true existence.

Ah, was this the power of being touched?

This was Lord Shi Xiaobai's cheering dance?

At this moment, Wen Hezheng was able to take another stride!

...

Shi Xiaobai, who quickly finished his one hundred and first lap, had his eyes burning and laughing in his heart.

He had finally found an ingenious method to train his Massage Technique of God!

Now, there was an infinitely tired fat chick that was in desperate need of energy waiting for his Massage Technique of God to restore her!

That heavy pat and light pinch lasted only for a moment, so the amount of energy restored was still relatively minute.

But from the looks of it, he could do it another few hundred times!

Shi Xiaobai was roaring with laughter in his heart!

Chapter 167: The Choice Of Courting Death

The Massage Technique of God was an extremely awesome technique, and because it was awesome, it was willful!

To improve the Massage Technique of God's proficiency, it was pointless to crazily massage a random person for twenty-four hours straight. The resulting improvement would be negligible. Only after the massage resulted in effects would the Massage Technique of God be improved. Furthermore, the more obvious the effect, the greater the proficiency gained.

Taking the present Wen Hezheng as an example, just as Wen Hezheng was feeling exhausted, Shi Xiaobai just needed to give Wen Hezheng a light squeeze—"Divine Massage of Giving Spring to Withered Wood". This made Wen Hezheng, who was like a fish about to die of thirst, feel like she was watered with a pail of clear water. The results of the massage was understandably much better than normal.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai choose to do the best thing he could do at the moment in time. Every lap he finished running, he would give Wen Hezheng a "Divine Massage of Giving Spring to Withered Wood" whenever he passed her. Wen Hezheng would immediately feel invigorated, and temporarily have her strength restored to continue her running. Shi Xiaobai's proficiency in the Massage Technique of God was improving as a result.

Furthermore, when Shi Xiaobai passed Wen Hezheng in his subsequent lap, it was the moment when Wen Hezheng returned to a state of exhaustion, so the effects of "Divine Massage of Giving

Spring to Withered Wood” were excellent.

In summary, Shi Xiaobai had gone to painstaking efforts in order to improve his “Massage Technique of God”. As he ran lap after lap, he would pat Wen Hezheng on the shoulder and shout an encouraging, “come on”, whenever he passed her.

Shi Xiaobai even wanted to replicate the same trick on Kevin, but unfortunately Blondy Narcissist was ungrateful. He immediately cursed at Shi Xiaobai to “scram” like a tiny and wary injured beast.

Time continued to pass.

Mu Yuesheng had already found a spot to enter Cogitation with her eyes closed. However, it was located not too far away from the track. As such, she could hear every “come on” shout from Shi Xiaobai, immediately filling her with emotion.

Maybe, she was astonished at Shi Xiaobai’s stamina, or maybe it was the friendship Shi Xiaobai had for Wen Hezheng. If Wen Hezheng was a beauty, it could be speculated that Shi Xiaobai’s actions were malicious in nature. However, not only was Wen Hezheng not a beauty, she was a fat and short fatso.

Furthermore, from the way Wen Hezheng previously greeted Shi Xiaobai and the words they exchanged, it was obvious they did not know each other previously. They did not have many years of friendship.

Then, such a matter was worth pondering.

Why was Shi Xiaobai willing to run hundreds of laps just to encourage Wen Hezheng?

Was it because they were all [Gaia] rookies?

Was it because they had a common sense of honor before they faced members from other hero organizations during the mass selection?

If that was the case, that would be extremely good.

With this thought in mind, Mu Yuesheng could not help but smile.

Yama Minamiya was equally astonished at Shi Xiaobai's stamina. The little monster had run more than a few hundred laps. Although he was not sprinting at full speed like before, his speed was still not any much slower.

Wouldn't he feel tired after running a few hundred laps while maintaining this speed?

Yama Minamiya was even more astonished by Wen Hezheng's willpower. He knew very well that Wen Hezheng had long reached her limits. It was likely she would collapse onto the ground at any time, but every time Shi Xiaobai passed her and cheered her on, she would immediately squeeze out whatever potential she had

left, and run forward again as though she was rejuvenated by springwater.

What powers gave her the ability to surpass herself, overcome fatigue and spur her on to exceed her limits?

It was Shi Xiaobai's encouragement and more likely her will!

If encouragement could make an athlete have a burst of power, then wouldn't sporting competitions be a battle of whose cheerleaders were better?

Everything depended on the candidates willpower!

After receiving an encouragement, the ability to convert this encouragement into energy was the manifestation of an athlete's willpower!

At this moment, Yama Minamiya could tell that Wen Hezheng's willpower was heaven-defying. Every encouragement Shi Xiaobai gave her was converted by her into energy. Once or twice was fine, but for it to consecutively happen a hundred times or even more, how indomitable was her willpower?

With this willpower, how could she have eaten so much till she became a pig? She could have lost weight at any moment!

Yama Minamiya was left speechless in wonder. He decided to find a chance to talk to the fat pig who happened to be the Division

Minister of [Order].

You may have all sorts of treasures, but surely it's too much to make a person with such willpower to eat her way into becoming a fat pig.

At this moment, Kevin had finished running seventy-three laps, but he was nearing his limits. He was pretty much walking, but he was also very strong-willed. However, it manifested in the form of his resolute roar of “scram” whenever Shi Xiaobai passed him.

And at this moment, Wen Hezheng was already in the midst of running her final lap. She herself found it unbelievable that she was able to finish running the entire distance. She could only credit this to Lord Shi Xiaobai's power.

If not for Lord Shi Xiaobai's encouragement, she would have long slammed to the ground out of exhaustion. His encouragement gave her a burst of energy every time.

Although Wen Hezheng found it somewhat weird, it did not help but move her.

Lord Shi Xiaobai had ran a few hundreds laps in order to cheer her on!

He was willing to go this far for the ugly her who he had just met and lacked any merits!

If she was a beauty, if she was as excellent as Mu Yuesheng or Riko, then...she would definitely help Shi Xiaobai find the perfect match.

Lord Shi Xiaobai, heterosexuality does not end well. There would only be happiness if male gods are matched to male gods!

When Wen Hezheng reached the finishing line, she watched Shi Xiaobai on the track with teary eyes. She said in her heart—Lord Shi Xiaobai, I like you. I will definitely find you the best male god. You must be happy!

...

Shi Xiaobai was of course feeling happy. Although he had run so many laps and his body was feeling exhausted to the point of Unleaking Turtle Aura being unable to inhibit the soreness in his legs, he was feeling happy in his heart.

This was because his Massage Technique of God was about to break through to the “Familiarized Proficiency” realm. This was a very significant upgrade. Everything was worth it!

At this moment, a familiar voice rang out in his mind.

“Wen Hezheng’s affection for you has reached 80 (Like).”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He was somewhat astonished why the Absolute Choice system would inform him of this. Could it be...

The system's voice immediately resounded once again.

“Kevin's affection for Wen Hezheng is currently at -100
(Extremely close to hatred)

Shi Xiaobai curled his mouth. Indeed, Big Bro System was being naughty.

Back when Shi Xiaobai faced his Absolute Choice, he had naturally chosen the better reward which was harder in difficulty —[In three days, make Kevin's affection for Wen Hezheng reach 80 (Like)]

And the reason why the system informed him of the current standing was simple. There was no other reason than telling him —You know now that you have courted death, right?

If you chose Choice 2, you would have already succeeded.

By choosing Choice 1, you still have a long way to go!

Alright, to go from -100 to +80, the drastic improvement in affection that needed to occur in three days was simply wishful thinking.

However, who was Shi Xiaobai?

“There is nothing This King can’t do.”

The fun has only just begun!

Chapter 168: Knocking On The Wrong Door

Eventually, Kevin failed to finish running a hundred laps. He collapsed to the ground out of exhaustion on his eightieth lap. Shi Xiaobai, who he had refused many times, did not forcefully use Massage Technique of God on him to “extend his life”. Although Kevin’s current state was perfect for raising his Massage Technique of God’s proficiency level, Shi Xiaobai did not like to take advantage of others and do something that was strongly against their will.

Just imagine if you were in his shoes. If you were suddenly filled with energy after being patted on the shoulder and having “come on” said to you by someone you hated greatly, what would you think? How would you view yourself?

Would you sorrowfully believe that you were actually a “little slut” who was reluctant in the heart, but physically honest? Would you even give up and really become a “little slut”?

Don’t do unto others what you don’t want others to do unto you!

Shi Xiaobai sighed and he eventually held back his desires to use the Massage Technique of God on him.

Yama Minamiya did not say a word about Kevin’s failure to complete the course. The value of four hundred kilometers was just a number to probe the standards and limits of the four.

Mu Yuesheng was within expectations, powerful and stable.

Shi Xiaobai astonished him. He could not help but sigh that division [Annihilation] had produced an impressive genius this year. He decided that he would lower his threshold as a father if it was possible for Shi Xiaobai and Riko to develop a relationship.

Wen Hezheng was the one who surprised him the most. He was of the impression that the fat chick would be the first to collapse, but he never expected her to possess indomitable will. With such willpower, as long as she was given sufficient motivation, anything was possible.

Kevin did not exceed his expectations but he had also disappointed him. Before this child collapsed, his eyes were not burning with resolute fighting spirit but disbelief and truculence. He could not believe that Wen Hezheng had managed to finish a hundred laps, and was unwilling to accept that he was in last place. Right to the very end, he did not realize that for this four hundred kilometer long-distance run, the person he needed to gain victory over was none other than himself.

Yama Minamiya sighed in his heart. If the organization senate members truly chose long-distance running as the first elimination filter, the distance would definitely be more than four hundred kilometers. There might even be a time limit. If that happened, Kevin and Wen Hezheng would no doubt be effectively eliminated. And three days was not enough to significantly raise their stamina at all.

Yama Minamiya personally carried Kevin to the medical room.

He was secretly observing Kevin, but to his great disappointment, the child's eyes were only filled with disbelief and truculence, without a trace of unyieldingness and indignation.

Even though Kevin was not a rookie from his division, Yama Minamiya could not help but feel compassion for him as a fellow [Gaia] personnel.

After all, Kevin was a child who lacked willpower and was just too self-centered. He was like a flower in a greenhouse, but sooner or later, he would experience failure and defeat. He might feel frustration and sadness, but he would be made aware of his shortcomings, before obtaining true growth.

However, the failure Kevin suffered today was not serious nor trivial. He did not look straight at his failure, so he was destined to never obtain true growth.

Yama Minamiya attended to Kevin, who was resting on a sick bed with his eyes closed, for a while. Finally, with a sigh, he turned around and walked out.

However, when he reached the entrance, he suddenly heard a muffled cry coming from under a blanket behind him.

Yama Minamiya was stunned. Kevin was crying?

The corner of Yama Minamiya's mouth curled into a smile.

It appears that this child is not as terrible as he imagined.

...

Although the three-day training camp was chosen to be held in Steel City, [Gaia] specially prepared places for them to stay in order to deepen the relationships between the trainees.

It was given the nice name of training cohabitation, which had the goal to inculcate feelings.

But unfortunately, Kevin did not appear at dinner time. As for Mu Yuesheng, she took a few hurried mouthfuls of her dinner before returning to her room to continue her Cogitation. Wen Hezheng finished her highly nutritious dinner in about ten seconds before leaving once again. Clearly, she was going to another restaurant to have a feast.

As such, Shi Xiaobai was the only one left in the dining hall during dinner. Of course, Shi Xiaobai did not have any thoughts on this matter. He too wanted to return to his room for Cogitation after he was satiated.

As a result, this period of time in the evening which was meant for the four rookies to interact appeared somewhat redundant.

...

At night, 10pm.

Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes and woke up from Cogitation. He changed his clothes and walked out his room.

Shi Xiaobai walked silently along the hallway and passed by Kevin's room. Quickly, he reached another hallway.

There were two rooms that were still lit along the hallway.

“Eh? Which room was it?”

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily at a loss. He knew that Wen Hezheng's room was along the hallway in front of him, but he did not know which room it was.

Shi Xiaobai quickly gave up thinking. Without any hesitation, he walked towards the room closest to him and knocked forcefully on the door.

“Knock! Knock! Knock!”

After knocking thrice, Shi Xiaobai stopped and waited silently.

After a moment, the door opened, revealing half a pretty face. There was a hint of surprise in the brown pair of eyes.

“It's you? Is there something?”

Mu Yuesheng was slightly surprised.

Why was Shi Xiaobai visiting her at this time of the night?

Shi Xiaobai immediately shook his head and said, “Sorry, This King knocked on the wrong door.”

After expressing his apology with a nod, he walked to the other room along the hallway, and once again, he knocked on the door thrice.

The door quickly opened, and Wen Hezheng also exclaimed in surprise, “Lord Shi Xiaobai? Why are you...”

Shi Xiaobai directly said, “This King has something to talk to you about.”

Wen Hezheng immediately invited him saying, “Oh, please come in.”

Shi Xiaobai did not hesitate and directly walked into the room.

Mu Yuesheng frowned slightly as she noticed Wen Hezheng closing the door.

She was curious over Shi Xiaobai’s reason for finding Wen Hezheng at this time. However, curiosity was something that

wasted a great deal of time.

Mu Yuesheng did not want to waste time, so she closed the door and went back into her room. Sitting on her bed, she continued her Cogitation.

There was a significant difference between the ninth and tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Furthermore, they were separated by a huge step.

Mu Yuesheng knew that if she did not rise to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, it was unlikely she could stand out during the mass selection.

She liked [Gaia]. Even though she did not have any friends because she spent all her time in cultivation, she still liked [Gaia].

There was no other reason. The only reason was because she lived here and breathed its air. She felt that it was her responsibility to bring it honor.

So if it was possible, she wanted to accomplish something for [Gaia].

Mu Yuesheng was immersed in her Cogitation. Although her meditative state was rather shallow, it was a result of her Mind Expanse. However, over the years, she had developed the ability to focus on Cogitation despite being in a shallow state of meditation.

Suddenly, Mu Yuesheng heard a strange sound!

Chapter 169: How Can You Be Such A Hooligan

As she was immersed in Cogitation, the sound she heard seemed like it was isolated by a barrier. She did not hear it clearly the first time, thinking that it was just an illusion.

But soon, that strange sound was constantly produced and it became louder!

Mu Yuesheng opened her eyes in shock as she broke out of her cogitative state.

This sound was coming from the next room.

Although there was a thick wall separating them, the sound was just too loud. Hence, despite the sound-proofing, Mu Yuesheng could hear it clearly.

As Mu Yuesheng listened carefully to the incessant sounds, her face drastically changed.

This sound was as clear and soothing as a bell's chimes. It was Wen Hezheng's voice!

Furthermore, this voice...sounded...very "lewd"!

The voice was filled with undisguised pleasure, with each overwhelming “ah” sound interspersed amidst short breaths. It was an irrepressible moan of happiness that came directly from the soul.

Even if Mu Yuesheng had never had any experience, she quickly guessed of a possibility.

No, this is no longer a possibility.

For Wen Hezheng to produce such sounds, other than doing shameful things that adults like to do, what else could it be?

Heavens, Shi Xiaobai and Wen Hezheng...they are actually..

Mu Yuesheng could not believe this absurd matter, but as Wen Hezheng’s ecstatic and overwhelming moans kept echoing in her ears, Mu Yuesheng could not help but face this frightening reality.

It had to be said that Wen Hezheng’s “bed calls” were rather pleasant to the ears. Male biological creatures who passed by without knowing any better would probably have their beast blood in them boil.

That’s not right. This is not the point. The point is...Shi Xiaobai is said to be only thirteen years old? And with Wen Hezheng’s body...Shi Xiaobai actually does not mind it?

Can it be...true love?

Right, it has to be the case. No wonder Shi Xiaobai was willing to run hundreds of laps in the afternoon to cheer Wen Hezheng on. So the reason was because of his true love for her!

Mu Yuesheng could still hear Wen Hezheng's overwhelming moans despite covering her ears. Her face began to blush. Even though she had a stubborn and unyielding character, she could not tolerate the sounds.

Sigh, although it is not healthy for them to do such things at such a young age, it is still true love after all!

How could she wrench her heart to stop, report or break them apart?

Mu Yuesheng took a deep breath before quickly leaving the room. She could not tolerate listening to the sounds, much less continue her Cogitation. She decided to go out to calm herself down by experiencing the cold winds outside.

After Mu Yuesheng reached the hallway, she did not go far. Instead, she stood guard around the corner of the hallway. If Yama Minamiya happened to walk pass, hearing Wen Hezheng's moaning would probably lead to something bad.

This was a love that was doomed to twists and turns.

But since it was true love, she did not wish that they would be

ruthlessly separated.

Mu Yuesheng's eyes flashed with a look of helplessness. Although they were not friends, she knew their names and appearances. She felt that she had the responsibility to protect their love.

After an unknown period of time.

Wen Hezheng's door was finally opened.

Shi Xiaobai walked out and walked towards the corner of the hallway, and quickly met Mu Yuesheng, who was standing around the corner.

Mu Yuesheng could tell at a glance that Shi Xiaobai was beaming with a contented smile.

That was a smile of satisfaction that said, "I had a great time tonight".

Mu Yuesheng sighed in her heart.

As long as they were happy.

Anything else was not important.

"I think, we need to have a good talk."

Mu Yuesheng stopped Shi Xiaobai. Although she had acquiesced to this forbidden love, Mu Yuesheng felt that as someone in the know, she had the responsibility to have a good chat with Shi Xiaobai. She wanted to tell him of the possible difficulties that he would face for this love of his and tell him that he needed courage to persist on.

“Follow me.”

Mu Yuesheng turned and walked out of the hallway. This private matter needed to be discussed where there was no one around. Although it would waste some time, Mu Yuesheng did not feel like this was a waste of time.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned and somewhat puzzled, but he followed her without any hesitation.

...

...

The two of them quickly arrived at the four kilometer track. It was late in the night, with spotlights illuminating the track. It was bright but cold and bleak.

“Just now...you and Wen Hezheng were doing something...very private?” Mu Yuesheng asked Shi Xiaobai for a final confirmation while standing several meters away from him.

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback. He had just used “Massage Technique of God” to give Wen Hezheng a full-body massage. Wen Hezheng seemed to find it extremely comfortable and constantly made strange sounds. It appeared to have reached Mu Yuesheng’s room.

Shi Xiaobai considered for a moment.

Doing the full-body massage for Wen Hezheng naturally had to do with the Absolute Choice, so the Absolute Choice should be considered something private, right?

“That’s right.” Shi Xiaobai nodded.

Mu Yuesheng immediately exhaled, as though her mind was filled with complex emotions.

It was partly because she felt helpless that the truth was as she had thought, while another reason for her to heave a sigh of relief was because Shi Xiaobai had frankly acknowledged it.

“Are you being serious?” Mu Yuesheng asked seriously.

“Of course.”

Without a doubt, Shi Xiaobai was seriously completing his choice’s mission. After all, it determined if he would receive a C-

level reward or a C-level punishment.

“How many times have you done such things?”

Mu Yuesheng was suddenly very curious.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. Was ‘such things’ referring to using “Massage Technique of God” on Wen Hezheng?

So she had found out?

That’s right, he had used it so many times that it was normal to be found out.

“Probably a few hundred times. As for the exact number, This King has forgotten.”

Shi Xiaobai did not feel like the Massage Technique of God was something worth concealing. He had done it in secret previously because he was worried that Yama Minamiya would discover that he was helping Wen Hezheng cheat. If he was banned from massaging her, it would not be worth it.

“A few hundred times!?”

Mu Yuesheng drew a gasp when she heard this.

They had actually done it a few hundred times. So that encounter in the morning was just faked, so as to conceal this horrible truth?

A few hundred times. Even if they did it once a day, that was also a year's time. They were so young yet they have already...

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly asked, "Do you want to give it a try? This King's technique is something that the Heretic Gods of the various worlds marvel at!"

Shi Xiaobai's mind churned.

This was a good opportunity to rope in another experimental customer for his "Massage Technique of God"!

"What!?"

Mu Yuesheng could not believe her ears.

He actually...actually...actually...asked if she wanted to give it a try...and even claimed that his technique was very good!

How...how could he be this shameless?

How can you be such a hooligan?

"How can you be like this? How can you let Wen Hezheng

down?” Mu Yuesheng said in disbelief. Her expression was slowly turning ashen.

So Shi Xiaobai was such a shameless person. He was not being wholehearted to Wen Hezheng to begin with.

Shi Xiaobai was startled.

How did he let Wen Hezheng down?

That’s not right. He had indeed...apparently...let Wen Hezheng down. After all, to complete his Absolute Choice, he had to make Kevin’s affection for Wen Hezheng reach the level of liking. Being liked by Kevin was something that did not appear to be a good thing.

Seeing Shi Xiaobai’s expression change, Mu Yuesheng sighed deeply. She felt that Shi Xiaobai could still be redeemed. Maybe he had just gone astray, so with a thought, she said, “Shi Xiaobai, Wen Hezheng might be...but she’s a nice person with an outgoing personality. She’s a good girl who is lively and kind. Since you have already done such things to her, you must take responsibility for it. However, you are still young, so you must assume the responsibilities of a boyfriend. Shi Xiaobai, Wen Hezheng is your girlfriend, so you should be wholehearted and dedicated to her. You should take good care of her.”

Although Shi Xiaobai had tried his moves on her, she wished that Shi Xiaobai was still redeemable and would not hurt himself as well as others.

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback and asked in a puzzled manner, “When did Wen Hezheng become This King’s girlfriend?”

Girlfriends are terrible creatures. One was enough. How could he make Wen Hezheng his girlfriend as well?

“What do you mean?”

Mu Yuesheng stared with widened eyes.

Shi Xiaobai was now denying?

Wen Hezheng was not his girlfriend?

Then how could they do that sort of thing?

“Cough, This King already has a girlfriend. This King thinks that he has enough!”

Shi Xiaobai recognized Kali as a girlfriend in his heart. After all, they had signed a lovers’ pact 1.0 and 2.0. Furthermore, Kali had slowly made him feel that the creature known as “girlfriend” wasn’t as terrible as Yang Wei described.

“You! You are actually two-timing!?”

Mu Yuesheng's anger immediately began to boil.

This bastard already had a girlfriend, yet he had done those things to Wen Hezheng, and even asked if she wanted to give it a try.

He was a hooligan whose lust defied the heavens!

“It looks like there is nothing worth talking about between the two of us.” Mu Yuesheng sneered as icy-blue electric currents burst out of the air, dancing around her like manic icy-blue pixies.

Hooligans have to die!

Chapter 170: A Hooligan Unfortunately

The icy-blue electric bolts danced around Mu Yuesheng's body vibrantly while emitting sizzling sounds. Under the spotlights at night, it made her appear extremely cold and dangerous.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback, unable to understand Mu Yuesheng's sudden reason for wanting to fight him.

However, Shi Xiaobai was not alarmed by this, but instead happy. Wasn't this the lead up to receiving and inflicting damage?

If it was receiving and inflicting damage, why not?

When Mu Yuesheng noticed how Shi Xiaobai did not show the slightest bit of contrition, but instead became excited when she produced her superpower, she immediately became angrier!

“Go to hell!”

With her side facing Shi Xiaobai, Mu Yuesheng stretched out her right hand at him!

A Radiant Charged Bolt took shape. It was in the form of an icy-blue bolt of lightning and it shot out at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai's pupils contracted slightly. He immediately turned alert as his intuition told him that with his present physical

defense, he was unable to withstand the direct strike of Radiant Charged Bolt!

It was best he dodged this attack!

Shi Xiaobai immediately began using Crab Steps, and retreated backwards at an extremely fast speed.

“Boom!”

Radiant Charged Bolt struck the ground, immediately resulting in a deafening explosion. A gap was blasted through the steel grounds by the electric current.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. This destructive power far exceeded Hua Pengju and his four minions. Not only did the electric bolt deal voltage damage, it also contained an explosive power within. With his Mortal Body Level 1's defense, there was no way he could withstand it!

Even with the endurance technique of Unleaking Turtle Aura, he was bound to be seriously injured. The simple Radiant Charged Bolt far exceeded the limits Shi Xiaobai could withstand.

When Mu Yuesheng saw how Shi Xiaobai had easily dodged her attack, she was slightly startled. However, when she recalled the level of proficiency Shi Xiaobai had shown with his movement technique in the afternoon, she immediately understood.

Although this hooligan is a hooligan, he is extremely powerful.

“A hooligan unfortunately!”

Mu Yuesheng stared angrily as another Radiant Charged Bolt shot out from her palm!

“Boom!”

Shi Xiaobai dodged once again, causing the ground to rupture again.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes gradually began to turn serious. He slowly rid the thought of using “Unleaking Turtle Aura” and “This Turtle Is Hardest” to temper his body from his mind.

This girl with short brown hair forced him to treat this battle seriously.

He had to give his all in this battle, a battle without any opportunistic tricks.

“Very well. This King is willing to seriously fight you!”

The corner of Shi Xiaobai's lips suffused a smile as his eyes ignited with fighting spirit. Ever since he had Crab Steps and the Filthy Turtle Divine Technique, he rarely treated battles with other rookies seriously. However, Mu Yuesheng had given him the

desire to attack!

Mu Yuesheng's gaze was stern. Her attacks had only just begun.

Mu Yuesheng coldly shouted and suddenly, multiple Radiant Charged Bolts shot out from her palm. Amidst the icy-blue bolts was a faint goldenness that constantly exploded in the track under the night sky.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Shi Xiaobai constantly dodged the icy-blue bolts as his figure appeared and disappeared under the cold spotlights. His eyes were focused and cold. He constantly dodged the bolts by a sliver, as though he was a cheetah that was constantly dodging a rain of arrows.

Decisive, quick, calm, without any additional motion. As he constantly proceeded forward amidst the Radiant Charged Bolts, he was like a graceful dancer, but also a cold monk.

Even though Mu Yuesheng was angry and disgusted by Shi Xiaobai, she had to admit that Shi Xiaobai's unperturbed dodging poses were nearly perfect.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Explosions constantly rang as icy-blue lightning sparked incessantly above Mu Yuesheng's body. Her brown hair began to

rise up slightly, as her brown eyes had an unwavering calm. Even though all the icy-blue bolts were dodged easily by Shi Xiaobai, she never felt discouraged.

As Shi Xiaobai dodged, he was moving forward. Suddenly, with a burst of speed, he appeared beside Mu Yuesheng.

“Massage Technique of God!”

Shi Xiaobai had used a speed that was like a sudden clap of thunder which left no time for one to cover one’s ears to reach out his right hand to place on Mu Yuesheng’s shoulder!

The Massage Technique of God had several miraculous usages. However, its most basic usage was—attacking!

Against the evil demonic claws Shi Xiaobai reached out, Mu Yuesheng remained expressionless. She gently inched her way backwards before instantly transforming into a bolt of lightning, appearing a hundred meters away.

This was Lightning Flashstep!

Shi Xiaobai’s right hand missed its mark, and before he could stabilize his body in mid air, a Radiant Charged Bolt charged at him!

Having used Lightning Flashstep to dodge Shi Xiaobai’s attack, Mu Yuesheng had simultaneously shot out Radiant Charged Bolt!

Shi Xiaobai, who was still stuck in mid air, forcefully twisted his body as his pupils violently contracted. He managed to dodge in a breathtaking manner, but the cloth around his waist had been grazed. His skin was slightly charred, as a plume of hot white smoke rose up under the cold lights.

Shi Xiaobai felt a slight pain as “Unleaking Turtle Aura” and “This Turtle Is Hardest” immediately activated.

Before his body even landed, Shi Xiaobai had already quickly reversed his footwork, taking the risk of nearly twisting his heel in order to retreat completely.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Three electric bolts immediately blasted the spot where Shi Xiaobai was standing.

Shi Xiaobai had narrowly been hit. However, he could not help but smile. Against WindWithoutTrace’s Wind Three Strikes, Xiao Xiao’s Crimson Netherworld and even against hundreds, if not thousands of skeleton soldiers, he had never been in such a wretched state.

However, the reason why he was in such a wretched state had to do with Mu Yuesheng’s personal ability. However, more importantly, a weakness of Shi Xiaobai had finally been revealed.

He was over-confident with his offensive abilities!

Be it the Pig Slaughtering Knife's ability to disintegrate multiple skeleton soldiers or a bone dragon in a single chop, or his Heaven Collapsing Earth Shattering Turtle Empyrean Punch being able to destroy thousands of bat riders, Shi Xiaobai's attacks had never missed.

As a result, he had never considered his motions after missing an attack!

Against Mu Yuesheng, it was natural that he would not use a sure-kill knife technique like Pig Slaughtering Knife. Furthermore, he did not carry a knife with him. As for Turtle-speed Divine Punch, it took too long to charge up, so it was an offensive skill that was unsuitable for a one-on-one duel.

As a result, Shi Xiaobai's only remaining offensive technique was the Massage Technique of God he had just learned.

However, the Massage Technique of God was not only a melee technique, its attacking methods were tricky. With "Lightning Flashstep", Mu Yuesheng was able to dodge it very easily.

Furthermore...this was the first time an attack from Shi Xiaobai missed!

He was suddenly left in a trance, which resulted in him unable to dodge Mu Yuesheng's Radiant Charged Bolt in time.

The burn wound on his waist and having nearly broken his heel was the result of Shi Xiaobai's momentary trance.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes sparkled with hot beams of light. Every exposure of his weakness was an opportunity to grow stronger!

“Boom!”

Another Radiant Charged Bolt came blazing at him once again. Shi Xiaobai dodged it, and with a faster and more decisive speed at dodging the bolt, he charged straight at Mu Yuesheng.

Once again, he suddenly used an explosive speed to arrive beside Mu Yuesheng!

Once again, an icy-blue bolt flashed and Mu Yuesheng was instantly a hundred meters away.

Once again, Mu Yuesheng's shot out a Radiant Charged Bolt before retreating!

But something different happened.

At the moment Shi Xiaobai's right hand missed, his feet did not stop. Instead, his body dodged the bolt in an instant as he charged at Mu Yuesheng!

Chapter 171: The Kick At The Threshold

Just a single clash allowed Shi Xiaobai to realize a weakness that had never been exposed before. Furthermore, he had used an extremely short amount of time to overcome his shortcomings, as though he had completed a new metamorphosis.

Shi Xiaobai charged at Mu Yuesheng with a broad smile.

As Mu Yuesheng went through the patterns of coldly attacking and retreating, Shi Xiaobai's dodging poses became faster and stranger. Every time she used "Lightning Flashstep" to dodge, he would be tightly on her tail like a maggot.

After an attack failed, he would decisively and calmly produce his next attack. He was completely different from his previous wretched state!

"This hooligan...is improving."

Mu Yuesheng slowly began to feel a bit of pressure, but her eyes were as firm and resolute as usual. This was because not only was Shi Xiaobai improving in battle, she was improving as well!

...

In the solitude of the night, a thin layer of fog descended onto the illuminated track.

However, on the broad running track, there were two figures chasing each other in a brawl.

Shi Xiaobai's footwork was strange and elegant, with cool and composed poses. He was chasing, like a hunter chasing his prey.

Mu Yuesheng did not lift her heels at all. However, she had to constantly transform into a bolt of lightning to escape. She was also constantly shooting out Radiant Charged Bolts. Icy-blue electric sparks constantly flashed as the interweaving of sizzling currents and deafening explosions echoed in the cold night sky.

Neither one of them could overwhelm the other!

Shi Xiaobai was unable to hit Mu Yuesheng, who had "Lightning Flashstep". Even though he could use his fake moves to confuse Mu Yuesheng for a brief moment, the Massage Technique of God's attack was just too long and slow.

Whenever Shi Xiaobai's right hand touched Mu Yuesheng's shoulder, Mu Yuesheng would react and transform into an Lightning Flashstep beam before he could pinch her.

As for Mu Yuesheng, she too could not hit Shi Xiaobai. Other than successfully hitting Shi Xiaobai after his first missed attack, all her other Radiant Charged Bolts had missed their target.

Mu Yuesheng could not defeat the Crab Steps which was at the

“Dominating Refinement” realm!

The two of them were momentarily in a stalemate; however, neither one of them felt discouraged. Instead, they mustered even greater fighting spirit. While they clashed, they took every opportunity to grasp their fleeting failures to improve themselves.

This was their second battle, and similarly, neither one defeated the other, but they both defeated themselves.

Although This King has 99.9999% of his power sealed, you are truly a good opponent to be able to last so long under the hands of This King.

Shi Xiaobai guffawed, as he enjoyed the close fight.

Although you are a shameless bastard and you are a hooligan that deserves to die, you are really powerful. If you can right your wrongs...Pui! He is hopeless!

The more Mu Yuesheng thought, the angrier she became. However, she was able to maintain her calm and decisiveness in battle. She could lose to anyone but Shi Xiaobai!

...

This battle lasted for a very long time. The track was filled with holes, but as this was in the middle of the night, and the collective training grounds were rather remote, no one came to stop the

battle. If someone came here the next morning, they would probably be scared silly by the desolate scene.

The battle stalled on for a long time.

However, Mu Yuesheng was finally running out of steam. Even though the consumption rate of her superpower was not that high, it was still nonzero.

Against Shi Xiaobai, who had a crazy will and his endurance technique, “Unleaking Turtle Aura” that supported him, Mu Yuesheng obviously had no way to maintain her edge in battle.

Finally, at a certain moment, Mu Yuesheng fell into a momentary trance.

Shi Xiaobai’s demonic claws instantly seized the opportunity and pinched her shoulder. It was cool to the touch, and despite her clothes, Mu Yuesheng could still sense the warmth that came from Shi Xiaobai’s palm.

“Is this the end?”

Mu Yuesheng gave a bitter smile. She did not know what form Shi Xiaobai’s subsequent attacks would take, but with her shoulder being pinched, her shoulder bone was likely going to suffer.

However, she did not feel the pain she imagined. Instead, a pleasant feeling that made her embarrassed emanated across her

body. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's hand had quickly moved to Mu Yuesheng's exposed neck and pinched down at it gently.

“Uh...”

Mu Yuesheng involuntarily moaned before her face blushed red. Her brown pupils immediately widened as she suddenly felt her body rejuvenated, but at the same time an extremely strange feeling suffused across her body.

Mu Yuesheng turned her head to see a “lewd grin” on Shi Xiaobai's face!

“Go! To! Hell!”

At this moment, Mu Yuesheng went completely mad. She did not limit her strength, and the sparking electric currents suddenly formed a barrier around Mu Yuesheng like testy pixies. The electro-barrier which had a resplendent goldenness amidst the icy-blue suddenly blasted outwards!

Shi Xiaobai was caught by surprise as he hurriedly retracted his right hand in the hopes of retreating. However, as he was just too close, he failed to dodge in time. He was scraped by the bluish-gold electro-barrier!

“Sizzle~”

The bluish-gold electric current began crawling across Shi

Xiaobai's body like snakes.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

The bluish-gold current exploded!

Shi Xiaobai's clothes were charred black as his hairs stood on their ends. His eyes went white, and he fell to the ground with a thud.

Mu Yuesheng slowly calmed down from her deranged state. She looked at the collapsed Shi Xiaobai, whose clothes were ragged. His skin was blackened and his hair was standing up. With his eyes rolled back, she felt her heart thump as she rushed towards Shi Xiaobai.

Although she had been shouting “go to hell” all this while, she never truly wanted to kill Shi Xiaobai. If not, she would not have constantly only used Radiant Charged Bolts.

However, as a result of her embarrassment, she had subconsciously used a large area-of-effect attack, “Heavenly Lightning Summoning”.

Will the...hooligan be alright?

Mu Yuesheng's heart was thumping. When she walked in front of Shi Xiaobai, she was prepared to squat down to check if Shi Xiaobai was still breathing.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's eyes that had gone white gradually recovered. A wry smile suffused across his lips.

He was still too careless. At the moment he held Mu Yuesheng's neck, he suddenly had a change of mind. He did not use "Divine Massage Paralysis" to paralyze Mu Yuesheng's nerves, but instead used "Divine Massage of Giving Spring to Withered Wood" to restore Mu Yuesheng's stamina.

The reason was naturally because he wished that this battle could carry on, but he never expected that Mu Yuesheng still had a trick up her sleeve.

Of course, if this was any ordinary moment in time, Shi Xiaobai was likely able to rely on his reaction to dodge Mu Yuesheng's "Heavenly Lightning Summoning", but after massaging Mu Yuesheng, his Massage Technique of God suddenly leveled up!

In fact, having given a few hundred "Divine Massage of Giving Spring to Withered Wood" to Wen Hezheng in the afternoon, and then giving Wen Hezheng a full-body massage at night, his Massage Technique of God was approaching the threshold of the next realm. It was just short of a kick.

And that massage of Mu Yuesheng was that darn kick.

This kick made Shi Xiaobai's Massage Technique of God level up to the "Familiarized Proficiency" realm. Naturally, he revealed a smile that was seen in Mu Yuesheng's eyes as a "lewd grin". This

was also the reason why Shi Xiaobai had turned careless and was struck!

Chapter 172: Have You Never Seen Safety Shorts

This attack was not something the present Shi Xiaobai's physical defense could withstand. If not for him using "Unleaking Turtle Aura" in a timely manner to inhibit his senses, it was very likely that he would have been knocked unconscious by the high voltage from "Heavenly Lightning Summoning".

But even using "Unleaking Turtle Aura" was insufficient to inhibit the numbness his entire body was feeling. Just moving his head was extremely difficult.

However, there was one piece of good news. "This Turtle Is Hardest" was beaming, because it had satisfied its yearning for injury to become even stronger.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai was feeling happy and numb at the moment.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and looked up. He saw Mu Yuesheng, who had came up to him. His blurry vision also slowly turned clear before he saw a strange scene.

When Mu Yuesheng noticed that Shi Xiaobai had yet to go unconscious to the point of him still being able to turn his head, she heaved a sigh of relief in her heart. She was simultaneously surprised. She lowered her head, about to say something, when she saw an odd expression on Shi Xiaobai's face.

With that, she traced Shi Xiaobai's gaze and looked down.

Shi Xiaobai's gaze was looking in between her legs.

She was wearing a short skirt that went above the knees.

Mu Yuesheng quickly jumped backwards as her cheeks turned red. However, she did not scream or press down on her skirt like a normal girl would do. Instead, she stared angrily at Shi Xiaobai and sneered, "What are you looking at? Have you never seen safety pants?"

After Mu Yuesheng said that, she wanted to add a few more nasty words, but immediately lost the interest to do so. She felt that staying here any longer was an embarrassing matter.

Mu Yuesheng coldly grunted and transformed into a bolt of lightning flash and soon, she disappeared into the night.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes gradually returned to normal.

"So...those are safety pants." Shi Xiaobai sighed.

He had indeed never seen safety pants before, but he had heard about it several times.

He had a roommate, Yang Wei, who claimed to be the Demon World's handsome and noble Crown Prince.

That's right. It's that Yang Wei again. It's always Yang Wei.

Yang Wei had said numerous things into Shi Xiaobai's ears in the past. He would shake his head and sigh while saying, "Hai, White Eventide Heretic King, do you know? Safety pants are the greatest enemy that obstructs the development of human civilization!"

Human's greatest enemy.

Just these few words made Shi Xiaobai remember the term "safety pants", which made him have a tiny bit of curiosity.

And today, he had finally seen what true safety pants were.

"Safety pants are nothing special after all."

Shi Xiaobai curled his mouth as he recalled the scenery under Mu Yuesheng's short skirt. With a dismissive sneer, he concluded that they were indeed nothing special.

...

Half an hour later, Shi Xiaobai's body finally made a full recovery. Having been baptized by "Heavenly Lightning Summoning", his physical defense rose as a whole through the body-tempering of "This Turtle Is Hardest".

His skin defense rose by ten points. His flesh and blood defense rose by eight points. His bone defense rose by six points. His right hand's bone defense rose by three points.

At the moment, his statistics were as follows.

[Skin defense: Mortal Body Level 2 (11)]

[Flesh and Blood defense: Mortal Body Level 2 (15)]

[Bones defense: Mortal Body Level 1 (7)]

[Right arm's Bones defense: Mortal Body Level 2 (15)]

[Mental defense: Unknown]

Shi Xiaobai could not help but smile. Although he did not know why Mu Yuesheng suddenly wanted to “receive and inflict damage”, he had gained an unexpected benefit.

Unfortunately, his body temporarily could not withstand Mu Yuesheng's “Heavenly Lightning Summoning”, or a few more good shocks would have been good.

...

...

On the second day of the three-day training camp, at six in the morning.

Kevin had suffered a nightmare last night.

He did not finish a hundred laps and he had been trashed by Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng. In addition, that darn pig, Wen Hezheng, had completed a hundred laps. And finally, he came to a realization that his idol, God DogLeading, was likely Shi Xiaobai.

The setback he received was just too great.

This resulted in Kevin crying for an hour in the sick ward during the afternoon before he returned to his room to sleep for the night.

When he woke up in the morning, his mind had calmed down and his charm as a blond genius was restored.

“This Genius was just not up to form yesterday, so it was just an abnormal performance. Furthermore, speed and endurance has always been This Genius’ weakness. Hmph, if it was a competition of destructive power, This Genius will definitely trash those mortals with a bit more talent.”

Kevin looked at himself in the mirror as a confident smile

suffused across his lips. To a genius like him, every loss was just temporary. It was just the laying of foundations before he smacked the faces of others when he clinched victory.

After Kevin was done washing up, he suddenly felt intense hunger pangs. He had not eaten dinner the previous night.

Kevin quickly walked out of the room and left the dormitory. He began looking in the vicinity for a restaurant to eat breakfast.

Although he never liked eating breakfast, he was just too hungry today.

Kevin quickly found a restaurant not far from the dormitory.

The restaurant looked rather formal, but since it was six in the morning, there were no customers. However, the chef and waiters in the restaurant had already taken up their positions.

Kevin ordered a bowl of soy milk, a soy egg, a sausage and a piece of bread before sitting down at a random spot.

After Kevin sat down and lifted his chopsticks to stick the soy egg into his mouth, he suddenly saw someone walk into the restaurant. He was immediately dumbfounded, with the soy egg slipping and dropping to the table.

Kevin's eyes were fixated on the customer who just walked into the restaurant. Subconsciously, he picked up the soy egg on the

table with his hand and stuffed it into his mouth and chewed at it.

But soon, he realized that the soy egg had dropped on the table, and without knowing how dirty it could be, he turned sideways and spat a mouthful of chewed egg yolk and egg white, which happened to spray into the bowl of soy milk.

Kevin raised his hand to wipe his mouth.

From the beginning to the end, his eyes did not leave the customer that walked in from the restaurant's entrance to the ordering counter.

There was no other reason. That customer...was too cute!

She had orange-red hair, and her long hair was tied into two ponytails. She had large, bright eyes and fair skin. She had a slim and petite figure, and she had a yellow flower hair clip on her head. For some reason, she was wearing a white t-shirt that was much looser, and the t-shirt's bottom reached all the way to her knees, where a pair of glistening calves were.

She looked like a cute pixie that had walked into the restaurant, right into Kevin's vision.

"So cute...Why hasn't This Genius heard of the existence of such a cute chick in [Gaia]?"

Kevin sighed in his heart as his eyes fixated on the girl's back. He

pricked up his ears and heard the girl ordering her meal.

Her voice was pleasant to the ears, like clear, fresh spring water that flowed straight into his heart.

But soon, Kevin was dumbfounded because he heard her list a series of dishes. Furthermore, the girl was still continuing, listing down dishes without stop.

The waiter was also dumbfounded, but he dutifully and professionally recorded down the food the girl ordered.

The girl found a random spot to sit down and cocking her head, she seemed to be in thought.

Kevin was at a forty-five degree angle from her as he secretly looked at her side profile. He secretly picked up his cellphone and switched off the flash. “Kacha”, he snapped a picture.

“Phew, perfect. This Genius’s phone wallpaper, lock screen picture, desktop wallpaper, iPad wallpaper...I got it.”

Kevin picked up his cellphone and began operating it. Soon, he changed his phone’s wallpaper and lockscreen picture. He even changed the background pictures of Penguin Chat, Kumo Music, and various other apps to the picture he had just snapped.

At this moment, the girl’s meal arrived. The food she ordered filled up two tables.

Kevin gulped a mouthful of saliva.

Without any pretense, the girl picked up a fried dough stick with one hand, and began eating with her eyes beaming. From time to time, she let out a delighted sound of her enjoying the delicacies in front of her.

“So cute. She is completely ‘This Genius’ type.” Kevin sighed.

He suddenly felt that his coaxing and pestering of chicks on Weipo recently could not even compare with this girl.

Look at her. She looks so cute. She eats without being pretentious. Furthermore, she can eat so much while maintaining such a petite body.

Where can you find such a cute girl? She’s practically endangered.

“Time to get her cellphone number. With my looks, I’ll be able to get her Penguin account number or Weipo account number at the very least.”

Kevin smiled confidently.

Chapter 173: Given Up For Chicks

Although Kevin yearned to ask the cute chick for her contact information, he did not immediately take action. It could not be helped that his ability at picking up chicks was problematic.

Back in school, the typical chick would not catch his eye. The chicks that caught his eye were usually far from ordinary. They were all proud geniuses and they focused on their studies, so they were unwilling to date. As a result, despite being somewhat handsome, Kevin had yet to hook up with a chick up to now.

Recently, he could not tolerate his loneliness and began pursuing a girl with pretty alright looks on the Internet. Her talent was pretty alright, and was a chick that was pretty alright in every thing. However, Kevin was appalled to realize that he received an “extremely touched” response before being rejected by her!

This gave Kevin quite a setback as he subconsciously realized that his ability at picking chicks needed to be strengthened.

And at this moment, the cute chick had truly moved Kevin’s heart. This resulted in him worrying if he would miss an opportunity because of his poor abilities at picking up chicks.

“It looks like I need to...ask for that jerk’s help.”

Kevin helplessly sighed. If not for any compelling reason, he would never request the help of the bastard who he had “enviously

hated” for nine full years.

Kevin swiped his cellphone’s screen and opened Penguin Chat. In a chat group for his classmates, he found a member nicknamed “Lord God”.

Just after Kevin typed the words, “Hey, classmate”, he hesitated and gritted his teeth to delete the words. He quickly typed another string of words, and paused his fingers over the send button for three seconds. He looked up at that girl with orange-red hair.

Her squinting eyes while eating made her look so cute like a kitten.

Kevin wrenched his heart.

Kevin: “Lord God, Lord God, this lowly one is in urgent need of help. If you are here, please reply as soon as possible!”

Kevin’s face remained stiffened for several seconds after he sent the message before it finally relaxed.

Dignity is dear.

Posturing is dearer.

But both can be given up for chicks.

Speaking of “Lord God”, it was a bleak memory Kevin was reluctant to talk about.

This world’s compulsory education system of nine years was comprised of six years of primary school education and three years of secondary school education. Following that was a streaming event, in which they would attempt university enrollment or joining an organization. As for “Lord God”, he was a classmate who had accompanied Kevin for his six years of primary school and three years of secondary school.

Having been classmates for nine years, they did not become best buddies, but they were not enemies either. However, Kevin had a one-sided hatred and envy for “Lord God”.

“Lord God” could be considered a living “legend”. He was an average teenager with average looks, family background, results and talent. Yet, with a powerful ability of hitting on chicks, he had managed to establish a large and familial harem!

Furthermore, all the chicks in the harem were gorgeous babes. Some of them had amazing family backgrounds or talents, with some having both.

And “Lord God” dared to blatantly expose his harem, inducing the hatred and jealousy of several male peers. The school had exerted pressure on him, while the girls’ family elders gnashed their teeth, but “Lord God”’s harem took the initiative to stand by his side, and managed to overcome every obstacle they faced. Following that, they cohabited together without any shame or bashfulness.

“Lord God”‘s chick-picking techniques were obviously godlike.

Although Kevin was jealous of “Lord God”, he had once regarded him as an idol. It all changed when a particular school belle he was pursuing rejected him using the “importance of academics” as an excuse. But shortly after, she entered the arms of “Lord God”. As such, Kevin saw “Lord God” as his greatest enemy.

However, “Lord God”‘s harem powers were just too domineering that Kevin could only silently weep. He secretly cursed that “Lord God” would not have a dick, and even if he had one, it would only be three centimeters long.

But at this moment, with the refreshing and cute chick in front of him, Kevin decided to temporarily let go of the hatred in his heart and bow before “Lord God” for his help.

A minute later, his cellphone finally vibrated as Kevin hurriedly lowered his head to take a look.

Lord God: “What’s the matter? Don’t stand on ceremony with an old classmate like me. Tell me anything directly. Regardless of me being able to help you or not, I will definitely do my best.”

Kevin was slightly taken aback before he heaved a sigh of relief. He could not help but feel mixed emotions. “Lord God” was really good with his words.

With a thought, Kevin typed: “It’s no big deal, but I need your help. The matter is this...”

Kevin quickly typed and was done with clearly explaining the situation half a minute later.

“Lord God” only took a few seconds before replying.

Lord God: “By not going right up to hit on her is very appropriate.”

Kevin was stunned as he immediately sent a questioning emoji.

Not a while later, his cellphone vibrated.

Lord God: “From your description, this girl likes to eat and is very good at eating. The way she is eating is naturally not pretentious, as though she does not mind how people view her. If you were to hit on her while she was eating, what do you think the result would be?”

Kevin was stunned and with a bit of thinking, he responded: “Rejection?”

“Lord God” immediately sent him a sweat-wiping emoji.

Lord God: “Whether you will be rejected depends on your final performance, but the first impression you give will definitely be

very low. Let's put it this way. If you were to hit on her now, you will immediately enter hell mode."

Kevin drew a gasp and sent an emoji that had a stunned look with the words "holy shit".

"Lord God" clearly gave up the thought of slowly guiding Kevin. He began to bombard him with information.

Lord God: "Firstly, any casual girl will have some reservations, more or less. She might not mind how others view her eating habits, but if you were to appear now, she might very likely subconsciously resist you. This is because while she is ignoring how others view her, she is simultaneously ignoring others. The others I'm referring to are people who know of her eating habits. Do you understand? If you were to go over now, it is very likely to be subconsciously treated as others who should be 'ignored' and resisted."

Before Kevin finished understanding the previous paragraph, "Lord God" followed up with another paragraph.

Lord God: "Secondly, since she ordered so much food so early in the morning, clearly she is starving or very gluttonous. And if you were to appear at this moment, you can't expect her to listen to you as you hit on her while she is eating, right? Of course, you can't rule out that she's an open chick. But do you think that as she's enjoying the food, the impression of a stranger that she has to divert some attention to would be high?"

Lord God: “Most importantly, by not picking your timing or do any groundwork, or care about methods, to forcefully hit on her is a method of the LOWEST caliber when hitting on girls. A chick’s first impression will directly decide the difficulty level of your pursuit. So the act of hitting on her definitely cannot be rushed. It is important to thicken your skin, but being meticulous is also indispensable.”

Chapter 174: Lord God's Advice

As Kevin read “Lord God”‘s long paragraph in stunned silence, he was momentarily rendered speechless. He was awestruck, unaware that a tiny gesture could involve so many things. Indeed, there was a reason why he failed at hitting on chicks while “Lord God” experienced such success.

Kevin sent a emoji that continuously kowtowed and exclaimed “God”, and asked weakly, “Then what should I do?”

“Lord God” clearly knew he would ask this and was done typing the next paragraph. Immediately, he responded.

Lord God: “Simple. Lay an ambush outside the restaurant. Wait till she comes out and pretend to walk into the restaurant. Then, rub shoulders with her and remember to have a coldness to your expression. When you brush across her shoulder, stare with widened eyes at her and immediately come to a halt. Then, turn back to look at her back in a daze. Only after she walks far away should you secretly follow her.”

Lord God: “As for why you should do that, I’ll explain later. Just follow what I tell you to do. Remember to act more natural. I have something I need to tend to first. Once, you are done, immediately tell me.”

Kevin immediately replied: “Alright. Go tend to your stuff. I’ll disturb you in a while.”

Kevin read the chat in a serious manner three times again and again and he felt he had benefited greatly from it. Although he could not figure out the profound meaning behind what “Lord God” had instructed him to do, he was certainly not going to question it.

He looked up to take another glance at that cute girl with orange-red hair as she continued annihilating food with great enjoyment. Her natural and unpretentious actions of making a happy hum every time she finished a dish was like a kitten’s paws that lightly scratched Kevin’s heart.

Kevin reluctantly left the restaurant and found a secluded corner to hide.

As Kevin waited, and waited, and waited till the flowers withered, he finally saw the cute figure walk out from the restaurant.

Kevin immediately straightened his clothes and combed his hair. With both hands in his pockets, he put on a cold expression and walked over to the chick.

At the moment he rubbed shoulders with her, Kevin immediately felt a fresh aroma assault his olfactory senses. He naturally widened his eyes and glanced at the girl with his head cocked. That fair face without any makeup under her orange-red hair, that petite nose, long eyelashes, thin red lips and her large eyes that shimmered like crystals made Kevin momentary forget to breathe.

How beautiful.

Perfect.

Kevin turned around with a daze as he stared at the girl's back.

At this moment, the girl suddenly looked back and looked Kevin in the eye.

This glance felt very, very long for Kevin, as though he had experienced several centuries.

The glance was extremely short, because after that glance, the girl abruptly turned her head and quickening her pace, she left.

Kevin was left dumbfounded as he pulled out his cellphone and pattered on the screen to type a report. As he saw the girl at the corner of his eyes about to round the bend, he hurriedly chased after her.

Kevin carefully hid himself.

A short while later, his cellphone vibrated as Kevin immediately took a look.

Lord God: "Well done. She is secretly happy because of your turning back and your gaze. This happiness might be a little or a lot, but it will overall determine her first impression of you. That

is to say, the first impression you left on her is a hazy feeling of ‘happiness’.”

As though he knew Kevin was in hiding, “Lord God” did not wait for his reply and immediately sent another message.

Lord God: “The look she gave you when turning back should be one of pleasant surprise. This attests to the fact that her first impression of you is not bad, if not, she wouldn’t have curiously turned to glance back at you. However, it will be a bit harder to explain why she quickened her pace. There are likely two possibilities. The first possibility is that she was feeling shy after locking eyes with you. The second possibility is that she knows you and has a certain sense of disgust for you. If it’s the former, then congratulations. The chances of success are very high. To make such an open chick feel shy means that her affection for you is rather high. If it’s the latter, I believe it shouldn’t be the latter, right?”

“Lord God” posted a smiley after sending that message.

Following that was another piece of information.

Lord God: “Anyways, the current laying of foundations should be rated at good or above. However, what follows next is most important. Grasp the correct timing. Chase after her and pretend to be trying to catch your breath. Grit your teeth and pretend you are mustering the courage to loudly ask for her name. Remember, you have to ask for her name first.”

Lord God: “As long as you give her the illusion of you brushing past her and that cursory glance was love at first sight, and how you had to overcome your shyness and then muster your courage to ask for her name, she would naturally be delighted. Furthermore, with the hazy good first impression you gave her, there is a very high possibility that she will give you her name.”

Lord God: “After getting her name, tell her your name quickly. Pretend to muster your courage and look up and into her eyes. Ask her softly, ‘Can we be friends? Can we enjoy happiness and sadness together, friends that share their delicacies and interesting matters?’”

Lord God: “if you are lucky, the word ‘delicacy’ will stealthily disintegrate her hesitation. Then, the exchange of contact will just flow naturally. After you obtain her contact information, definitely do not be aggressive. Smile and walk away. Later on, I will teach you how to accumulate better affection from her through chatting on the Internet.”

Lord God: “If your luck isn’t good, she would be a bit more wary and not immediately agree. If that is the case, don’t linger longer anymore. Say ‘sorry, I was being rude’. Then, with a look of slight disappointment, turn and leave. If her heart softens and retains you, that will be the best. If she does not hold you back, that’s fine too. I will teach you Plan B when the time comes.”

Lord God: “Old friend, it’s time to test your acting skills. If she finds your acting too obvious, you will immediately enter hell mode. If you are successful in your acting, subsequent matters would be much easier.”

Lord God: “Everything has a difficult start. So all the best, and here’s me wishing you success!”

Lord God finally sent him an emoji with his hands cupped.

As Kevin carefully tailed the girl from the back, he constantly read the information provided by “Lord God”. He was feeling shocked and excited.

You are too fucking awesome, my Lord God!

The detailed plan and psychological analysis and even all the possible outcomes were fully analyzed and given the appropriate treatments required. He even promised to follow up.

This was practically help from the Heavens!

Kevin sighed. Back then, he had secretly cursed “Lord God” to not have a dick, and even if he had one, it would only be three centimeters. He even thought that it was best that he was impotent. He was just too insensible.

If he had learned a thing or two from “Lord God”, would he have a small harem now?

Chapter 175: Not Even Given A ‘Nice Guy Card’

Kevin began to fantasize for a moment. When he noticed a clothing store in front of him and from the direction in which the girl was walking towards, he immediately understood that the girl was there to buy clothes.

Kevin sensed that he could no longer wait!

Kevin dashed over and just as the girl was about to enter the door, he stood in front of her.

He pretended to be gasping for breath and turned his head and locked eyes with the girl’s questioning gaze. Immediately, his face blushed slightly.

Kevin found the girl too cute.

“Can...can you tell me...your name?”

Kevin stammered slightly as he said those words. It was not an act but because he was truly nervous.

The girl frowned and with a subtle cunningness that flashed in her eyes, she softly said, “Mozzie.”

Kevin was stunned.

Mozzie?

That is her name?

Where did he hear that from?

The instructions of “Lord God” flashed in Kevin’s mind as he hurriedly straightened his thoughts. He mustered his courage and said, “A very cute name...Hello, I’m Kevin.”

Kevin heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. He found it surprising that just saying his name needed so much courage.

“Yea, what’s the matter?’ The girl blinked her eyes and asked curiously.

The cute look was like a fatal blow to Kevin. He immediately blushed and lowered his head, but when he recalled “Lord God”‘s words, he clenched his teeth and struggled to muster his courage before looking up. He looked into the girl’s eyes and said loudly, “Can we be friends? Can we enjoy happiness and sadness together, friends that share their delicacies and interesting matters?”

Kevin’s eyes flickered with genuine desire. He had completed “Lord God”‘s instructions without any acting. It was true emotion, which was superior to any acting technique.

Now, it all depended on the girl's response.

Will she nod her head and say yes?

Or would she shake her head and reject him politely?

Or would she just silently walk around him?

“Sorry, I do not like sharing delicacies with others...That's not right. There is a person I'm willing to share half with.”

The girl said the first half of the sentence coldly, but after thinking of something, she said the second half of the sentence with a beaming eye smile.

Kevin felt as though he was struck by lightning as he was left petrified on the spot.

The girl ignored Kevin and walked around him, and soon, she entered the clothing store.

Kevin struggled to take a deep breath and immediately took out his cellphone. He began typing at a super fast speed, while his face had an expression of him being too deep for tears. He was like a wronged child complaining to adults for help.

After the message was sent out, Kevin felt like a year passed for

every second spent waiting.

And it appeared as though “Lord God” was stumped by a difficult problem. This was a rare instance of him not instantly replying. Only after more than ten seconds did he respond.

Kevin immediately looked at it.

Lord God: “Relax, calm down, don’t worry. Things might not be as bad as you think.”

Kevin’s eyes flashed with a flicker of hope before he gradually calmed down.

Lord God: “Firstly, I have to apologize. Indeed, I failed to anticipate her response. That’s because her answer is a ‘sharp’ type. It has an intense resistance in it which typically would not be given to a stranger. But since she has done that, there are two possibilities. Firstly, her personality is so open that she is careless with her words, or secondly, she has some resistance against you to begin with. Think back carefully and recall if you have left a bad impression on previously when she saw you at someplace or some time before today.”

Kevin was stunned and answered affirmatively, “Impossible. I have never seen her before.”

Lord God: “Yea, then let us assume that it’s the first possibility. That means her words were not intentional. She is just direct with

her words and blurted out her innermost thoughts. Then, carry on describing. What was her expression when she said the words ‘there is a person I’m willing to share half with’.”

Kevin immediately recalled the girl’s expression and typed: “She beamed very happily...”

Lord God: “Okay, beaming very happily proves that the person holds a very high position in her heart. The person might be a lover, a close female friend, a relative...all of which are possible. Typically, to say such things if the person was a lover, they would feel somewhat embarrassed. However, since the girl’s personality is the open kind, you cannot eliminate the possibility of a lover.”

Kevin’s breathing faltered as he hurriedly replied, “Then what do I do?”

Lord God: “You have to be prepared for the best and worst in everything. The best situation is that the person she was referring to is a female friend or a family member. The worst situation is a person that she is mutually in love with.”

Lord God: “If it’s the former, you have to think of doing a ‘familiarity stratagem’. Every morning, you will lie in hiding around the restaurant and use different means to appear in her sights. Smile and greet her, or nicely tease her that it was no wonder she did not wish to share her delicacies with others because she is a greedy little kitten. In short, you need to first grind away the bad impression you left on her today. You can’t do it in a rush and you can only use the passage of time to grind at it. After you are more familiar with her and when you manage to

obtain her contact information, you can then contact me again.”

Lord God: “If it’s the latter, it’s best you give up. Stealing the loved one of others is shameless. I will not help you do that. You should silently give her your blessings. You can always be beside her as a friend who can be a confidant. If one day they fall out of love, you can try again. Remember, companionship is the best pursuit. Letting go is true love.”

Lord God: “However, regardless if it’s the former or latter, you have to hold back today. Quickly leave the clothing store. Do not let her see you when she comes out. After that, you can secretly tail her and after knowing where she stays, you can secretly investigate if she has a boyfriend or not. It’s best if you can obtain more information. If it’s really impossible, try working on her female friends. After understanding her well, you are welcome to ask me for an effective strategy that is directed at her.”

As Kevin read “Lord God”‘s constant messages, he gradually calmed his heart. With a thought, he left the clothing store and hid in a secluded corner.

Kevin responded: “Thank you.”

If not for “Lord God”, he would probably have returned in abject failure on this quest for hitting on the girl. He would not even have the remaining strength to struggle after the terrible defeat. Although the situation was very serious, with “Lord God”‘s guidance, it appeared as though there was still light ahead of him.

Lord God: “Xuan’er asked me to say hello to you. She said: ‘Back then she rejected you because she had someone in her heart, but in a moment of shyness, she used academics as an excuse. Very sorry for not being able to reject you properly.’.”

Kevin was left stunned for a moment and did not know how to reply. His eyes suddenly turned moist with sourness.

At this moment, “Lord God” sent another message.

Lord God: “Haha, I have helped you teach her a lesson. This girl is so insensible. How can she not even give you a Nice Guy Card!? Old classmate, chill man. I’ll treat you to a meal one day.”

Kevin was stunned. He recalled how he did not even get a “Nice Guy Card”, before being rejected with the “Focusing on Studies” excuse.

Fuck, This Genius was actually so terrible?

Lord God: “Back then, after you confessed to her, she suddenly mustered the courage to confess to me. Yea, back then I was completely stunned. Now, that I know the truth, Bro, you are really a nice guy!”

“Pu!”

Kevin nearly committed blood.

What Nice Guy Card are you trying to hand out!

Kevin: “You are purposely trying to infuriate me, aren’t you?”

Kevin sent an emoji of a person lifting two bottles of medical oils with the words “Big Bro, do you want to go to heaven”, but the corners of his mouth could not help but suffuse a smile.

Lord God: “Why? You can’t accept it? If you can’t accept it, then get that chick and smack me in the face!”

“Lord God” sent a emoji with a cheeky face with the English words “Interesting”.

Kevin was left stunned as he immediately responded.

Kevin: “Just you wait! When This Genius conquers her, pictures will be sent to you. She is much cuter than Xuan’er!”

Lord God: “Alright, I’m waiting.”

.....

AN

Chapter 176: Fat Chance

Wen Hezheng. Oh, no. She prefers people to call her Mozzie now.

Lord Shi Xiaobai had come to her room last night and he told her, “This King’s Massage Technique of God can make you slim down”. Although she was skeptical about it, she resolutely accepted Lord Shi Xiaobai’s proposal.

Wasn’t it just a massage?

Wasn’t it just a full-body massage?

However, Mozzie quickly regretted because it was as if Lord Shi Xiaobai’s massages were poisoned!

Every rub and pinch made her entire body feel a numbness that caused her to let out an involuntary grunt. Immediately following that, the numbness would transform into a pleasurable feeling that she made her unable to stop herself from moaning.

Back then, Mozzie’s brain was in a haze. She wished that Lord Shi Xiaobai would quickly end his massage, but she also had a lingering thirst for the massage sensations. This feeling...this feeling was just like...eating thirty tubs of ice-cream on a blistering hot summer day. Her mouth and teeth would be nearly frozen, but the heat in her body made her unable to resist the desire to continue eating the ice-cream.

Well, Mozzie had actually experienced what was depicted. Furthermore, her choice back then was...to gorge on fifty tubs.

Mozzie did not have any particular thoughts towards Lord Shi Xiaobai kneading her body, much less any ambiguous feelings.

What a joke. With so much fat on her body, what was so nice to touch?

Therefore, Mozzie did not have much of psychological burden and with her subconsciously hypnotizing herself, she did not resist Shi Xiaobai's Massage Technique of God and finally fell asleep soundly.

Finally, when she woke up, everything had changed.

Wait a moment.

Who is this person in the mirror?

That petite body, fair skin, bright eyes, delicate and cute facial features...

Is the cute chick in the mirror her?

It's her!

It was really her!

She had really managed to slim down. Furthermore, she had slimmed down to the point of not having a hint of flab!

Mozzie immediately recalled Lord Shi Xiaobai's casual comments and she was completely astonished. She spent a few minutes just to convince herself of the reality that had happened.

Mozzie was always a cheerful person, but when people ridiculed her for being fat, she would only feel some discomfort that lasted only for a few seconds before the delicious thoughts of food restored her happiness. However, being able to slim down was definitely a joyful event that would make her laugh even while in her sleep.

Mozzie delightfully tied her disheveled orange-red hair into double ponytails and put a yellow flower hair clip on her head. Looking at her fair skin that did not need any makeup to better pure white snow, she could not help but sigh.

Every fatso had potential.

Following that, she pouted and began muttering.

However, not every fatso could meet Lord Shi Xiaobai.

Mozzie quickly realized that she had never bought any pretty clothes because of her obesity. Immediately, she found it

unbearable. Hence, with the sky having just lit up, she went out in preparation to buy a few nice sets of clothing to prettify herself.

Out of the dormitory, Mozzie saw the restaurant across her and immediately felt hungry and greedy. She could not resist its allure!

Mozzie immediately went into the restaurant and ordered a lot of food as per usual.

Mozzie enjoyed her food in bliss. When she was almost done, she came to the stunning realization that she had managed to finally slim down.

If she kept eating like this, what would happen if she fattened up again?

Mozzie immediately felt vexed. Due to a particular reason, her nature made it such that she had to eat more than others. As a result, she began getting fat at a very young age. Now that she had slimmed down and realized that she was actually a cute girl, she immediately felt reluctant at becoming fat again.

Mozzie reluctantly placed the last slice of bread down and gloomily walked out of the restaurant with a sigh. At the door, she brushed shoulders with a familiar figure. Mozzie curiously turned her head to take a glance and was surprised to realize it was Kevin. Immediately, she turned around and quickened her pace.

She greatly disliked the blond teenager. Furthermore, he was one

of the few annoying people she had ever encountered.

However, Mozzie never expected Kevin to suddenly stop her and even ask her for her name.

Mozzie was stunned for a moment before realizing that Kevin had failed to recognize her due to her tremendous change. Furthermore, it appeared as though he was trying to hit on her.

Mozzie had never been hit on her entire life, so she could not help but have a hint of playfulness in her. She said the nickname, “Mozzie”, which she had previously mentioned in the lounge.

Clearly, Kevin did not remember or he had never even heard her use such a cute nickname. This made Mozzie’s low impression of him even lower.

Following that, Kevin had suggested being friends that shared delicacies with each other.

Mozzie was immediately left speechless. Firstly, ignoring the fact that being friends with Kevin was something painful, the one thing she did not want to share in her entire life was delicacies!

After Mozzie coldly rejected Kevin, she suddenly thought of the possibility of Lord Shi Xiaobai saying the same thing. How would she respond in that case?

As Mozzie pondered over how Lord Shi Xiaobai was being such a

nice guy to her, giving some of her delicious foods to him did not seem something unacceptable.

Hence, Mozzie blurted out the words on her mind before ignoring Kevin and entering the clothing store.

Hmph, you did not show mercy to This Mosquito, now with This Mosquito slimming down, you want to befriend This Mosquito? Fat chance!

...

...

Mozzie took a long time before finally choosing a few clothes she liked. For example, the pink one-piece dress she was currently wearing was very adorable.

After Mozzie left the clothing store, she noticed that it was already rather late. After hesitating for a moment, she decided not to return to her dormitory, and instead directly headed for the training venue.

When she arrived at the lounge, she realized that Mu Yuesheng was alone in it.

Mu Yuesheng was as usual in Cogitation with her eyes closed.

Mozzie found a spot to lay down the bag which had her clothes in it. After some hesitation, she slowly walked over to Mu Yuesheng.

Ever since she entered [Gaia], she had frequently heard of others discussing Mu Yuesheng. Over time, this girl was known as “the most hard working Rookie King” also became Mozzie’s idol.

Yesterday, she did not have much time to get to know her idol. Now, with the two of them having a chance to be alone, Mozzie felt that she should muster her courage to say hi.

“Hi...”

Mozzie walked over to Mu Yuesheng and greeted her gently.

Mu Yuesheng slowly opened her eyes and was slightly stunned. She asked in wonder, “You are?”

Mozzie was also stunned by Mu Yuesheng’s response before recalling that she had already slimmed down. Even her mother would probably not recognize her after the humongous transformation.

“I’m Wen Hezheng. I was the fat girl that participated in the collective training with all of you yesterday.”

Mozzie narrowed her eyes as she smiled and said, “I’ve slimmed down, so you can call me Mozzie. Sister Yuesheng, hehe, can I call you Sister Yuesheng? You are my idol...”

Mozzie began chattering away. Mu Yuesheng, who was in a daze for a moment, drew a cold gasp and said, “You are Wen Hezheng? Your voice is indeed the same, but your looks...”

Mu Yuesheng could not calm herself down anymore. The person in front of her, be it her voice or her speaking tone and attitude was identical to Wen Hezheng. However, wasn't her looks and figure just too different?

Chapter 177: How Can This Be

When Mozzie told Mu Yuesheng that her name was Wen Hezheng, someone was afflicted with 10,000 points of damage.

That person was naturally Kevin.

Kevin had tailed Mozzie, who came out of the clothing store, in hopes of knowing where she lived and her actual identity. He was later surprised to find out that Mozzie was heading towards the collective training grounds.

Following that, she walked into the lounge which astonished and puzzled Kevin. However, he felt relieved when he speculated that Mozzie was here only to find Mu Yuesheng.

He hid by the lounge door to eavesdrop on their conversation to wait for the opportune moment.

But what did he end up hearing?

This extremely cute chick, Mozzie, said she was that disgusting fat girl, Wen Hezheng?

Heavens, this joke is not one bit funny!

But very soon, from Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng's conversation, Kevin slowly came to a realization that, this was very likely...not a

joke.

As he began generating doubts on his mind, many critical clues that he had ignored suddenly reared their heads at him.

For example, wasn't that orange-red hair identical to Wen Hezheng's?

To be able to eat so much for breakfast without any restraint, wasn't that the darn pig's style?

Also that shirt that was clearly many sizes bigger, the name, Mozzie, that he found familiar as well as the resistance "Lord God" had noticed and analyzed. All of this pointed towards a cruel fact—Mozzie was Wen Hezheng!

This cute girl that made him fall in love with her at first sight was the gross fatso he extremely abhorred!

At this moment, the two completely different but opposing feelings began to struggle in Kevin's heart.

On one side was the angel of love telling him: "You can forget her past, loving her for what she is now and will be in the future."

On the other side was the hateful devil telling him: "No, do not be captivated by her appearance. Regardless of how much she changes her external appearance, her soul is definitely a disgusting swine."

The angel said: “No, she possesses a beautiful soul to begin with. Previously, her ugly exterior had restricted her, so now, all that has happened is her transformation from an ugly little duckling into a swan.”

The devil said: “Think of your disgust for her. Think of her disgusting smell. Think of that round and ugly face.”

The angel said: “No, do not get stuck into memories of the past. Touch your heart. Your heart is racing because of her. Think of that fragrant aroma you smelled the moment you walked past her. Take a careful look, that pretty face is bringing you so many beautiful memories.”

The devil screamed: “You should hate her!”

The angel gently said: “You should like her!”

Being tangled between the angel and devil tormented Kevin. Quickly, he took out his cellphone and informed “Lord God” of the matter. Unconsciously, he became extremely reliant on “Lord God”.

“Lord God” quickly replied him.

Lord God: “Congratulations on entering ‘hell mode’. The answer to your doubts can easily be obtained. Now, calm down and think. Do you feel regret over the nasty words you said yesterday? Do you

feel frustrated after entering 'hell mode'. Do you have thoughts of pursuing her at the moment?"

Kevin was stunned and began pondering over "Lord God"'s three questions. He realized his answer was...

Kevin: "Yes, yes, no."

A few seconds later, "Lord God" immediately replied.

Lord God: "Congratulations, you are truly in love. Then, to be decisive, don't consider what sort of person she once was. You should consider what sort of person you are to her, and how you should change her opinion of you."

Upon reading Lord God's message, Kevin quickly realized a very serious problem. Yes, it did not matter if he could convince himself of forgetting his past impression of Mozzie. The crux of the matter was how he would convince Mozzie to forget about his past image.

If he gave up, everything would obviously become simple.

But if he chose to continue on, he would have to slowly climb up from the bottom of a valley.

Kevin: "Thank you, I understand now."

"Lord God" replied with a smiling emoji and gave a word of

encouragement.

Kevin took a deep breath and began considering how he should take the first arduous step in the battle of courting her.

And at the same time, Mu Yuesheng had finally accepted the fact that the Mozzie “product” in front of her was Wen Hezheng, who had slimmed down drastically overnight.

Mu Yuesheng was perplexed as she could not help but ask, “How did you do it? In just a night...”

Kevin, who was hiding by the door, pricked his ears up immediately.

Mozzie happened to be waiting for Mu Yuesheng to ask this question. With a playful smile, she blinked and said proudly, “All of this can be credited to Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

Upon hearing this, Mu Yuesheng’s breathing faltered. She recalled of the experience from the previous night, thinking of the misdeeds that darn hooligan, Shi Xiaobai, had done as well as the overwhelming moans that came from Wen Hezheng’s room.

Mu Yuesheng’s expression changed drastically and asked in a hurry, “Last night, you and Shi Xiaobai, did the two of you...do something that should not be done?”

Mozzie was stunned.

Should not be done?

Was she referring to the massage?

How did Sister Yuesheng know about it...Ah, right. Sister Yuesheng lived next to her!

“Sister Yuesheng...Don’t tell me you heard it?”

Mozzie immediately blushed. Although she did not think that Lord Shi Xiaobai’s massaging of her fat body was something shady, she still knew how ambiguous it was when she let out those involuntary moans.

Mu Yuesheng immediately said with a deadpan expression. “I heard it. I never expected the two of you to...”

Mozzie hurriedly explained, “Sister Yuesheng, your thoughts have gone astray! Last night, Lord Shi Xiaobai only massaged me to slim me down. Look at me now, it’s the effects of Lord Shi Xiaobai’s massaging.”

Mu Yuesheng was astounded.

You moaned so “lewdly” from being massaged? And even slimmed down so drastically by experiencing a massage? Can it be any more ridiculous?

Seeing Mu Yuesheng's look of disbelief, Mozzie turned anxious. It was alright if she was misunderstood, but she would blame herself if Lord Shi Xiaobai's reputation was ruined by her.

When Mu Yuesheng saw Mozzie's anxious look, she knew that this matter could not be left in such a mess any further. Furthermore, Mozzie was a girl too. She would definitely turn embarrassed or nervous if this was mentioned to her face.

Mu Yuesheng sighed. Although she was not close to Mozzie, and had practically only just gotten to know her, she did not wish for such a cheerful girl to be harmed. She softly asked, "Do you...like Shi Xiaobai?"

Mozzie nodded without any hesitation, "Of course."

Obviously, she liked Lord Shi Xiaobai, who was such a nice guy, the most.

"Shi Xiaobai...already has a girlfriend!"

Mu Yuesheng said with a serious expression. In order to prevent Mozzie from ending up hurt, she had to reveal Shi Xiaobai's true colors.

This hooligan was two-timing. No, it might be more than that!

Mozzie was dumbfounded as she pursed her lips and said, “Ah? Lord Shi Xiaobai...how can this be?”

Chapter 178: Flirting Expert Shi Xiaobai

“Ah? Lord Shi Xiaobai...how can this be?”

My Lord Shi Xiaobai, happiness can only be obtained when male gods are together. How can you have a girlfriend!?

Mozzie immediately felt hurt and could not accept the reality.

As Mu Yuesheng looked at Mozzie's expression, she sighed in her heart. From the looks of it, this silly girl had fallen too deep in love for that hooligan. Her reaction after knowing that she had been cheated on was extremely intense.

Mu Yuesheng sighed and said, “I think...you should give them your blessings.”

Mu Yuesheng wanted to tell Mozzie that it was time to let go.

Mozzie stared and said with resentment, “No, definitely not!”

The male god meant for Lord Shi Xiaobai will definitely appear!

Mozzie thought in her heart.

Mu Yuesheng gave a sympathetic glance at Mozzie.

It's best to take it slow. It looks like the hooligan is highly regarded in her heart.

...

When Kevin, who was at the door, heard Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng's conversation, his eyes slowly turned red. It was red from his wrath.

It's Shi Xiaobai again!

It's still that Shi Xiaobai!

Motherfucking Shi Xiaobai!

From the first time they met, he had been acting the fool, smacking him heavily in the face.

Later on, all sorts of deeds about him were rumored, making him deeply sense the difference between him and a true genius.

Yesterday, he learned of the possibility that his idol, "God DogLeading", was very likely Shi Xiaobai.

And today, he heard such a conversation.

Mozzie and Shi Xiaobai's relationship was already so close!

The important person Mozzie was willing to share her delicacies with was actually Shi Xiaobai!

“Shi! Xiao! Bai!”

Kevin blurted out this hateful name while grinding his teeth.

“Is there something?” Suddenly, a puzzled voice sounded from behind him.

Kevin turned around in surprise and saw Shi Xiaobai walking towards him. He looked like he was in a good mood.

Kevin’s expression changed and with a cold snort, he walked into the lounge. With mixed feelings, he looked at Mozzie, who was chatting with Mu Yuesheng happily, and found a spot in the front row. He was very hurt and needed to calm down.

After a momentary pause, Shi Xiaobai also headed into the lounge. He was truly in a good mood today.

It was because not long ago, the Absolute Choice had suddenly informed him that Kevin’s affection for Wen Hezheng had reached 80 (Like), and congratulated him on obtaining a C-level reward.

This made Shi Xiaobai have the feeling of encountering a BOSS while playing a game, but just as he pulled his weapon out, he

heard the news of the BOSS dying. It was a victory that seemed lacking.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai had been worried over the completion of the Absolute Choice. Although he could use the omnipotent “Massage Technique of God” to slim Wen Hezheng down, that was just her exterior appearance. To make a person like another person should not have been that simple.

However, Shi Xiaobai never expected that the matter was truly that simple!

“What a superficial Blondy Narcissist.”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and sighed before walking into the lounge.

The moment Shi Xiaobai walked into the lounge, two pairs of eyes turned to look at him. One was Mu Yuesheng’s angry gaze, while the other was Mozzie’s pleasantly surprised gaze.

“Lord Shi Xiaobai~~”

Mozzie cheerfully called out and immediately skipped over to Shi Xiaobai. Following that, she twirled around while laughing to show off her petite body.

“How is it?”

Mozzie blinked with a cute expression of trying to flaunt herself.

As the Massage Technique of God used to slim Mozzie down needed a period of time to take effect, this was the first time Shi Xiaobai saw Mozzie after she slimmed down. It was truly a great difference!

“Very good!”

Shi Xiaobai praised as he thought in his mind.

This King’s Massage Technique of God is indeed omnipotent. The effects are truly awesome. Alright, it’s been decided, from today onwards, Mozzie shall become the spokesperson of the Massage Technique of God!

A slight smile suffused on Shi Xiaobai’s lips as his eyes blazed while looking at Mozzie.

Mozzie thought Shi Xiaobai was complimenting her and enjoyed it. Immediately, she flung the grievous news of Lord Shi Xiaobai going down the heterosexual relations path of no return to the back of her head.

Mozzie beamed for a moment before she suddenly recalled of something. She said in a pathetic manner, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, in the morning...in the morning, I accidentally ate too much. You can’t blame me. It’s not that I wanted to eat that much...”

Mozzie felt that it was tough on Lord Shi Xiaobai to help her slim down. However, she found it regrettable that she had eaten so much, but her physique required her to eat a lot. In order to prevent Shi Xiaobai from thinking that she did not cherish her slim figure that was so hard to obtain, she felt that she needed to give an explanation.

“No, Mozzie, This King thinks you should eat more!”

Shi Xiaobai immediately interrupted Mozzie. He said in high spirits, “Do not be afraid of getting fat from eating. Eat as much as you like! This King’s Massage Technique of God can slim you down anytime.”

In fact, Shi Xiaobai really wanted to say—Quickly fatten yourself from eating. Once you turn fat, This King’s Massage Technique of God can continue leveling up again.

Mozzie was terribly touched when she heard this.

Lord Shi Xiaobai was so thoughtful. Not only did he not blame her, but he had also allowed her to not worry. Lord Shi Xiaobai was just too gentle.

“Lord Shi Xiaobai.” Mozzie gave out an affectionate cry.

When Kevin heard this, his expression changed drastically as he cursed in his heart.

This bastard, Shi Xiaobai, was a flirting expert!

Mozzie had truly been deeply mesmerized for a moment, but the strong belief in her heart was unwavering. She believed that a male god was definitely the best partner for Lord Shi Xiaobai.

Just as Mozzie wanted to ask Lord Shi Xiaobai about his girlfriend, the sound of high heels tapping came from the entrance.

Mozzie faltered before whispering, “It must be a Division Minister!”

Mozzie hurriedly pulled Shi Xiaobai to seat him down.

Shortly, a charming woman in a red cheongsam walked into the lounge. Kevin’s expression changed and immediately sat up straight. Mu Yuesheng opened her eyes and took a glance at the charming woman and slightly frowned before closing her eyes. Mozzie had also tugged at Shi Xiaobai’s sleeves as though she was very nervous.

Only Shi Xiaobai was expressionless. He looked the same. He did not even know who the woman was, but the first impression the woman gave him was bad.

The woman locked eyes with Shi Xiaobai for a while before saying with a charming smile, “I am the Division Minister of the

[Creation] division. You can call me ‘Madam Ji’. I’m very happy to serve as your collective training instructor.”

Madam Ji gave a charming smile as she said softly, “They got me to choose a possible segment that would appear, but as I’m too dumb, I could only guess of one. I believe...the selection will have one-on-one duels.”

A one-on-one duel was a selection segment that tested an individual’s strength the most. In fact, the appearance of a one-on-one duel segment appearing at any selection had a very high probability. As such, the segment offered by Madam Ji could not be considered a guess.

However, this segment was indeed something worth training for.

Madam Ji scanned the four rookies and lightly smiled. She said, “It’s perfect that we have four people. Then, let’s have a duel in pairs. As for who is to fight who, go ahead and decide for yourselves.”

The moment Madam Ji finished her sentence, Mu Yuesheng immediately opened her eyes and said, “I want to battle Shi Xiaobai.”

Since this was training for the mass selection, Mu Yuesheng believed that only fighting Shi Xiaobai, who was on par with her, was meaningful. Kevin and Mozzie were just too weak for her.

Furthermore, when she saw how Mozzie had so many emotions for Shi Xiaobai despite Shi Xiaobai being such a merciless flirting hooligan, Mu Yuesheng felt that she needed to teach Shi Xiaobai a good lesson.

At this moment, Mozzie also raised her hand and weakly said, “I also want to fight with Lord Shi Xiaobai.”

From Mozzie’s point of view, Lord Shi Xiaobai was after all only at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. If he fought Sister Yuesheng, there was a high chance of him losing. She did not want Lord Shi Xiaobai to lose, so she had to snatch the spot of fighting Lord Shi Xiaobai from Sister Yuesheng.

The moment Mozzie finished her sentence, Kevin’s voice that was filled with suppressed anger immediately rang, “None of you are to snatch him from me. Shi Xiaobai is mine!”

Kevin now hated Shi Xiaobai to the extreme. With a chance to duel him in front of his eyes, would he still be a man if he did not take it?

Madam Ji clearly did not expect this situation. With a fascinated look in her eyes, she looked at Shi Xiaobai and said softly, “Then, how will you choose?”

Shi Xiaobai gaped his mouth. He looked at each of the three people and could tell their desire to battle him from their eyes.

Such a vexing thing. This King is truly popular.

Ever since he was faced with the Absolute Choice, Shi Xiaobai disliked multiple choice questions.

Shi Xiaobai blinked and said innocently, “Why not...all of you attack together?”

...

Chapter 179: This Is The Reason For You To Break Public Property?

“Why not...all of you attack together?”

It was unknown since when it began, but compared to a one-on-one duel, Shi Xiaobai preferred being attacked en masse. Because he was cultivating his “Crab Steps” or “This Turtle Is Hardest”, they needed attacks of sufficient strength.

He could not deny that he found it difficult to withstand Mu Yuesheng’s “Radiant Charged Bolt” and “Heavenly Lightning Summoning” head on. However, Shi Xiaobai could use the damage inflicted by the peripherals of “Radiant Charged Bolt” to cultivate “This Turtle Is Hardest”. And under normal circumstances, he could easily dodge “Heavenly Lightning Summoning”.

At last night’s duel, Shi Xiaobai had turned slightly serious and gave up the thoughts of cultivating “This Turtle Is Hardest”. He wanted to defeat Mu Yuesheng in a head-on clash, but unfortunately, his attacks were similarly dodged by Mu Yuesheng perfectly.

Although he had managed to obtain victory using his strong endurance, Shi Xiaobai found such a victory unacceptable. As such, he did not use “Divine Massage Paralysis” and instead used “Divine Massage of Giving Spring to Withered Wood”. However, this resulted in him being countered by Mu Yuesheng’s “Heavenly Lightning Summoning”.

As a result, Shi Xiaobai's physical defenses rose by a large margin.

Shi Xiaobai was extremely willing to battle Mu Yuesheng again, but now with him facing three choices, Shi Xiaobai could not help but become greedy.

However, this sort of greed sounded rather arrogant.

The four other people were stunned hearing this. They chose to simultaneously—pretend not to have heard him.

Asking for Shi Xiaobai's opinion was just them being too naive.

Mu Yuesheng looked at Madam Ji and she said in a deep voice, "I believe that since we are training for duels, the effects of the training would be better if the match-ups are closer in power. Although I'm rather apologetic to the other two, I have to say that the darn bast...Shi Xiaobai's strength is closest to mine."

Kevin immediately retorted when he heard this, "Shi Xiaobai is only at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. How can he be close in strength to you? This Genius's Psionic Mortal Realm is closest to him, so it is only reasonable for This Genius to battle him."

Mozzie also hurriedly said, "Lord Shi Xiaobai's psionic realm might be low, as for me...I'm not a Psyker. My strength should be

the lowest. I'm most suitable to battle Lord Shi Xiaobai!"

Madam Ji was slightly confused. She knew that Shi Xiaobai had amazing talent, but she did not know how strong he was. All the spies that had been planted around Shi Xiaobai had been cleaned up by Kali.

So when she heard the three people speaking, Madam Ji was immediately even more confused. From what Mu Yuesheng had said, Shi Xiaobai seemed to be strong enough to battle her. Didn't this mean that Shi Xiaobai's strength was ranked in the top two? But from the way Kevin and Mozzie spoke, Shi Xiaobai did not seem too strong and even seemed rather weak.

What was going on?

However, Madam Ji was in no hurry. She watched in interest as the three people argued. She had the right to decide who was to battle who, but she did not want to stop them.

This was because she wanted to see what Shi Xiaobai would do. After all, there was no way an outcome could be produced from the three people's arguments. It was ultimately Shi Xiaobai's choice as to which opponent he would fight.

...

The three constantly quarreled while Madam Ji watched in silence. The choice of dueling partner was eventually still going to

be decided by Shi Xiaobai.

Madam Ji was waiting. The other three were also waiting. They were waiting for Shi Xiaobai to make his decision, but not the arrogant choice of “attacking together”. They wanted him to make a sensible choice after understanding his own strength.

Then, how would Shi Xiaobai, who had been silent all this while, make his choice?

“Boom!”

An ear-splitting explosion boomed as the entire lounge shook slightly. The three people and Madam Ji turned their heads in horror. They saw Shi Xiaobai’s fist stretched out beside a wall, and there was a huge hole in the wall!

This was an extremely thick metallic wall made out of astral steel. It was punched through by Shi Xiaobai in one punch!?

Shi Xiaobai slowly retracted his fist and turned to look at the astounded four. With a grin, he said, “This King wants to fight one against three. What do you think?”

This was Shi Xiaobai’s choice.

He had wanted to fight one against three from the outset.

But the other four did not believe that he possessed such strength, and directly ignored his “arrogant” words.

In this regard, Shi Xiaobai’s method was simple and crude. He quietly walked to a wall and raised his fist.

Compared to using words to convince others, Shi Xiaobai preferred to use action to profess his decision and determination.

This punch was actually just a trick. After all, the destructive power of “Turtle-speed Divine Punch” was completely different from Shi Xiaobai’s other offensive strength. It had too many restrictions.

However, this punch was extremely shocking for the four. They had noticed Shi Xiaobai walk to the wall, but did not pay attention to what he was doing. Hence, the punch was rather abrupt, and the damage caused by that single punch made them involuntarily gasp.

This was Shi Xiaobai’s strength?

He actually possessed such terrifying destructive power!?

At this moment, Madam Ji hated Kali for her interference, preventing her from taking this child in as her “student”.

Mu Yuesheng’s face turned slightly paler. Last night, if Shi Xiaobai had used such a punch on her at that final moment... No, even if he used a tenth of the punch’s power, there was no way she

could withstand it. She should have lost last night's duel.

Mozzie's eyes were naturally sparkling with tiny stars.

Lord Shi Xiaobai is truly...truly amazing. He is gentle but possesses such terrifying power. He's the best kind of male god that can be both passive and aggressive.

Kevin's face was ashen. He believed that his destructive power was no weaker than Mu Yuesheng's. Destructive power was the last line of defense of his which he was proudest of. However, compared to Shi Xiaobai's punch, his destructive power was nothing worth mentioning.

When Shi Xiaobai saw how the four people were intimidated by his punch, he knew the time was ripe. With a wave, he said loudly, "This is just a normal punch of This King. If This King were to make a serious punch, or a super serious punch, or an ultimate invincible serious punch, this wall would have disappeared! Duel? Sorry, from This King's point of view, whether the three of you combined would be able to give This King a hint of pressure is what This King's looks forward to the most. So, don't argue any further. Just attack together!"

Shi Xiaobai smiled proudly in his heart.

"Turtle-speed Divine Punch" might be lacking in duels, but it was quite useful at a time like this.

Madam Ji's lips twitched. Shi Xiaobai's punch had proven his strength, but was this the reason for him to break public property?

Madam Ji hesitated for a moment before softly saying, "Since Shi Xiaobai has made up his mind, go ahead and fight three against one. The training goals are to improve your actual combat level. If Shi Xiaobai's strength is really completely above yours, the effects of three against one are indeed better. You three can also improve on your teamwork. After all, it is not impossible for a team segment to appear at the selection."

Chapter 180: Double Speed Mirage

Madam Ji's words were equivalent to finalizing the issue. The trio were stunned by the power from Shi Xiaobai's single punch before recalling Shi Xiaobai's bizarre long-distance running speed. Immediately, they somewhat believed that Shi Xiaobai could truly fight one against three.

Mu Yuesheng looked at Shi Xiaobai and sighed. "If it will be an interesting match, I can accept you battling against three, but I hope you will not disappoint me."

Mozzie giggled and said, "Lord Shi Xiaobai, have mercy."

Kevin did not speak but hung a cold expression on his face. He no longer objected. All he wanted to do was "teach" Shi Xiaobai a lesson. Although three against one was not something glorious, the chances of success were higher. Kevin had to admit that after seeing Shi Xiaobai's punch, he no longer had the confidence that he could beat Shi Xiaobai in a one-on-one battle.

...

There was a specialized battleground in the collective training grounds. As every year's collective training would have a free-for-all segment, the battleground was rather large in size.

The few of them quickly moved from the lounge to the battleground. Mu Yuesheng and company each stood on one end of

the battleground while Shi Xiaobai stood away from them. With that, the three against one battle was ready to begin.

Madam Ji stood outside the battleground and said, “This battle is to let each of you understand each other’s strength. At the same time, it can let you familiarize yourself in actual combat. You can resort to using your full strength appropriately, but remember, do not cause any serious injuries. [Gaia] has Psykers with healing powers who can treat your injuries after the battle so it doesn’t affect the mass selection two days later, any serious side effects, though, wouldn’t be worth it.”

“Then...go ahead and begin.”

The moment Madam Ji finished speaking, a figure immediately rushed out.

That figure rushed from one end of the battleground to the other in a split second, stunning everyone. Who else could it be but Shi Xiaobai!?

Madam Ji was astounded as well. She never expected Shi Xiaobai to take the initiative to attack first in a one against three situation.

Shi Xiaobai charged towards the dispersed trio as though he was a cheetah that dashed into a pack of wolves. His eyes were sharp like a knife, and his speed was so fast that it only left afterimages.

The trio were still considering if they should attack together or

separately. But with Shi Xiaobai charging at them, they were rendered speechless. To not seek the breakthrough of a three against one situation, he actually charged at the three of them to get them to focus fire on him. Wasn't this just courting death?

But the three of them were soon dumbfounded, especially Mozzie and Kevin. Amongst the two of them, the former had not grasped any movement techniques, while the latter only had Cloud Traversal Steps at the "Grasped Basics" realm. Against Shi Xiaobai's figure that was moving like a stream of light, they were momentarily at a loss as to how to respond.

"So fast!"

By the side, Madam Ji was astounded. With her being able to watch by the sidelines, she could directly tell how fast Shi Xiaobai was. Besides, not only was his movement technique fast, there were all sorts of fake moves. There was no way to tell where Shi Xiaobai would run next with the naked eye.

And in the three rookies' eyes, Shi Xiaobai would occasionally appear on the right side of the battleground and sometimes on the left. Although they knew that Shi Xiaobai was charging right at them, they could not grasp Shi Xiaobai's location. They could only watch as Shi Xiaobai began to move towards them.

Mu Yuesheng raised her hands as several "Radiant Charged Bolts" shot out. But like last night, none of them struck Shi Xiaobai. Her eyes began to turn serious as she prepared to use "Heavenly Lightning Summoning" when Shi Xiaobai approached her.

Kevin was secretly accumulating strength. He knew that his “Cloud Traversal Steps” could not withstand Shi Xiaobai’s movement techniques. Be it taking the initiative to attack or to dodge in retreat, he was at a complete disadvantage. If that was the case, the only method he had left was—to counter changes with consistency!

There was bound to be a flaw revealed while attacking. Kevin believed that when Shi Xiaobai attacked him, he could seize the opportunity to hit out with “Black Bear Dominating Palm”. As long as he was given a chance to strike out, he would immediately defeat Shi Xiaobai!

Mozzie took a deep breath. Although she did not wish for Lord Shi Xiaobai to lose, she did not want to lose too quickly. However, she was rather helpless against such fast-moving opponents. Her past figure destined her to be inclined towards strength and defense. Mozzie was rather confident with her defensive abilities. She was prepared to defend against Shi Xiaobai’s attacks.

In a few short seconds, Shi Xiaobai’s running from one end of the battleground to the other had caused a subtle change in the battle situation. The three rookies who had the numbers advantage all invariably chose the strategy of “defend and counterattack”. This was because Shi Xiaobai was just too fast and uncanny.

Shi Xiaobai’s figure finally arrived at the three of them under everyone’s watchful eyes. His feet never stopped because his offense had only just begun.

Who would he challenge first?

Shi Xiaobai's figure suddenly appeared in front of Mozzie. His fist raised up high and was immediately about to smash downwards. And this punch also made Shi Xiaobai's agile figure come to a momentary halt. At that instant, it was as though time had frozen.

“Ha!”

Mozzie's reaction was fast as she shouted. A dark silver shield appeared in front of her.

“B Class defensive skill, Magical Silver Shield!”

Madam Ji's eyes lit up. It was rumored that Wen Hezheng was adept at defensive skills. From the speed at which she conjured the Magical Silver Shield, it was definitely at the Familiarized Proficiency realm or higher. She was indeed worthy of her reputation.

The Magical Silver Shield appeared right in front of Shi Xiaobai's fist. As everyone held their breaths, they waited to see if the punch would shatter the Magical Silver Shield.

However, a strange thing happened. They saw the Shi Xiaobai in front of Mozzie suddenly dissipate!

“Speed mirage!”

Madam Ji was amazed that Shi Xiaobai had managed to grasp a speed mirage.

Mozzie's eyes flashed with a trace of confusion before immediately feeling a fist hit her in the back. The punch was not light nor heavy, but it caused her to stagger.

Mozzie turned her head back in shock and only saw Shi Xiaobai's afterimage, because Shi Xiaobai was already rushing towards Kevin.

In the same way, Shi Xiaobai's figure appeared in front of Kevin but immediately dissipated like a mirage!

“Do you think you can use the same move twice!?” Kevin angrily boomed.

Without even looking at the mirage, he suddenly turned around and smacked his palm out.

“Black Bear Dominating Palm!”

With him striking out, the surroundings quaked. Kevin's body seemed to ignite in flames as the palm struck straight at Shi Xiaobai, who had appeared behind him.

“Boom!”

A deafening explosion blasted as Kevin's palm struck Shi Xiaobai's chest!

Then...it directly penetrated Shi Xiaobai's chest!

This was still a mirage!

Kevin's eyes stared abruptly as at this moment, a punch lightly hit him in the back.

Kevin was already moving forward because of his Black Bear Dominating Palm, but with Shi Xiaobai's gentle punch, he lost his balance and fell forward uncontrollably. With a thud, he fell down in a miserable state.

“Double speed mirages!” Madam Ji gaped her mouth.

Chapter 181: In This King's Eyes, All Of You Are Already Dead

Having a double mirage appear consecutively in such a short period of time was clearly something greater than twice the difficulty of having a single speed mirage. It might even be several times or even ten times harder.

Shi Xiaobai had actually managed to grasp double speed mirages!

One of Shi Xiaobai's two punches that were average in strength caused Mozzie to stagger, while the other caused Kevin to fall to the ground. All of these happened in seconds, but clearly Shi Xiaobai was not satisfied with only this. Without any pause, he turned to charge at Mu Yuesheng!

Mu Yuesheng's eyes turned slightly apprehensive. She had seen Shi Xiaobai's speed mirage and double speed mirage, but she had failed to see through even the single speed mirage.

However, Mu Yuesheng did not have her confidence shaken. That was because her "Heavenly Lightning Summoning" had a wide range. Even if Shi Xiaobai used a triple speed mirage, as long as he came within ten meters of her, he would not be able to escape the attack of "Heavenly Lightning Summoning".

Mu Yuesheng looked at Shi Xiaobai's figure that was charging at her. As she began charging up her power, she went on full alert.

Afterimages, afterimages, and more afterimages!

Mu Yuesheng's pupils dilated slightly. Yesterday, despite there being a cold spotlight, she had not managed to fully discern Shi Xiaobai's figure. As a result, her missing of "Radiant Charged Bolt" was mostly because of her poor vision. But at this moment, she was able to see Shi Xiaobai's charging figure, but she was completely confused. The movements of his figures were too confusing!

There was no way for her to see clearly, but she could use her perception and her hazy vision to judge. But even if she saw it clearly, she found it extremely difficult to make a judgment. This was because her eyes were tricking her!

Left or right?

Front or back?

Mu Yuesheng looked at the series of afterimages Shi Xiaobai left behind as he ran at her. She began knitting her brows.

Shi Xiaobai clearly was wary of Mu Yuesheng's "Heavenly Lightning Summoning". He did not rush straight at her like back when he attacked Mozzie and Kevin. Instead he constantly circled in the vicinity slightly more than ten meters away from her.

"This distance..."

Mu Yuesheng was surprised that Shi Xiaobai was maintaining a

distance that happened to be just beyond the range of “Heavenly Lightning Summoning”. Shi Xiaobai had managed to judge her attack range from seeing her produce “Heavenly Lightning Summoning” once from last night.

Was this a coincidence?

Or was he just probing her?

Or could it be that Shi Xiaobai had truly grasped the information of her “Heavenly Lightning Summoning” range from that single encounter?

If it was the third possibility, wouldn’t Shi Xiaobai’s combat talents be too heaven-defying?

Mu Yuesheng was alarmed, but it also ignited a greater fighting spirit in her.

In fact, she could have used “Lightning Flashstep” to escape or use her secret techniques that she did not use last night on Shi Xiaobai, but Mu Yuesheng had her own pride as well. Since Shi Xiaobai wanted to use his movement techniques and speed mirages to defeat her, she wanted to stand motionless and use “Heavenly Lightning Summoning” in a tit for tat manner.

This was a battle between her judgment and Shi Xiaobai’s speed.

“Come, let me see how fast you are!”

Mu Yuesheng's eyes squinted slightly as she no longer used her vision to chase Shi Xiaobai's figure. Instead, she began perceiving the air turbulence that was a result of his motions. That was something that could be grasped!

Shi Xiaobai's figure ran faster and faster around Mu Yuesheng. From afar, it appeared as though there were multiple Shi Xiaobais running in circles. They were fast, highly deceptive and amazing.

Madam Ji was completely aghast. She muttered in her heart, "Dominating Refinement, no. His movement techniques is already not far from the Crest of Perfection. He is only thirteen years old. If he can cultivate his movement technique to the Crest of Perfection at the age of thirteen, even if it's Crab Steps, he will be able to stir up the entire China. [Gaia] has truly picked up a treasure...If I could..."

Kevin crawled up from the ground to his chagrin. When he turned and saw the scene, he was petrified. Even though his "Black Bear Dominating Palm" had been augmented with even more power through the use of his superpower, it was equivalent to being useless if it failed to strike Shi Xiaobai.

The present Shi Xiaobai made Kevin feel despair. It was impossible for him to spot the dazzling figures with his naked eye, so how was his palm going to hit Shi Xiaobai?

Shi Xiaobai did not stop while running in circles, but suddenly a figure rushed at Mu Yuesheng.

“Speed mirage!”

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes narrowed as she judged which was the fake image. And at the next moment, she immediately felt a light breeze blowing across her hair.

“Heavenly Lightning Summoning!”

Mu Yuesheng did not turn around not did she have the slightest bit of hesitation, because she believed that she had detected that wind which meant Shi Xiaobai.

Sparkling electric currents suddenly formed a barrier around Mu Yuesheng like testy pixies. The electro-barrier which had a resplendent goldenness amidst the icy-blue suddenly blasted outwards in the diffusive form of a circular weaving of gold and blue electric currents!

This electric current emanated out but stopped less than a meter away from the circular series of Shi Xiaobai afterimages. This was the limit of “Heavenly Lightning Summoning”.

Mu Yuesheng gently sighed and gradually closed her eyes. At the moment she closed her eyes, Shi Xiaobai’s figure appeared behind her and with a punch that was of average strength, he struck her back.

“I’ve lost.”

Not only had her vision been fooled, even her perception had been fooled. Mu Yuesheng was utterly convinced. Although she could have used “Lightning Flashstep” to escape at the last moment, when it came to judgment and speed, she had already lost.

She did not manage to correctly judge the timing of Shi Xiaobai’s attack. The first mirage had been accurately judged by her, but the second mirage had made her fall into a trap. She realized that ‘sensing the wind meant sensing Shi Xiaobai’ was just a naive thought.

Shi Xiaobai had long judged the moment when she would use “Heavenly Lightning Summoning”. No, Shi Xiaobai had deliberately created a “flaw” for her to grasp on, making her mistaken it for an opportunity.

The three rookies simultaneously cast their gazes on Shi Xiaobai, who finally stopped. In less than a minute, Shi Xiaobai had gone from one end of the battleground towards them. He had used his extremely fast speed to put them in a passive situation, to the point of not being able to move. Following that, he defeated them using a single speed mirage or double speed mirage. He had used an extremely clever battle strategy to trap them in his palms.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the three and stood with his arms held to his back and sighed. “In This King’s eyes, all of you are already dead.”

The trio lowered their heads simultaneously. Although the word “dead” sounded somewhat exaggerated, they could not deny that if Shi Xiaobai had used the punch with an offensive strength that could bore through steel walls on their backs, they would at the very least, be heavily injured and they would have lost the ability to continue fighting.

In less than a minute, they had suffered an abject failure in this three against one battle!

“Then for this battle...”

Madam Ji did not expect that the gap between Shi Xiaobai and the trio was so huge, but, this was extremely good news for [Gaia]. However, continuing this battle was meaningless. Madam Ji planned to announce the end of the duel.

“The battle has just begun!”

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly interrupted Madam Ji with a shout. A strange glint flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes as he deliberately “made” himself out to be posturing. Naturally, it was not to fraudulently win the battle, but...

“Have the three of you used all your strength?” Shi Xiaobai looked at the trio and said coldly, “If it’s because you are reluctant on using all your strength against This King because it’s three against one, reality has proven that This King has the ability to easily steamroll the three of you. Then...shouldn’t all of you do your best?”

The three of them looked up simultaneously. They questioned themselves.

Did they really give their all?

“Are you willing to be so easily defeated by This King?”

Shi Xiaobai sneered and said, “From This King’s point of view, only when success eludes you after you have given your all is it considered a failure. If you succumb to This King’s powerful strength now, then, This King will be greatly disappointed.”

“So, if you even feel a tiny bit of indignation, use all your strength!

Shi Xiaobai looked calm, but he was beaming in his heart.

Come on, go all out on This King. All your attacks are experience points.

...

Chapter 182: The Vengeful [Zeus]

Shi Xiaobai knew very clearly that as fellow rookies, even if they were deceived by “Turtle-speed Divine Punch”, Mu Yuesheng, Kevin and Mozzie would not use their full strength in a three against one battle. There was a greater possibility that they would hold back in order to probe his limits.

However, Shi Xiaobai wished to give them greater pressure. Even though this pressure could overwhelm him and make him suffer an abject defeat, he also wished that this pressure could result in something more intense.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai had to prove one thing, which was—he was very strong!

He wanted to show them that he was so strong that the trio had to work together and go all out on him.

Unfortunately, although Shi Xiaobai’s Crab Steps had reached the “Dominating Refinement” realm, overwhelming the three in terms of movement technique, his offensive means were a problem. His Pig Slaughtering Knife pursued fatality in one strike, so it was not appropriate for a battle exchange. As for “Turtle-speed Divine Punch” and “Massage Technique of God”, they were just too slow, they were clearly unable to do much. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai chose to create this false impression.

In fact, this matter was all very opportunistic. This was because Shi Xiaobai’s punch of average strength could have been easily

defended by a Psionic Barrier. However, Mozzie had failed to react after being fooled by the mirage. As for Kevin, he had attempted to use “Black Bear Dominating Palm” to have a head on clash with Shi Xiaobai but he had ignored his defenses. As for Mu Yuesheng, she had been fixated in the competition of “judgment” and “speed”, so she gave up resisting at the very last moment. As a result, none of the three managed to use a Psionic Barrier that could protect their entire body.

If not, Shi Xiaobai would not have been able to shatter their Psionic Barrier regardless of how much effort he put in. This made Shi Xiaobai recall his virtual battles. He had chosen to quit in frustration when he fought against opponents much weaker than him.

At the same time, it also sounded an alarm for Shi Xiaobai. He needed to learn a powerful skill.

The three rookies looked at Shi Xiaobai, who had a serious expression, and listened to his serious words. Slowly, they turned solemn. Even Mozzie felt fighting spirit burn in her. That phrase ‘only when success eludes you after you give your all is it considered a failure’ resonated with her. In her eyes, Lord Shi Xiaobai was a very strict teacher.

In Kevin’s eyes, Shi Xiaobai was still as hateful as ever, but he could not help but think highly of him. The three punches had already given him the feeling that Shi Xiaobai was completely on a different level from them. He also became more convinced that Shi Xiaobai was God DogLeading. That was because God DogLeading was this relaxed and cool back then.

As for Mu Yuesheng, she had always kept tricks up her sleeve, but when she heard what Shi Xiaobai had said, she could not help but ask herself, was she willing to be defeated in such a manner?

No, definitely not.

Her strength was far more than this. If Shi Xiaobai was that powerful, wouldn't it be great if she could do her best and have an undisturbed fight?

The trio's gazes changed. As true fighting spirit ignited in their hearts, they abandoned the burden of the lack of dignity to fight three against one, and was prepared to do their best.

Shi Xiaobai finally revealed a smile. He liked such indomitable auras. He liked the clamped down feeling of being repressed by clouds of doom.

“Come on, This King can no longer wait!”

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath. “This Turtle Is Hardest” and “Unleaking Turtle Aura” began circulating in his body . If he could be hurt by the peripheral attacks of the trio's all-out strength, he could both train his Crab Steps as well as hone his physique.

Therefore, let the tempest come strike harder!

“Ding Ling Ling....”

At this moment, a cellphone’s ringtone interrupted the tense battle situation.

The four people could not help but turn their heads over.

Madam Ji gave an apologetic smile and picked up the call. After listening for a moment, her expression suddenly changed. After saying a few “yea”, she hung up.

Madam Ji sighed and said to everyone. “The three-day collective training is temporarily suspended. As for this battle...stop for the moment.”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He had gone through great effort to stir the flames of war, why was she suddenly asking for it to be halted?

Mu Yuesheng immediately frowned and asked, “What happened?”

Madam Ji had a slightly heavy expression on her face as she said in a deep voice, “[Zeus]’s rookie delegation will be coming to Steel City tomorrow. So, this year’s battle exchange will be pushed ahead of schedule.”

Upon hearing this, Mozzie could not help but exclaim out loud. Mu Yuesheng also slightly gaped her mouth while Kevin’s face turned paler.

Madam Ji sighed and said, “I believe all of you know the reason why [Zeus] chose this period, and you also understand that [Gaia] has to accept the battle exchange. So, let us call it a day for now. Because, tomorrow, it is likely that you will be embroiled in an intense battle. Wait here for a moment first. We will be convening for an emergency meeting and discuss the matters regarding tomorrow.”

After Madam Ji said this, she turned around and left. From her hurried footsteps, it seemed rather urgent.

Mozzie, Kevin and Mu Yuesheng’s gazes turned solemn as all of them fell silent. The atmosphere suddenly turned depressingly cold.

Shi Xiaobai was at a loss for words as he helplessly said, “Who can tell This King, what had just happened?”

...

...

[Gaia] was once a first-tier organization in China. At its peak, along with [Zeus], they were considered the two giants amongst hero organizations. The two organizations aimed at becoming the best organization in the country. As a result, [Gaia] and [Zeus] were in a serious conflict back then. They even nearly went to war, but settled due to external pressure.

However, despite being calm on the surface, they were secretly still in dispute. The two organizational powerhouses naturally needed an outlet to vent their contention. And a battle exchange was the best outlet.

The battle exchange was held annually for rookies. On odd-numbered years, [Gaia] would lead the rookie delegation to [Zeus] for a public battle, and the opposite happened on even-numbered years.

The two organizations were of comparable strength in the beginning so such exchanges naturally had wins on both sides. Therefore, it slowly became a tradition.

However, as [Gaia] slowly declined, eventually being demoted to a second-tier organization, this tradition that persisted on lost its original meaning.

In the past ten years, [Gaia] would end in abject defeat in the annual rookie battle exchanges. They were powerless against [Zeus], because [Zeus] was still a first-tier organization domestically, so the rookie pool they had access to was far better than [Gaia]'s.

However, for its previous glory and remaining honor, [Gaia] would bite the bullet and take up the challenge even if it would shake the confidence of their rookies.

[Zeus], which was criticized for being “vengeful” clearly, would not give up the opportunity to trample [Gaia] under its feet. Every year’s rookie battle exchange revealed the disparity in strength between the two sides.

And this year, [Zeus] had taken the initiative to bring forward the battle exchange, right before the selection for the factional collective training.

They put it nicely by saying that because they were on the way, it would be good to have a warm-up prior to the selection.

However, their intentions were obvious. To the [Zeus]’s rookie delegation, this battle exchange was indeed a warm-up, but for [Gaia]?

Having experienced an abject defeat before the [Gaia] rookie delegation even set off, how much confidence could they have left?

This was [Zeus]’s goal. They lived up to their reputation of being “vengeful” and even more!

Chapter 183: This King Wants To Fight One Against All

Through Mozzie's explanation, Shi Xiaobai finally had a rough understanding of the matter.

“So, [Zeus]'s rookies are very strong?”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes shimmered slightly. Although his battle had been interrupted, wasn't there a battle happening tomorrow? As long as the opponents were sufficiently strong, Shi Xiaobai did not mind who he was fighting.

Mozzie said with a bitter look, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, [Zeus] is now one of the top three hero organizations domestically. Every year, their rookies would basically be the top students who graduate from the best secondary schools in China. Compared to us, they are much stronger...”

Kevin's said with a livid expression, “If This Genius does not remember wrongly, there are two super rookies in the current batch of [Zeus] rookies.”

Mu Yuesheng also said with a sigh, “Compared to the two super rookies, I have no chance of winning over any one of them.”

Mozzie covered her face and said, “I'm definitely hopeless. Every year, the weakest member in [Zeus]'s rookie delegation is at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. The weakest is enough to

steamroll me. Boohooohoo.”

Kevin’s scowled and said, “Damn it, by bringing forward the battle exchange, they are clearly trying to wear us down. They are pushing things too far!”

As Steel City was located to the south of China, it was located closer to Shanghai, where the collective training was held. Hence, [Zeus] used the excuse that they were on the way and as a warm up to bring forward the battle exchange. [Gaia] could actually refuse it, but from the expression Madam Ji had, [Gaia]’s upper echelons did not plan on doing so.

This was a battle exchange that they were bound to lose. Even if they could accept the outcome of losing, they would still lose some of their dignity and confidence eventually.

Mozzie had a bitter face, while Kevin was livid. Mu Yuesheng had her brows tightly knitted. The pressure the upcoming battle gave to them was evident.

“Then, how about leaving them all to This King?”

Shi Xiaobai’s voice was suddenly heard as the trio turned their heads in shock. However, all they saw was Shi Xiaobai revealing a confident and cheerful smile. His delicate face was filled with fighting spirit.

“Leave the entire [Zeus] rookie delegation to This King.”

Shi Xiaobai said in high spirits, “No matter how many they send, just watch and see. This King will beat them all alone.”

The trio stared with widened eyes. Mozzie uttered “Lord Shi Xiaobai” midway before feeling at a loss as to how to continue.

Kevin let out a dismissive sneer and said, “Do you think you are invincible? Do you know what it means to have two super rookies?”

Mu Yuesheng frowned and fell silent.

They knew Shi Xiaobai was confident, but they never expected him to be this confident. Being victorious in a one against three battle was a completely different concept from being victorious when facing the entire [Zeus] rookie delegation alone.

Any super rookie could do the former, but not a single rookie in the whole of China could do the latter.

This was because there were two definitions of a rookie. Firstly, they had to be a freshman from an organization or a university. Secondly, their psionic cultivation realm could not exceed the Psionic Mortal Realm.

That was to say, amongst the rookies, the highest psionic cultivation realm one could be was only the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. And super rookies were in the top tier of

existences amongst rookies. They were the top students in every province's secondary school graduation examination.

In this psionic cultivation realm, there was no way to open a huge rift between each other. The reason why super rookies were considered super rookies was because their synergy of the four major aspects of combat—offense, defense, flash motion, superpower—had reached the peak.

It was already considerably difficult to win in a one-on-one duel with a super rookie. So not a single rookie had a chance of winning if they fought two super rookies and several rookies at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm alone.

Even the strongest super rookie would not dare claim of being able to defeat the combined forces of two super rookies.

Hence, even Mozzie, who worshiped Shi Xiaobai fully in her heart, also echoed how Shi Xiaobai's words were being “arrogant”.

Shi Xiaobai clearly did not understand the concept of a super rookie, but even if he knew, he would not have any great changes in attitude.

Because...

“This King never fears failure. So no matter how difficult the situation is, This King can face it calmly. This King does not know what a super rookie is, but if they are strong, how could This King

miss the battle?”

Shi Xiaobai scanned the trio before grinning and saying, “Even if This King lacks the strength to fight against them all, there’s still the three of you, isn’t it?”

Kevin suddenly looked up and said in surprise, “Us?”

Mozzie blinked and muttered, “Us...”

Mu Yuesheng slowly revealed a smile and nodded, saying, “Us!”

Shi Xiaobai looked at the trio and softly said, “This King once said that only when success eludes you after you have given your all is it considered a failure. Hence, it’s still too early for you to talk about failure. Furthermore, even if you finally fail, This King will also be the first one to fail. So what is there to worry about? Besides, having lost for ten years, it’s about time to win once, isn’t that so?”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes suddenly turned solemn as he said seriously, “What you should be most worried about now is that if This King were to beat them all, you will miss out on participating in an interesting battle. This King can only sorrowfully tell you that there is a possibility of 99.9999...”

Hearing Shi Xiaobai constantly mutter the numbers “999...”, as though he was chewing on Stride gum and without any end to it, the trio were dumbfounded.

Mozzie was the first to burst into laughter as she said happily, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, I like you the most!”

Upon hearing this, Kevin’s expression changed, but the way he looked at Shi Xiaobai turned gentler than before. He patted himself in the chest and loudly said, “Tomorrow, This Genius will take the lead in battle. No one is to snatch the spot from me!”

Mu Yuesheng’s brown eyes also flashed a look of determination as she clenched her fists and said, “You are right. How can we miss out on an opportunity to fight super rookies?”

The three rookies reignited their fighting spirit. The chances of victory remained slim, but just as Shi Xiaobai had said, failure only after having given your all was considered a failure. And wasn’t it a rare opportunity to fight a peer much stronger than themselves?

Mozzie and Kevin took their cellphones out and began to search for the information about [Zeus]’s rookies on the Internet.

Kevin seized the opportunity to speak with Mozzie, but was relentlessly rejected. This hurt Kevin slightly, as he secretly decided to improve his image in Mozzie’s heart, and become even more “mature”.

Mu Yuesheng closed her eyes to begin Cogitation. It was certain that she needed to face one of the two super rookies from [Zeus]. They were all secondary school graduates from the same year, so she knew how powerful every year’s super rookies were.

They were the ones with the highest overall results in a province with hundreds of thousands of candidates. They had basically scored a perfect score in every aspect.

Mu Yuesheng did not have the confidence to beat a super rookie, but after listening to Shi Xiaobai, she looked forward to fighting a super rookie.

The trio had things they had to do for themselves, so Shi Xiaobai immediately felt helpless. He was about to propose having a battle exchange amongst themselves in preparation for tomorrow, such as going three against one.

Shi Xiaobai retracted his gaze from the trio and turned his sights onto Mu Yuesheng. Suddenly, a thought flashed in his mind that could not be restrained any further.

Chapter 184: The Darn Godlike Collapse Of Tear Ducts

Shi Xiaobai looked at Mu Yuesheng as a thought flashed through his mind.

“This King remembers that Violent Girl once said that Safety Pants Girl’s Mind Expanse is very low, so her cultivation speed is very slow. If that is the case...”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes suddenly lit up. He had found something to do!

Shi Xiaobai immediately walked towards Mu Yuesheng.

Mu Yuesheng’s meditative state was extremely shallow, so once she sensed someone walking over, she immediately opened her eyes. Seeing Shi Xiaobai, she asked in wonderment, “Yes?”

The things that happened today drastically decreased Mu Yuesheng’s bad impression of Shi Xiaobai. Although Mozzie’s excuse of “Massage Slimming” still sounded very doubtful, she knew that it was just one-sided love on Mozzie’s part. The two had yet to do any unspeakable things.

Kevin and Mozzie also looked over. Subtly, Shi Xiaobai had already become the focus of their attention.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and without any hesitation and said, “This

King has a way to improve your cultivation speed!”

The moment he said this, Mu Yuesheng was first stunned before calming down. She asked again, “Do you mean...cogitation cultivation techniques?”

Cogitation affected one’s cultivation speed. And the effectiveness of Cogitation depended on cogitation cultivation techniques and one’s Mind Expanse. The first thing she thought of when she heard Shi Xiaobai’s words was that he planned on sharing a more advanced cogitation cultivation technique with her. Immediately, Mu Yuesheng felt somewhat touched.

However, Shi Xiaobai’s answer was clearly not this. This was because he had never used so-called cogitation cultivation techniques in his Cogitation.

Shi Xiaobai did not keep up the suspense and shook his head. He said, “No, This King is referring to...Mind Expanse!”

Mu Yuesheng’s pupils slightly contracted when she heard this. Quickly, she gave a bitter smile and said, “Why are you making fun of me?”

Numerous experts had researched for countless years but had failed to achieve anything in the field of Mind Expanse. By saying that he could allow her to cultivate faster by working on her Mind Expanse, this was a joke that hit her soft spot. It was not at all funny.

Kevin immediately wanted to mock Shi Xiaobai, but turning around to glance at Mozzie, he immediately tolerated it. He began telling himself, be more mature, be more mature, be more mature...

Mozzie clearly had great confidence in Shi Xiaobai. She hurriedly said, “Lord Shi Xiaobai will definitely not make errant jokes. He is definitely able to do what he claims!”

Shi Xiaobai followed up on Mozzie’s words and said seriously, “This King obviously does not joke around needlessly. This King does have the means to improve your Mind Expanse. Although This King’s ability can only result in a temporary increase, which means it will recover to its normal state after a period of time, there is not one bit of falsehood in truly raising it.”

Noticing Shi Xiaobai’s seriousness and how he said that it was a “temporary increase”, Mu Yuesheng felt a flicker of hope. Even if it was a temporary increase, it would be extremely good for her. It was as though it would be a matter of great happiness if a paralyzed girl could stand up and walk for a minute.

Mu Yuesheng took a deep breath and asked, “What’s the method?”

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his hands and said, “The method is very simple...massaging!”

“Bul...”

Before Shi Xiaobai was even done, Kevin wanted to shout out the word “bullshit”, but he hurriedly held back after uttering it midway. He shut his mouth and gave a stiff smile. Again he recited to himself the “Be Mature Sutra”.

Mozzie’s eyes immediately lit up and jumped over to Mu Yuesheng and said, “Sister Yuesheng, that’s awesome! Lord Shi Xiaobai’s massage is very amazing. You already know why I was able to slim down!”

Mu Yuesheng was left speechless. She was wondering how massaging could result in slimming down and also improve one’s Mind Expanse.

Are you trying to fool a three-year-old child? That’s not right. Even a three-year-old child would not fall for it, right?

Shi Xiaobai noticed Mu Yuesheng’s look of disbelief. With a thought and a roll of his eyes, he walked over to Kevin.

“What...”

Noticing Shi Xiaobai walk over to him, Kevin wanted to say in a nasty tone, “what the heck do you want”, but after saying the first word, Mozzie caught the corner of his eyes. Again, “Be Mature Sutra” was immediately activated and with a stiff smile, he asked gently, “Is there something you need?”

Shi Xiaobai did not speak but stretched his hand out towards

Kevin's shoulder.

That hand appeared very, very slow to Kevin. Every second, there was a voice resounding in his mind, "Quick, hit that bastard's hand away", but immediately another voice would retort, "Be more mature, be more mature..."

Kevin tolerated it, but finally, when Shi Xiaobai's hand touched his shoulder, there was a heavy pinch!

Kevin's eyes stared and immediately tears overwhelmed him.

Tears flowed down his cheeks as though a river was bursting its banks. Kevin hurriedly turned around to wipe his tears, but for some reason, his tears constantly gushed out from his eyes. He did not feel grief at all, and even wanted to curse, but for some reason, he could not control his tear ducts.

Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng were immediately stunned in disbelief. From their point of view, Shi Xiaobai had only pinched Kevin in the shoulder once, and Kevin was already crying.

Was it this painful? Was Kevin actually such a crybaby?

"Do you see that? That is This King's Massage Technique of God!" Shi Xiaobai pointed towards Kevin and said loudly.

That's right. The reason why Kevin cried was obviously because of Shi Xiaobai's Massage Technique of God. This move was called

“Divine Massage’s Collapse of Tear Ducts!”

“So it was you!”

Kevin turned around angrily. His face was overflowing with tears, but just as he wanted to curse another word or two, the “Be Mature Sutra” activated once again. Immediately, Kevin whimpered as he turned around to continue wiping his tears. His aggrieved look was rather endearing.

Mozzie chuckled and gave Shi Xiaobai a big thumbs up. “Awesome, my Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

Mu Yuesheng glanced at Kevin. Despite her numerous doubts, she could not comprehend this unscientific scene.

Just a single pinch made a person’s tear ducts collapse. Was this even fucking reasonable?

But...

“Can massage truly...improve my Mind Expanse?”

Mu Yuesheng felt a glimmer of longing.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and once again stretched out his evil hand at Kevin. Compared to words, he preferred to prove himself using his actions.

A second later.

“Hahahahahaha....”

Kevin began bursting in laughter with tears streaming down his cheeks.

Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng could not bear to watch. This massage technique was toxic!

“Hurry...hurry up and help me stop it...”

Kevin truly felt like crying.

As Shi Xiaobai looked at Kevin’s “miserable” look, he shook his head and sighed. As a person, he was just too soft-hearted. Shi Xiaobai reached out his hands and pressed on Kevin’s shoulder twice.

Instantly, Kevin returned to normal as he immediately jumped away. With his hands crossed and holding his shoulders, he looked at Shi Xiaobai as though he was looking at a monster.

Since time immemorial, the East had four sorceries¹. Kevin had once gasped in admiration for it, but now, from his point of view, Shi Xiaobai’s massage was even more terrifying than the four sorceries.

Shi Xiaobai turned and look at Mu Yuesheng. With a shrug of his shoulders, he asked, “How about it? Now, you should understand how powerful This King’s Massage Technique of God is, right?”

Shi Xiaobai looked at Mu Yuesheng as he sighed in his heart.

The path to leveling up was truly long and difficult.

Mue Yuesheng was indeed tempted, however, she was still somewhat hesitant. This was because she recalled Mozzie’s ecstatic moans from last night. This left a deep mental scar on her with regards to Shi Xiaobai’s massage techniques.

“Is it just...a massage of the head?” Mu Yuesheng weakly asked.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, “Massaging the temples would do. The longer the massage, the longer the effects.”

Upon hearing that only her temples needed to be massaged, Mu Yuesheng secretly sighed in relief. However, when she heard how the longer the massage was, the longer the effects would last, she slightly knitted her brows. She naturally wished that the improvement in her Mind Expanse would last longer, but if she were to be like Mozzie...

“Then...I’ll give it a try.” Mu Yuesheng sighed.

Compared to the “turmoil” of having too low a Mind Expanse, massaging her temples did not seem like an unacceptable matter.

Mu Yuesheng closed her eyes as though she was going for broke, as though she was a soldier about to rush out into the battlefield.

Shi Xiaobai pursed his lips and had a thought in his mind.

Do you need to go this far? Not only is This King’s Massage Technique of God extremely effective, it can also guarantee you extreme comfort. You can’t even help but moan. Especially by massaging the temples, that feeling would definitely be...

Shi Xiaobai reached out his “evil” hands towards Mu Yuesheng’s temples.

Chapter 185: A Super, Super Flirting Expert

Mu Yuesheng closed her eyes nervously. When Shi Xiaobai's fingers touched her temples, she felt a slight chill. Shi Xiaobai's fingers were not cold, but her face had heated up slightly.

“Phew.”

Mu Yuesheng took a deep breath as she found it hard to clear her mind.

The fingers that had landed on her skin began to suddenly move. Gently, the fingers pressed down, causing her burning head to immediately feel like it was being dunked into a basin of cold water. The cold feeling was beyond control.

Mu Yuesheng drew a gasp as she felt her mental clouds clear up in her mind. The images she imagined in her mind appeared as though a veil had been lifted, making it extremely clear.

Mu Yuesheng immediately wanted to attempt Cogitation.

However, the fingers moved once again without any rhythm before pressing heavily down on her. This pressure caused her mind that was being unraveled to be dunked into mud. A ice-cold feeling that swept her entire body began flowing down like a river through every blood vessel she had. The blood in her vessels felt as though they were boiling, as a heat arose. Her skin instantly turned ruddy, as her body alternated between hot and cold. She

found it extremely comfortable, and could not help but...

“Uh...”

Mu Yuesheng could not help but moan once.

“Ah!”

Mu Yuesheng immediately recalled the immoral sounds that came from Mozzie’s room last night and instantly panicked. She felt the thumbs that were pressing on her temples move again and immediately pressing down on her. Mu Yuesheng’s eyes widened abruptly, as bolts crazily sparked. Her body transformed into an icy-blue stream of light as she rapidly charged backwards.

“Phew...Phew...”

Mu Yuesheng took two deep breaths from being in a state of shock. That massage technique was toxic!

“What’s wrong?” Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes and asked curiously.

Mu Yuesheng gaped her mouth, but was unsure as to how to answer. Could she answer—No, your massage feels too good, I can’t stand it?

Mozzie was the one who understood Mu Yuesheng’s dilemma the

most. She immediately ran to her side and said to Shi Xiaobai with a smile, “Sister Yuesheng isn’t feeling well. Next time then.”

Mu Yuesheng looked gratefully at Mozzie. She finally understood deeply the difficulties Mozzie had felt.

Shi Xiaobai found it somewhat regretful but he did not force it on her. He nodded and said, “Alright, This King will look for you tonight.”

“Ah?”

Mu Yuesheng panicked and hurriedly said, “No...there’s no need.”

Shi Xiaobai asked in wonder, “You don’t want to improve your cultivation speed?”

Mu Yuesheng was stunned. She certainly wanted it. It was her wish all along, but the sounds she had produced were just too embarrassing.

Mu Yuesheng’s face blushed as she began hesitating. She did not know whether she should mildly reject him, or first agree to it before thinking of a way out.

Mozzie immediately said with a straight face, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, leave this matter for another day!”

Mu Yuesheng hurriedly nodded a few times, as her impression of Mozzie kept improving.

“Alright!”

Although Shi Xiaobai was eager to level up, he did not want to force himself on others. He was just wondering what had happened.

Was his Massage Technique of God causing discomfort?

That didn't make sense. According to the theories instilled into his mind by the system, the Massage Technique of God could stimulate the senses. It should have been very comfortable.

Kevin, who was watching all of this on the side, noticed Mu Yuesheng's embarrassment without any hint of anger, and then Shi Xiaobai, who “acted” perplexed. He secretly took out his cellphone and quickly sent out a message.

Kevin: “Lord God, Lord God, I know who my love rival is. That bastard is a flirting expert. A very, very skilled one. What should I do?”

...

...

[Gaia] Headquarters, in the meeting room for the highest levels, the doors and windows were tightly shut. Very little light penetrated, so darkness filled the entire room, as the repressed atmosphere emanated.

The four Division Ministers were sitting at one of the four corners each. Under the shadows, it was difficult to discern even their bodies.

The gray-robed elder stood in the middle of the room and said softly, “What do all of you think of about this matter.”

Silence lasted for a while.

Yama Minamiya was the first to break the silence. He said, “In my opinion, we should not accept it. We should find an excuse to refuse the bringing forward of the battle exchange. The children are still young after all. The mass selection itself is already stressful enough. If they got defeated before the selection during the battle exchange, their confidence would get shaken.”

The moment Yama Minamiya was done with his statement, a shrill voice resounded. Chaos said, “Refuse? How do we refuse? [Zeus] has been eyeing [Gaia]’s ‘Heritage Series’ over the past few years. Refusing the battle exchange is tantamount to giving them the opportunity to pounce over and bite us. Or else, why have we been putting up with the humiliation for a decade?”

The fat pig-like Order said with a heavy voice, “There is definitely no way we can reject them. The battle exchange is our final level of peace on the surface with [Zeus]. Once we reject them, the headlines on tomorrow’s Hero Daily will be—[Gaia] refuses exchange battle. As a result of ignominy, [Zeus] has announced to be at odds with [Gaia].”

Madam Ji sneered and said, “That bunch of old fogies at [Zeus] has always been waiting for this chance. Every year, they would appear abnormally enthusiastic about it. And every time, they would do their best, so as to make us shrink back from the overwhelming odds and be the ones to take the initiative to cancel this tradition. Even if we refuse the pushing forward of the exchange battle, they will likely announce to the world that we have refused the battle exchange.”

Yama Minamiya gaped his mouth but did not say a word. He certainly knew of the reasons behind it, but was feeling indignation over it.

The gray-robed elder muttered to himself before saying, “It seems like there’s no need to discuss on this matter any further. We can only accept the battle exchange, and we must hype it up more than previous years. Tomorrow’s training shall be halted for a day. All the rookies are to watch the battle exchange. The residents of Steel City should also be invited. We have to exceed the audience size of past years. Inform the media and contact the reporters. Make this matter reach the headlines and let every citizen in China see it. Even if [Gaia] is now in a slump, our rookies are still filled with courage, and our friendship with [Zeus] remains.”

After the gray-robed elder had said this, the atmosphere in the room immediately turned even more depressing.

Yama Minamiya hesitated for a moment but he could not help but say, “Isn’t this a bit too...unfair to these children?”

The gray-robed elder immediately said coldly, “No, this is fairness. For the past ten years, every batch’s rookies have suffered the same humiliation. What makes this year so special? As long as they remember this humiliation and feel enraged, and finally turn this anger into motivation, that’s all that matters.”

Yama Minamiya said in a deep voice, “Those children are to participate in the mass selection in two days. If they suffer a terrible defeat in public tomorrow, it will be difficult for them to adjust themselves psychologically. After all, they are still very young.”

The other three Division Ministers fell into silence. Although they knew that they could not refuse the battle exchange, they did not want to be as heartless as the gray-robed elder to promote and hype up the battle exchange. After all, each division’s rookie representative was the rookie they thought highly of.

The atmosphere reached an extreme state of repression.

Chapter 186: Can I Borrow Your Hand To Smack Faces

The gray-robed elder sighed and said, “They are already considered lucky. Every odd-numbered year, the rookie delegation goes all the way to the battle exchange at [Zeus]’s home ground. There, they suffer the outpour of taunts and booing. At least for this year, the battle exchange is organized by [Gaia].”

Upon hearing this, Yama Minamiya said softly, “Isn’t such luck... too depressing?”

The gray-robed elder fell silent for a moment before saying, “It is not impossible to transmute depression into strength. It’s been decided then. All of you are to comfort your respective division’s children. Let them be mentally prepared that they will likely suffer an abject defeat at tomorrow’s battle exchange. However, failure is not terrifying, what is terrifying is remembering the humiliation and ignoring the other useful things.”

The four Division Ministers fell silent and nodded.

“Then, the meeting has ended.”

...

The meeting amongst the upper echelons of [Gaia] did not go on for long because the decision was destined from the beginning. Shi Xiaobai and company did not wait too long before the four Division

Ministers came. Yama Minamiya announced the confirmation of the battle exchange that was to be held tomorrow. He also hinted to the quartet that the exchange battle would have a large audience.

The three day collective training was also officially terminated. The four Division Ministers led their own division's rookie away. They did not need to think over their words, because they just repeated the same words to the rookies that were participating in the battle exchange every year.

The general gist was to treat the battle exchange normally.

You might be inferior to others, but that is only temporary. Although you will likely lose tomorrow, or even suffer a miserable failure, to the point of the audience booing you, you should not lose your confidence. You can feel humiliated, but you cannot just see the humiliation. It is most important that you should learn the lesson from your failures and obtain progress.

These words did not sound pleasing to the ears, since the battle exchange had yet to begin, but they were spoken to under the assumption that they had already lost. It sounded like the Division Ministers were jinxing it. But in fact, every batch's rookie representatives knew very well that there was a huge rift between them and [Zeus]'s rookies. It was just like difference between the top scholars from Peihua University and second-rate undergraduates.

Therefore, although in past years, the rookie representatives would nod and say yes with waning excitement, their hearts were

actually suffering in silence.

However, this year was different. The answers from the four rookie representatives surprised the four Division Ministers.

Mozzie said, “Even if it’s a loss, This Mosquito will make the other person pay the price!”

Order Division Minister was first astounded that the fat girl, Wen Hezheng, had transformed into Mozzie. Then, he was stunned that the gentle and kind Wen Hezheng would say such dominating words. He quietly took out a treasure from his treasury and said, “Eat this, quickly become fat again!”

...

Kevin said, “This Genius will be first to fight. Wait and see Division Minister. This Genius will definitely clinch victory in the first battle, kickstarting off to a good one.”

Creation Division Minister, Madam Ji, found Kevin somewhat different than his usual self. Despite winking at him charmingly to hint at something, Kevin was unmoved. This made Madam Ji look at him in a different light.

...

Mu Yuesheng said, “I’m looking forward to battling the super rookies.”

Chaos Division Minister, who was always crafty, showed a rare sincerity to Mu Yuesheng. He probably saw something on Mu Yuesheng that made his heart melt. Division Minister Chaos, who was also good with words, did not speak much. Instead, he said, “Do your best. There will be one day you will leave super rookies in your dust.”

...

Shi Xiaobai said, “This King wants to fight them all alone.”

Annihilation Division Minister, Yama Minamiya, had long known of Shi Xiaobai’s “confidence”, hence the person he was most worried about was precisely Shi Xiaobai. With him being confident enough to think that he could beat all of them alone, the setback dealt to him would probably be much greater than the rest if he suffered an abject defeat tomorrow.

Yama Minamiya sighed. He recalled of fourteen-year-old Riko and the rookie delegation that had headed to [Zeus] to participate in the rookie battle exchange three years ago. Back then, [Gaia]’s rookie delegation suffered seven losses out of seven battles. Other than Riko, who managed to last a little longer before being defeated, the other rookies had suffered a crushing defeat at the onset.

Back then, at [Zeus]’s home ground, all sorts of jeers, boos and mockery resounded throughout the stadium. Other than Riko, who stubbornly stared down the audience, the other six rookies were

left in tears as they lowered their heads.

Most of the members of the rookie delegation would eventually recover their confidence, and treat the battle exchange as an unforgettable “learning experience”.

However, there were a few rookie representatives who failed to pick themselves up, resulting in them falling into misery and confusion. And these rookies who lost their confidence were usually the rookies who were previously confident to the point of being arrogant.

Shi Xiaobai was very similar to those people.

Yama Minamiya was worried. With a thought, he decided to give Riko a call and send Shi Xiaobai back to Riko’s apartment.

...

...

This matter was indeed quite sudden, but many people were already mentally prepared. Before the rookies entered [Gaia], they had naturally searched about information regarding [Gaia]. And the battle exchange that was associated with [Zeus] appeared higher on the search rankings due to [Zeus]’s prestige. Therefore, other than Shi Xiaobai, all the other rookies knew about the “unfair” battle exchange that was held annually.

However, with the match coming earlier this year, it was quite a “coincidence”.

The malevolence in it could be guessed by a majority of rookies. Other than complaining, they had nothing else they could do. In fact, there were a number of rookies who experienced schadenfreude when it came to the battle exchange. For example, Hua Pengju, who had been ridiculed by others as Erectile Dysfunction after his balls were shattered, clearly looked forward to Tu Dahei suffering a brutal crushing by the [Zeus] rookies tomorrow.

Before receiving Yama Minamiya’s call, Riko had already learned of the news. This was because [Zeus] had unreasonably announced it on their official website; hence, the entire Steel City was aware of the news.

Clearly, [Zeus] had no intention of seeking the opinion of [Gaia]. They only informed [Gaia], which was immediately affected by this, in passing when they were already en route.

Riko was waiting in her apartment, sitting on a sofa with a deadpan expression. She was holding up her chin while thinking over something. Her brows were slightly knit, as though she was deliberating something, but her eyes flickered and appeared to form a dark resolve.

After Shi Xiaobai opened the door and entered, Riko gently got up to walk over to him.

“Oh? Are you not feeling well?”

Shi Xiaobai looked into Riko's eyes and saw that the fair snow-like skin on her face had a strange hint of redness. She looked like she was a little sick, so he could not help but ask softly, “Do you need This King to help massage you? It's not that This King is tooting his own horn, but This King's Divine Massage...”

“Shi Xiaobai!” Riko interrupted Shi Xiaobai's sentence as her expression looked grim and serious. She had a seriousness Shi Xiaobai had never seen before from her.

Shi Xiaobai's expression also gradually turned serious.

Riko suddenly burst out into laughter like the blooming of pear flowers. She stretched out her hand to pinch Shi Xiaobai's cheek and cocked her head slightly. She asked softly, “I want to smack some people in the face. Can I borrow your hand?”

After a momentary stun, Shi Xiaobai grinned and answered, “Alright, This King loves smacking faces.”

Chapter 187: Come On Out, The Extremely Cute Little Loli

[Zeus] had posted on their official website without informing [Gaia] of the news. Upon knowing of [Zeus]'s intentions to bring forward the battle exchange, Riko was infuriated. She was furious over [Zeus]'s unreasonableness and how it had gone too far.

After receiving Yama Minamiya's phone call, she gradually calmed down. Yama Minamiya had exhorted her to help Shi Xiaobai be mentally prepared. She felt indignation, but had no choice but to agree. This was because she was similarly afraid that Shi Xiaobai would be like a rookie who had suffered an irrecoverable blow after going to [Zeus] with her to participate in the rookie battle exchange.

But when she entered [Gaia]'s online discussion forums, she noticed how it was unanimously discussing how terribly the [Gaia]'s rookies would end up losing. There were a few message threads with flammers fueling the flames of schadenfreude, while other flammers were speculating on the number of seconds the rookie representatives could hold on for.

These forum users were anonymous, which made them brazenly joke on this matter.

Riko was furious but she felt her heart go cold. Later on, she saw

an analysis thread which analyzed the results of the battle exchange from recent years. It had a teasing comment—If [Gaia] is able to win a single match, I'll stream myself eating shit live, three piping hot bowls!

Riko sneered but was helpless. She anonymously posted a thread, and the general gist of the post was—"As fellow members of [Gaia], can't you have a collective sense of glory?"

Not long after, there were numerous replies.

Flamer A: Can collective glory be eaten? How many cents per pound is it?

Flamer B: Are you sure it's not collective glory but collective shame? Anyways, I will be supporting [Zeus] at tomorrow's battle exchange. Only by supporting them will there be any glory.

Flamer C: The Emperor of Truths is here. Dang Dang Dang. There is only one truth—Actually, theOP is one of the rookie representatives for tomorrow. He's here on the forum to seek comfort, but he ended getting ruthlessly flamed by flamers. He can only curse at others, but there is no collective glory. Actually, OP, don't you worry. Since no one has any expectations for the lot of you, just remember to lose nicely tomorrow. Do it in a cool fashion. It's best if you just throw in the towel the moment you go on the battle stage and say 'Your father is admitting defeat, you play by yourself'. Do you know, the more you struggle, the more repulsive you seem? In order to last an additional second or two, you'll show all sorts of ugliness. It's very amusing, and we will have to work hard at holding back our laughter. Do you think it's

easy on us? So I'm begging all of you. Just lose more straightforwardly!

Flamer D: Post above me is the truth. Pleading to not struggle.

...

Riko was so infuriated by the internet flamers that she was on the verge of tears. However, she was helpless against those shameless flamers. They were precisely this shameless because they were anonymous.

Riko responded a few times before throwing her cellphone in anger.

The more she thought, the angrier she became. Especially when she recalled the avalanche of taunts and booing she experienced at [Zeus]'s base three years ago, it made her short of breath.

The mockery and booing from back then and the flamers on the discussion forums outraged Riko, but she was helpless to rebut them. She wanted to smack them heavily in the face till their darn faces were all lopsided. However, having lost her battle exchange match, she was not qualified to do so.

Anger, grievance, a chilling heart. With these negative emotions in her heart, Riko thought of Shi Xiaobai. She realized he had never frowned when an absurd thought that could not be repressed crossed her mind.

Hence, when Shi Xiaobai returned, Riko asked, “I want to smack some people in the face. Can I borrow your hand?”

She wished that Shi Xiaobai would be able to win one round and smack [Zeus] in the face. It would also smack the flammers on the discussion boards in the face. She knew she was being willful, but just like the rookie evaluation test, the present her could only rely on Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai was obviously clueless about the complex history of this matter, but from Riko’s eyes and expression, Shi Xiaobai felt an intense desire from Riko.

He did not know whose face she wanted to smack by borrowing his hand, nor did he know how difficult it would be.

However, he remembered that he had once said—Violent Girl, you are already This King’s person.

Could a king disappoint his subjects?

No!

Definitely not!

Hence, regardless whose face it was, regardless how difficult it was, Shi Xiaobai would definitely smack them, and he had to

smack them hard!

Hence, Shi Xiaobai did not ask any further and only answered, “Alright, This King loves smacking faces.”

This conversation was only two sentences long before it came to an end. Riko hummed a cheerful tune as she prepared lunch happily. Shi Xiaobai silently walked back to his room.

Hiding outside the door, Yama Minamiya, who was prepared to eavesdrop to see how Riko was going to mentally prepare Shi Xiaobai, was astounded. After he pondered for a long while, he revealed a pleased smile on his lips despite his worried gaze.

...

...

After Shi Xiaobai returned to his room, he closed his door and sighed softly.

Face smacking was an art. It had a variety of forms. Under different situations, the different forms gave a completely different refreshing feeling and portrayed awesomeness.

For example, for tomorrow’s face smacking. If he relied on Crab Steps and Filthy Turtle Divine Technique to cause his opponent to collapse, was that a face-smacking?

Of course it was considered one, but such a face-smacking was definitely not a great one. It wasn't pleasurable enough, or at least, Shi Xiaobai would not like it.

Furthermore, having sensed Riko's repressed anger and desire to fight back, he disliked such sort of face-smacking methods that bordered on "teasing" even more.

This was because this face-smacking method was like using a dull knife to cut meat. Although it was painful, it was still too slow.

What Shi Xiaobai wanted was to slash so quickly and randomly, to the point of not giving the opponent a breather, smacking them heavily in the face.

And other than using Pig Slaughtering Knife, he did not have the ability to do so. The knife technique that was in pursuit of a single fatal strike was inappropriate for a battle exchange.

Shi Xiaobai walked to the side of his bed and raised his right hand with a blank expression. There was a unique golden pattern on his right hand, as though it was some ancient text, but it also looked like a mysterious totem.

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his left hand in silence as he used his index finger to poke at the golden pattern on the back of his right hand. The golden pattern suddenly shimmered.

Shi Xiaobai poked it another two times as the golden pattern flashed in an unstable fashion.

“This King pokes, pokes, pokes, pokes, pokes...”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes stared as he crazily poked at the golden pattern with his index finger, he was even childishly matching it to some sound effects.

The golden pattern began to shimmer incessantly with every pressing down of Shi Xiaobai’s index finger, and Shi Xiaobai did not seem like he had any intention to stop.

Finally at one point, an extremely cute loli voice sounded from the pattern nervously.

“Stop, stop, stop poking!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly stopped and with a grin, he said, “Little Black, hey Little Black, stop pretending to sleep. Do you think This King can’t do anything to you?”

“Sob, sob, sob. You are so bad.”

The golden pattern produced an aggrieved complaint.

Shi Xiaobai raised his left hand and stretched out his index finger, as though he was going to continue poking.

The pitiful loli voice immediately resounded, “No...Little Black was in the wrong. Big Brother, let me go.”

Shi Xiaobai grunted lightly and lowered his finger. He asked, “Why were you pretending to sleep?”

The golden pattern fell into silence and flickered slightly.

Moments later, instead of answering, it retorted with a question, “Big Brother, why did you take so long to expose Little Black?”

Shi Xiaobai also paused for a moment before saying, “You have already signed a blood pact with This King, which means you are This King’s sword. This King permits you to have your secrets, and This King also respects your choice.”

The golden pattern flickered and after a few moments, it asked, “Then, Big Brother, why are you ‘awakening’ Little Black now?”

Shi Xiaobai gently poked the golden pattern and softly said, “That’s because This King wants to learn swords, so This King needs you now.”

The golden pattern flashed violently a few times.

“Giggle....”

A pleasant and childish laughter resounded before coming to a stop.

The moment the laughter stop, the golden pattern on the back of Shi Xiaobai's hand bloomed a bright golden light. A ball of golden light floated out from Shi Xiaobai's hand and a sacred but mysterious aura was revealed.

In the golden ball of light, there was a petite figure. It was about the height of a six or seven-year-old child. However, with it being enveloped by the golden light, there was no way to discern what the person looked like. Shi Xiaobai could only barely judge that it was a young child.

The dazzling golden light illuminated the room in a layer of golden light before dissipating moments later. As the golden light particles seeped into the ground, the room was filled with a fresh aroma.

The figure in the light also gradually revealed its true colors.

...

Chapter 188: King Of Lolicons

As the golden beam dispersed, the figure enveloped within slowly revealed itself. The strong fragrance was still existent after the golden light particles seeped into the ground. There were still the clear hums of a sword.

When the final golden ray dissipated, a petite figure landed slowly from mid air to the ground.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes focused slightly as the wing of his nose moved slightly. He gaped his mouth and did not speak for a moment.

The figure was in the shape of a girl six or seven years old. She had delicate facial features that did not look human. She wore a princess gown that had no other colors except white. As for her skin, it was much whiter than the princess gown. However, it was white in a matte and smooth manner, like smooth, creamy jade.

Her waist-long hair was white with a slight trace of pink. From top to the bottom, other than her black eyebrows, pale golden pupils, and the nearly invisible nostrils and tiny pink cherry lips, there was no other color other than white. However, this whiteness was not monotone. There were hints of red in the whiteness, but there were parts as white as snow, or as white as jade. It gave Shi Xiaobai the feeling that he was experiencing a visual feast of whiteness.

The moment the snow-white loli landed on the ground, she raised her head like a proud peacock. With a childlike voice, she

said, “See, Little Black isn’t black at all.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai immediately said in all seriousness, “The name Little Black is rather cute.”

The loli pursed her lips and snorted, saying, “Little Black suspects that Big Brother has a problem with his aesthetics.”

The loli’s expression while speaking was extremely adorable. Shi Xiaobai could not help but poke the loli gently in the cheeks.

“Jerk!”

The loli immediately took a step back and reached out her two tiny hands to hold onto Shi Xiaobai’s finger.

Shi Xiaobai felt as though his finger was being clasped by two blocks of ice. There was a chill in the coldness as Shi Xiaobai quickly reached out his other hand to pinch the loli on her cheeks. Her cheek was slightly cool, soft and had a bounce to it.

The loli widened her eyes instantly and retracted her tiny hands to hold its face. She said in dismay, “Big Brother, are you...the most, most, most, most, most terrifying biological creature under the nine heavens and ten thousand worlds, known as a lolicon?”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. He did have the urge to reach out and pinch her in the face when he saw the cute loli. Was this a lolicon? But the name sounded not bad.

Shi Xiaobai said in high spirher, “No, This King is the most, most, most, most, most terrifying lolicon under the nine heavens and the ten thousand worlds. This King is known as the King of Lolicons!”

The little loli retreated two steps back in fear as she suddenly rolled her eyes and said loudly, “Stupid Big Brother, you are too naive. Do you think that This Sword Spirit is truly a loli?”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned as he swept his gaze across the loli’s body and guessed, “Don’t tell me...you are a cute boy?”

As though struck by a malicious surmise, the loli leaned against the wall and trembled. With a loud voice, the loli said, “This Sword Spirit has been born for...”

The loli began counting using her fingers...

Moments later, she said with a bitter face, “Anyway, This Sword Spirit has lived for a very long time. Although this body looks tiny and young, there is a very, very mature heart in it, so This Sword Spirit is definitely not the type of loli Big Brother likes.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded nonchalantly and said, “This King understands. Let’s talk about proper matters. This King is now in urgent need of a sword technique that can destroy the world, tear through the void, slay gods and demons in one strike. It also has to be worthy of This King’s name. Since you are very, very mature, you should know a move or two?”

The loli was confused hearing this, but the loli caught the last words clearly. Immediately, with a loud voice, she said, “Of course, This Sword Spirit is very, very mature. Everything is known!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up and after a moment of hesitation, he said, “Since you have signed a blood pact with This King, you are This King’s sword spirit. This King does not ask for much. One move, oh. No, two moves. This King only needs two moves. How about it? Explain it briefly, and with This King’s intelligence, all it takes is three minutes to learn a move.”

The loli finally understood him finally. She stared for a moment before suddenly shaking her head. Like a tiny adult, she sighed and said, “Stupid Big Brother is hopelessly dumb! Big Brother does not even know Beginner Sword, so how can he learn any world destructive sword techniques? This Sword Spirit may have heritage memories of sword arts, but it will not be able to let Big Brother’s sword technique rise so much instantaneously.”

Shi Xiaobai was left temporarily speechless before he said, “Then teach This King Beginner Sword first.”

Shi Xiaobai still understood the concept of learning things in order.

The loli hesitated for a moment upon hearing this. Suddenly, she walked towards Shi Xiaobai and stretched out her two tiny arms.

Shi Xiaobai was sitting on the bed, and seeing the loli’s actions,

he was taken aback before he realized what was going on. He reached out his hands and carried the loli to his lap and immediately, he felt like he was hugging a cold piece of jade, but it also felt like soft cotton.

The loli stretched out her finger and pointed at Shi Xiaobai's glabella. A pale golden beam shimmered around her fingertips.

“Big Brother, you will soon see Beginner Sword memories from This Sword Spirit's sword art heritage. Use your mind to comprehend every move. Comprehend it fully. Typically, you will take half an hour to understand the profoundness of Beginner Sword. Of course, the faster you comprehend it, the higher Big Brother's talent in swords is. Are you prepared, Big Brother?”

The loli spoke with a rather dignified and solemn posture.

Shi Xiaobai nodded as he slowly closed his eyes.

A golden beam bloomed between the fingertip and his forehead, as a strange sword-shaped pattern slowly emerged, before entering Shi Xiaobai's glabella.

Shi Xiaobai's body quivered and quickly fell silent. His breathing turned gradual as though he had fallen asleep.

The loli retracted her fingers and jumped onto the soft bed from Shi Xiaobai's lap. After rolling a few times, she hugged a quilt and let out a childish shriek.

“Damn it, damn it, this is just too nasty!”

The loli hugged a quilt with a cute and dazed look. Her expression and gaze made her look like an angry young girl.

“This kind of acting as a loli is truly difficult, even for a day.”

The loli looked up at the ceiling and then turned to glance at Shi Xiaobai. Angrily, the loli said, “It’s all your fault! Dripping a drop of blood would allow This Sword Spirit to recover, and each of us would go their separate ways. But to take advantage of the sword, forcing This Sword Spirit to sign a slave contract. Truly detestable!”

The loli complained a few times before lying on the bed. Blinking her eyes at the ceiling, her gaze seem to look far into the distance.

More than ten minutes later, Riko’s voice from outside was heard. “Shi Xiaobai, come out and have your meal!”

The loli was awakened in shock as she transformed into a golden beam of light before sinking into the back of Shi Xiaobai’s right hand.

Chapter 189: Ye Siblings

After a while, Riko pushed the door and entered. Coming in front of Shi Xiaobai, she shouted and gently shook him a few times. Noticing that Shi Xiaobai did not stir at all, she said in shock, “Deep meditative state?”

Riko was astounded.

Others would thank their lucky stars if they could enter a deep meditative state once in their entire life. This rascal had managed to enter a deep meditative state twice in less than a month? How many people would die of envy for this talent and this luck?

Riko was also a bit envious, but was mostly happy for Shi Xiaobai. With a gentle smile, she pinched Shi Xiaobai in the cheek and left, closing the door behind her.

Moments later, the loli appeared once again. She lay on the bed and began to keep track of time. In fact, she was very curious about Shi Xiaobai’s talent in swords. After all, from her observation the past few days, Shi Xiaobai’s cultivation talent was shocking. It was unlikely his talent in swords was too terrible.

But soon, half an hour passed since Shi Xiaobai entered the meditative state. The loli sighed in disappointment. Taking half an hour to gain insight into Beginner Sword was just a normal person’s standard.

With the passage of time, an hour, two hours, three hours...

In a blink of an eye, five hours passed.

However, Shi Xiaobai had not woken up. Furthermore, he seemed as though he was going to continue sleeping.

The loli was first shocked and stunned, before being rendered speechless and finally turned numb. She frowned and said in a despairing manner, “To think that he’s a one in a hundred years, rare...idiot in the way of the sword! Why am I so unlucky... Ahhhhh....”

...

...

In the evening, a middle-sized private jet landed at the airport in Steel City.

There were hundreds of people waiting at the airport. They were gathered along the two sides of a walkway. Some were holding banners, with words like “Zeus is invincible”, “Heartless is the strongest”, “Sunless is the prettiest”.

The gray-robed elder, who enjoyed the highest status in [Gaia], and the four Division Ministers were waiting in front of the walkway. Only when the plane landed did they steadily walk towards the plane.

The first people to walk out of the airplane's hatch were three elders. One was a middle-aged man with a commanding presence, while another was a middle-aged woman that had yet to lose her beauty. As for the last person, his appearance immediately incited screams and gasps from the hundreds of people.

Despite being a white-haired elder, his complexion was like a child's. His eyebrows were like swords and his eyes were like stars. His straight posture made him resemble an unsheathed sharp sword. However, his gentle expression seemed to conceal a hidden edge.

The elder carried a brown wooden sword behind his back. The middle-aged man and woman simultaneously fell back behind the elder. Since the elder walked slowly, they also ended up walking even slower.

“Your Excellency God of Swords!”

The gray-robed elder and the four Division Ministers welcomed the sword-bearing elder with a slight bow in a respectful manner.

On both sides of the walkway, people began discussing.

“To think that His Excellency God of Swords is leading the delegation personally. Isn't [Zeus] thinking too highly of this batch of rookies?”

“Friend, you are too ignorant. Don’t you know that the Ye siblings are the direct disciples of His Excellency God of Swords? It’s understandable that His Excellency God of Swords is worried over the long trip to Shanghai.”

“I never expected myself to have a chance to see His Excellency God of Swords. The trip here to the airport to welcome [Zeus] was truly worth it.”

“...”

The sword-bearing elder nodded slightly at the gray-robed elder and said, “Give my regards to One-Pun. Tell him that his old friend misses him very much.”

The gray-robed elder nodded and said, “Definitely.”

At this moment, seven people walked out from the plane one after another.

A teenage boy and girl who were right in front were the focus of attention. The teenage boy was very handsome, while the teenage girl was as beautiful as a fairy. On closer look, one would find the duo similar in appearance.

However, the teenage boy had sharper facial features, along with a proud and overbearing expression. A high and mighty smile hung on his lips.

The teenage girl's facial features were softer and more delicate. Her beauty was breathtaking, but her expression was very cold. Her eyes were as cold as frost.

The teenage boy was in a black leather bomber, with a black sword behind his back. The girl was in a long white dress, with a silver sword by her waist. The two walked side by side, and their black and white figures appeared as though they had come from another world.

Nearly everyone who were here to greet [Zeus] at the airport was waiting for these two people. When they saw them in person, they forgot to cheer, and some even forgot to breathe.

They were a pair of twins. They were both direct disciples of the God of Swords. Before this year's secondary school graduation examinations, the elder brother had suddenly transferred to another province, and as such the siblings managed to each become the top scholar of a province.

Other than being siblings, they were also the super rookies of China. They were also the idols of numerous youths. That was because, from their talent and strength to their appearance, they were impeccable and flawless.

The teenage boy was called Heartless.

The teenage girl was called Sunless.

The crowds on both sides of the walkway choked in silence for a moment before they finally shouted in unison.

“Heartless is the strongest! Sunless is the prettiest!”

The shouts resulted in deafening echoes that filled the airport’s soon-to-be dark evening scene.

Heartless gave a mild smile, as though he enjoyed the situation of being welcomed by a crowd.

Sunless’ face was cold, as though she did not like the deafening din.

Walking behind the Ye siblings were four teenagers of all shapes and sizes as well as an extremely fat girl. At this moment, they were not even qualified to accentuate the siblings.

However, the five did not appear vexed. They looked at the two figures in front of them with their eyes filled with worship.

These seven people were the seven [Zeus] rookies that were participating at the upcoming mass selection. On the way there, they had come to Steel City to participate in a battle exchange that was left with no suspense. Without even considering the Ye siblings, just the five rookies themselves were proud children of heaven. Anyone of them would be a strong candidate to be a Rookie King in [Gaia].

...

...

The night was very calm, but also very uncalm. The reason for the calmness was because the delegation from [Zeus] did not come out after checking into a hotel. Hence, nothing serious happened in Steel City. The reason why it was uncalm was because of the news of One-Pun's return.

This was quite a thought-provoking matter. This was because One-Pun and the elderly God of Swords had a story that had to be mentioned.

Twenty years ago, a fledgling One-Pun had once "asked" the God of Swords for advice on the way of the sword. The outcome was him suffering an abject defeat after three strikes. Ten years later, which was also ten years ago, One-Pun had a sword summit at Mt Saint, but was regrettably defeated after three hundred strikes.

There were three God of Swords and ten Sword Masters in this world. From ten years ago up to this day, One-Pun was placed amongst the ten Sword Masters and never lost his title. Back then, people said that if One-Pun had used his fist, he might have defeated the God of Swords. But when it came to swords, One-Pun was still too young.

But now, a decade had already passed.

Twenty years ago, he suffered an abject defeat in three strikes.

Ten years ago, he was sadly defeated after three hundred strikes.

What about this year?

How many hundred more strikes could he withstand?

Was it possible that this year...a new generation would exceed the older one?

This matter determined the position of the God of Swords, so it was naturally something that garnered a great deal of attention. And this moment had come extremely suddenly. First, the God of Swords had personally escorted his disciples for their safety. Next, news of One-Pun rushing back to Steel City meant that it was portending to a matter that was about to happen.

With the descent of the rain, it was not a calm night.

Chapter 190: Back In The Day, Against The Headwinds, Thirty Feet I Could Pee, But Today, My Shoes Are Soused Despite Tailwinds

The rooftop of Steel City's Gaia Steel Tower was the highest spot in Steel City. Standing on the rooftop, one could overlook the entirety of Steel City and take in the vastness of the land beneath. Reaching out one's hand felt as though one could touch the starry night sky.

The circular platform on the tower's rooftop was only about four meters in diameter. The elderly God of Swords and One-Pun were each standing on one side, while...peeing.

One-Pun looked down to glance at the outcome of his battle and turned his head to look at the God of Swords. Quietly, he pulled up his trousers and said, "Senior, you have lost."

"I'm getting old."

The God of Swords shook his head with a sigh before saying, "Back in the day, against the headwinds, thirty feet I could pee, but today, my shoes are so soused despite tailwinds. I'm getting old, I'm truly getting old..."

One-Pun was expressionless as he said, "Since you have lost, you have to fulfill your promise and cross swords with this junior."

The elderly God of Swords fell silent before speaking moments later, “If this old man can’t even best you in peeing, how could this old man win against you when crossing swords? No crossing, definitely no crossing.”

One-Pun was taken aback and said, “What sort of logic is this? Senior, are you trying to go back on your word?”

The God of Swords did not answer and instead retorted, “Do you know why I carry this wooden sword around?”

One-Pun pondered for a moment before he shook his head and said, “No, I don’t.”

The God of Swords pulled out the wooden sword and passed it to One-Pun. After a moment of hesitation, One-Pun reached out his hand to take it over. However, the moment he took it, a trace of surprise flashed across his face. He wondered out aloud, “This sword...?”

The God of Swords grinned. He was missing two front teeth, but his teeth were white and neat. He slowly pointed his right hand to the sky and shouted, “Jian Xilai!”

Jian Xilai was the God of Swords’ name.

However, he was not summoning himself. He was summoning a sword that came from the west which shared the same meaning

behind his name.

A sword tore through the night sky like a streaming beam of light from an unknown origin before landing in the God of Swords' hand.

“Hum...”

The sword's hum was clear as it echoed through the starry sky.

The God of Swords caressed the sword as though he was stroking a lover. He said softly, “This is my sword, as for that wooden sword, it's just a piece of wood carved into the shape of a sword.”

One-Pun frowned and asked, “What's the meaning behind this? This junior doesn't understand.”

The God of Swords turned around to look at One-Pun. His eyes sparkled brightly, at a magnitude much brighter than the stars. He minced his words and solemnly said a word.

“Posturing!”

After saying this, the God of Swords laughed out loud, a bold laughter reminiscent of his prime.

He carried a wooden sword behind him to posture. This explanation sounded irrational but was also very reasonable.

One-Pun stared dumbfounded as his gaze slowly turned serious. He said in a solemn voice, “This junior did not imagine Senior to be a person who cared so much about reputation.”

The God of Swords slowly lost his smile and said, “The position of the God of Swords is very unstable. I do not know how many more years I can sit in this spot. Ironical, isn’t it? In the past, I didn’t care for it, but now, I think of any means to not get off it.”

One-Pun said with a wry smile, “The God of Swords are just words recognized in the hearts of people, why does Senior need to concern himself about it so much?”

The God of Swords looked far into the distance and said softly, “It is natural you can’t ignore traditions when you are concerned about a title. At least before the day those two children ween of the reliance of a sword, I will not step down from the position of the God of Swords.”

One-Pun was enlightened as he said, “So that’s the reason.”

“Those two children” were naturally the Ye siblings. One-Pun never expected the “lofty” elderly God of Swords would go that far for the duo. Of course, the word “lofty” might have always been a misconception of his.

It was still possible to find a fairy or two that did not partake in mortal pleasures, but an old man who did not partake in mortal pleasures appeared to be one of the few greatest illusions in life.

One-Pun thought for a moment before saying, “For Senior to think so highly of them, it appears that the two children are extraordinary.”

The God of Swords’ eyes brightened a few notches as his mood improved greatly. He said with a laugh, “It’s far from extraordinary, they are practically a dragon and phoenix pair. I’m not bragging when I say that the two children’s talent in sword arts can trash the past you. They are just slightly weaker than my past self.”

One-Pun’s mouth twitched slightly. He had gotten a whole new understanding of the elderly God of Swords today.

He remained speechless, but his eyes were filled with anticipation. To him, the more geniuses there were in the world, the more stable the human establishment would be. This was an extremely good thing because in this age of calamities, true heroes were needed. True mighty figures were needed for the unpredictable apocalypse in the future as well.

It was as if the God of Swords had his chattering seal unsealed. Without waiting for One-Pun to respond, he continued on, “Twenty years ago, I wanted to take you in as a disciple, but you refused. It had hurt this old man’s heart. Tomorrow, don’t you run and take a look at the good disciples I found over the past two decades. Take a look at the future Gods of Swords.”

...

...

The next day, despite it not being the focus of all attention, the exchange battle that still received the attention of many finally proceeded as planned.

It was made mandatory for the [Gaia] rookies to watch the battle exchange. Therefore, regardless if they were willing or not, they arrived at the competition venue early in the morning. The venue was a circular stadium that could seat at least ten thousand people. It was built for various competitions. For example, this year's Rookie King was to be born here, and any battle exchanges with other organizations were held here as well.

The citizens of Steel City could watch such a battle exchange every other year. In fact, they did not have much anticipation for it, or it could even be said that they did not look forward to it at all. However, there were always some cheapskates who wanted to watch a free show, or others who felt the need to witness the Ye siblings' awesomeness. In addition to the news of the elderly God of Swords' attendance, this battle exchange exceeded the scale of past exchanges. It went from less than half the seats filled to nearly half-filled.

The candidates for the battle exchange from both sides had long arrived in their respective lounges. The battle exchange was like in the past. There were a total of seven rounds for the rookies to battle it out. Although victory was decided after four battles, all seven battles had to be fought even if the seven battles all ended in defeat.

In [Zeus]'s lounge, other than Sunless being aloof and sitting in a corner with her eyes closed, the other six rookies were chatting merrily as they surrounded Heartless. However, they were not discussing the battle exchange, but the mass selection the day after tomorrow.

No one took the battle exchange to heart. For them, it was just a mission from the organization. They just needed to go on stage and defeat their opponent in the shortest amount of time. There was no need to deliberately ridicule their opponents since disregard was the cruelest derision.

As for the [Gaia]'s lounge, it was in a mess because they were missing a person.

Riko had sent a message which said: "Tu Dahei is now in a deep meditative state, so it is unlikely he will be able to make it!"

Compared to a battle exchange that was destined to suffer an abject failure, being able to enter a rare deep meditative state was naturally a hundred times more important. No one would unreasonably say things like, "deep meditative state my ass, quickly wake him up".

Mozzie was overjoyed instead of being worried. In the silent lounge, she cheered and said, "Shi...Lord Tu Dahei is awesome!"

Kevin twitched his mouth and echoed Mozzie by saying, "Yea, it's a good thing."

Mu Yuesheng was still in Cogitation with her eyes closed, but an undetectable smile appeared by the corner of her lips.

In contrast, there were three other rookies with ashen expressions. In order to make up seven people, they had been chosen as contestants at the very last minute. They were already in a terrible mood, and now with Tu Dahei having lucked out by entering a “deep meditative state” to “dodge the calamity ahead”, they felt truly jealous.

The three could only grumble softly, but they did not dare to speak further.

A deep meditative state was indeed something rare. No one wanted to wake Shi Xiaobai up. Even Riko, who had pleaded for Shi Xiaobai to smack faces yesterday, was delighted. She was even more overjoyed and forgot all about what had happened yesterday.

However, [Gaia] was still short of a person.

The upper echelons of [Gaia] decisively chose a substitute randomly from the rookies. They had made Shi Xiaobai appear last. If he could get here in time, he would be sent up to do battle. If he could not, he would be substituted by that person.

The substitute was already cursing in his heart. The finale was bound to be one of the Ye siblings. Letting a person like him, with a power level of five [1](#), fight, wouldn't that just be courting death?

At this moment, a person suddenly appeared in the lounge.

The moment the person entered, he said loudly, “Me wants to participate in the battle exchange!”

...

Chapter 191: Looks Competition MVP

A person with an “extremely vicious” look stood at the lounge’s door. He was tall and burly. His short sleeve shirt exposed muscles that bulged out like fists. On first look, they looked like hard and cold stones.

In addition to his stout build and fierce look, a circle around his short black hair was shaved off. He combed up a lock of yellow hair like a rooster’s crown, and his eyes were burning with anxious and savage flames. A hideous scar went from his forehead down past his right eye. His mustache was a messy scrawl, and a prominent double chin brought out the hideousness of his face.

When everyone in the lounge first saw this person, they were startled, especially from the anxious aura he gave off. They thought a ruffian had arrived.

But when the person opened his mouth, it fully gave the people the understanding of what it meant to be a Voice OTL-er [1](#) as they too figuratively collapsed in front of him when he opened his mouth.

“Me wants to participate in the battle exchange!”

The moment he opened his mouth, all that impressiveness and rousing stance he had was overwhelmed by his honest tone and expression.

As Ye Jiaquan looked at everyone looking at him with dumbfounded expressions, he scratched his head out of habit and he said loudly once again, “Me wants to participate in the battle exchange!”

The rookie who had been roped in to substitute Shi Xiaobai had his eyes lit up as he immediately said, “This...brother. What’s your name? What’s your psionic cultivation realm? Are you a rookie of [Gaia]?”

Without any hesitation, Ye Jiaquan replied, “Me name is Ye Jiaquan. Now, Me is at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm and is a rookie of the Annihilation division!”

The rookies were taken aback. Even Mu Yuesheng opened her eyes and gave Ye Jiaquan a curious glance.

Third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?

The weakest person here was at the fifth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm but even he did not have the slightest bit of confidence. Having not even crossed the first step at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, wasn’t it a joke to volunteer to challenge the [Zeus] delegation who were all at or around the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?

The substitute was disappointed as he said, “Big bro, you came to the wrong place.”

The three other rookies began to mock in laughter.

“It’s commendable to have such courage at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.”

“I have to comment that what you said made me relax. I was still rather nervous a moment ago.”

“Brother, nice going. If you stand there, you might scare the opponent silly, as long as you don’t open your mouth.”

Ye Jiaquan scratched his head and gave a silly smile, as though he could not tell the mockery in the rookies’ words.

Mozzie frowned. The mocking attitude of the other rookies had made her a bit uncomfortable, but she could not do anything about them as they were mentioning facts.

Mozzie looked at Ye Jiaquan and said, “Sorry about that. We can’t make the decision. You can go out the door, turn left, and walk straight. Then, make a right turn to walk into another corridor. There, in the room at the end of the corridor, you can find Division Minister Minamiya.”

Ye Jiaquan was taken aback as he nodded and said, “Alright, thank you!”

Ye Jiaquan turned around and left after saying that.

Seeing Ye Jiaquan's back, Kevin frowned slightly. He found the name "Ye Jiaquan" familiar, but he did not know where he had heard it from.

Mu Yuesheng slowly closed her eyes as a trace of doubt flashed in her mind that everyone else had overlooked. She knew that there wouldn't be any powerful security guards outside the lounge, but there should have been security guards present to prevent the contestants from being disturbed...How did this rookie, Ye Jiaquan, come in?

But at this moment, the other four rookies who were feeling a mountain of pressure finally found something to release the pressure, and they began chatting without any further thoughts.

"When that big guy came in, wasn't it a bit frightening? I was wondering where the ruffian came from and nearly yelped for help. Who knew that he's a Voice OTL-er. Haha"

"Yea, I thought so too. Before he opened his mouth, he sounded like a dominating king, but the moment he opened his mouth, he was like an idiot, the especially silly kind."

"How do you think the Division Ministers are going to deal with this matter?"

"I believe he will be taught a good lesson, and counseled. Although the big guy is quite silly, his courage is commendable."

“Sigh, what a pity. If the battle exchange was a competition of looks, with the person with more threatening looks winning, he would definitely be the MVP!”

As the four rookies chattered cheerfully, despite their words filled with derision, what they said was the irrefutable truth.

Ten minutes later.

With Yama Minamiya in front and Ye Jiaquan behind, the two entered the lounge.

Yama Minamiya looked at the substitute and said, “You can go back and rest.”

Everyone was alarmed and guessed of a possibility as they looked at Ye Jiaquan in disbelief.

Ye Jiaquan scratched his head and said honestly, “Me will work hard, please give your advice!”

Everyone drew a cold breath.

What was going on?

Getting a person at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm to be a substitute that would appear at the end?

Was it because they had nothing to lose?

...

...

At ten in the morning, the battle exchange was finally about to begin.

The half-filled stadium was meant the audience turn up was larger in scale than previous years, but most of the audience were there to watch the awesomeness of the Ye siblings. They also had the tiny hope of seeing Jian Xilai, who had held his spot as God of Swords for several decades.

And most people did not have much of an expectation for the battle exchange. This was because based on past year's results or this year's participant lineup, there was no suspense left to this battle exchange.

The only thing that could be barely be considered an unknown was the number of seconds the [Gaia] rookies could last.

Very soon, a man in a suit walked slowly to the middle of the stadium. Evidently, he was the host of the battle exchange.

“Everyone, the battle exchange is about to begin. Please warmly

welcome the rookies from both sides!”

The host’s voice was amplified through the microphone in his hand throughout the entire stadium as the audience’s din gradually quietened down.

“First, let us invite a well-known organization in the country. It is ranked as one of the top three organizations in China, the internationally renowned [Zeus]. Please give your applause to welcome this year’s rookie delegation from [Zeus]!”

The moment the host said this, the audience began to erupt into applause. It was not especially enthusiastic since this was [Gaia]’s home ground after all.

But as the [Zeus] rookies appeared, especially when the Ye siblings walked out, the applause suddenly heated up. There were cheers undulating throughout the stadium. It was evident how popular the Ye siblings were.

The seven [Zeus] rookies lined up to the right of the host and looked relaxed and calm. A few of them even waved to the audience, as though what followed next would be a stress-free performance.

“Next up, let us welcome one of the world’s former top ten organizations, which once managed to rank first in China’s organizational rankings for six consecutive months, with a fine tradition and glorious history, [Gaia]. Please give your applause to welcome the new batch of [Gaia] rookies!”

The suited man was no doubt a host chosen by [Gaia]. When he delivered the welcoming speech, he raised his tone by several octaves, and the contents of his speech was well prepared, with deep tones of praise.

However, the praising appeared too obvious. The applause was sparse, and there were even some boos mixed in. It was hard to believe that this was [Gaia]'s home ground.

Chapter 192: Take Ten Million To Feed The Pigs!

As the host had gone overboard with his praises, there was a lot of booing when the [Gaia] rookies appeared. The situation turned extremely awkward.

However, when Mozzie appeared, there were several shouts such as, “Wow, what a cute chick”. And when Mu Yuesheng finally appeared, most of the [Gaia] rookies cheered and screamed.

When the [Zeus] rookies realized that the cheers the [Gaia]’s rookies received were worse than theirs, they laughed at the irony as their belittlement grew in intensity. However, when they saw Mozzie appear, a few male rookies had their eyes slightly light up. After all, it was rare to see such a lovely and cute chick.

Ye Jiaquan lined the back of the team. When he appeared, all the Annihilation rookies were taken aback. They secretly wondered over the silly big guy’s appearance.

However, most of the audience did not know Ye Jiaquan. They could not help but stare widely as Ye Jiaquan’s ruffian-like aura caught their attention.

In Team [Zeus], there were two people who greatly changed their expressions when they saw Ye Jiaquan. Their eyes flashed with complicated looks.

The seven [Gaia] rookies lined up to the left of the host. They were more or less nervous, forming a stark contrast from the other team.

“The organizations, Gaia and Zeus, have deep ties of friendship. Every year, a rookie battle exchange is held. The goal of the battle exchange is for the rookies to participate in an exchange so that there will be common progress...”

The host read the clichéd opening address and the battle exchange’s rules. Sensing the displeasure in the audience, the host sped his speech up and finished in a few minutes.

“Then, before we begin the intense battle exchange, let’s hear what the rookies participating in this exchange have to say!”

The host hurriedly announced the next segment, an extremely clichéd smack talk before the match. However, this segment clearly stirred up the emotions of the audience greatly. Although it was unlikely they would see any trash-talking, it was also very nice to hear the Ye sibling’s voices.

The host knew what was on the minds of the audience as he turned around to walk towards the Ye siblings.

When the host came in front of Heartless, he gave an impassioned shout, “[Zeus] rookie, Heartless Ye. Top scholar of the Hubei province and this year’s super rookie. The direct disciple of the God of Swords, Jian Xilai, and has the nickname of the Young God of Swords. Let us hear what Heartless has to say before the

battle exchange begins!”

The audience immediately broke out into a warm round of applause and cheers. Some of the audience even shouted “Heartless is the strongest”. The scene seemed to have boiled over.

Heartless’ fame was not only because of his status as a super rookie and the God of Swords’ disciple. The main reason why he was so well-known was because of a video.

The video had gone viral, and it had once entered the top ranks of trending searches on Hoogle. In the video, a young Heartless had slain ten calamity fiends using a single black sword and saved three children in distress. His cool attitude and unyielding expressions were highly approbated, allowing him to attract countless of fans, and become a subject of discussion.

The host passed a microphone to Heartless.

Heartless still had an unyielding expression as ever, but he seemed to be in a somewhat terrible mood. His face was somewhat livid as well. After he took over the microphone, he exhaled twice as though he was trying to calm his mood.

The audience was surprised before they slowly quietened down. They looked at Heartless and pricked up their ears.

“Three minutes ago, thirty minutes ago, and even three hours ago, my friends and I had a view regarding this battle exchange.”

Heartless' voice was filled with a magnetic charm that matched well with his extraordinarily handsome face. When he spoke, he exuded an intense charm.

Everyone could not help but be curious.

What thoughts did the [Zeus] rookies have regarding this battle exchange?

Heartless paused for a moment and said in a deadpan manner, "It was...not having any view."

The audience broke into an uproar as they immediately gave a thunderous applause. This speech filled with undisguised disregard happened to be what the audience liked the most.

Heartless raised his head, with an arrogant expression and said loudly, "We do not have many thoughts on opponents several levels weaker than us. We would not belittle them or hold back, but we would not give our all. It's just like stepping an ant to death. To us, it's just raising our feet to stamp downwards. Simple, direct and without any waste of energy, without spending time considering why an ant should be trampled to death. To us, this battle exchange is just a simple matter. It's so simple that we do not even have the desire to waste a word discussing it!"

The moment Heartless said this, the [Zeus] rookies other than Sunless, were the first to applaud. A few even whistled.

The stunned audience did not immediately react to Heartless' extremely arrogant speech. It was like he had disregarded himself of any humiliation. But soon, the members in the audience engaging in schadenfreude began applauding and whistling.

The audience had their emotions stirred up by the atmosphere that smelled of gunpowder. Soon, they began joining the ranks of the whistlers. This was the treatment given to the strong. The [Zeus] rookies were powerful, and Heartless was even more stunning, so they had the right to be so arrogant. The audience enjoyed seeing their arrogant declarations.

The audience supporting [Gaia] and the [Gaia] rookies felt their faces sink. However, they were unable to refute at all because despite Heartless saying an exaggerated truth, it was still the truth.

Indeed, the disparity in power between both sides...was just too great.

“But!”

But!

But?

Heartless still had words to say, and even used a contrasting conjunction word?

“But, I now have a new point of view!”

Heartless scanned his surroundings with an arrogant look. His words attracted the attention of everyone.

New point of view? Could this be...some unexpected twist?

The corner of Heartless' mouth suffused a sneer as he said, “Due to some personal reasons, I have a new point of view. I want to express this point of view to my teammates. Listen well, my dear brothers and sisters. We will win, and that is inevitable, but! I ask of you, I plead of you to win faster! Win faster than ever!”

The [Zeus] rookies all turned to look at Heartless.

Before everyone fully understood what Heartless meant, Heartless took a few steps forward and turned to face his teammates and said loudly, “Everyone, do your best! End the battle as fast as you can! I will give a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills as a reward to the person other than me who wins the fastest!”

When everyone heard this, they drew a gasp. A hundred Psionic Condensing Pills was worth ten million Chinese currency, furthermore it was something that had a price without a market!

Other than Sunless, the eyes of the other five rookies burned immediately.

However, Heartless' declaration had yet to come to an end. He

shouted his remaining words almost immediately.

“Also, I’m now declaring! That if I cannot finish a battle in three seconds, I will use another hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to feed the pigs!”

Chapter 193: If Shi Xiaobai Were Here

“Also, I’m now declaring! That if I cannot finish a battle in three seconds, I will take another hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to feed the pigs!”

The throwing out of this statement was so astonishing that it dumbfounded everyone.

Taking out a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to reward the person who won the fastest. What sort of extravagant act was this?

And another hundred Psionic Condensing Pills would be fed to the pigs if he could not finish his battle in three seconds. What sort of idiotic...Oh, that’s not right, what sort of confidence was this, to the point of doing such a flagrant act?

At this moment, numerous members of the audience became fans of Heartless.

And of course most importantly, the audience were suddenly filled with anticipation for the seven matches. They looked forward to the visual feast of the [Zeus] rookies ending the match at the fastest speed possible.

The five [Zeus] rookies were filled with anticipation. They wished for the battles to begin as soon as possible.

A hundred Psionic Condensing Pills! It was ten million Chinese

currency! This reward was just too tempting!

In the audience stands, there was a corner which had an invisible barrier that blocked the light. The elderly God of Swords and One-Pun were sitting side by side in it.

The elderly God of Swords laughed out loud and said, “Well done, nicely done. He resembles me back in my day!”

One-Pun was silent.

Taking out two hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to posture was all the result of your damn teachings!

The faces of the audience who supported [Gaia] deep down and the seven rookie representatives sank. They could deeply feel the ‘insult’ from Heartless.

The host had secretly received money from [Gaia]’s upper echelons, so he did not dare to idle any further. With a stiff expression, he said “well said” and quickly took over the microphone from Heartless’ hand. Following that, he briskly walked over to the [Gaia] rookies.

Now, the only way to turn the situation was to pay them back with more vicious words!

The host scanned the group and immediately saw the domineering-looking Ye Jiaquan. As his eyes lit up, he

immediately walked over.

“Let us listen to what the [Gaia] rookies think of this battle exchange!”

The host held the microphone up to Ye Jiaquan and winked at him secretly, gesturing to Ye Jiaquan to blow the bugles of retaliation.

Ye Jiaquan took the microphone over with a deadpan expression. The audience also quietened down upon seeing this scene. This man that looked like a monster was probably someone with an extremely grumpy temper. It was a curiosity what sort of explosive words he would deliver after being humiliated in such a manner.

The audience started to look forward to it.

After Ye Jiaquan took over the microphone, he turned to look at the [Zeus] rookies and Heartless, who had a unruly and cold expression, and said, “Me will be the seventh one fighting. Me will work hard...to last past three seconds. But if Me luckily holds out for more than three seconds, can the Psionic Condensing Pills not be fed to pigs? Pigs will die from being fed Psionic Condensing Pills.”

The audience was stunned. They could hardly believe their ears. Such a burly man with a face of a ruffian was actually so gentle and kind? It was completely subversive, however...why did they suddenly feel like “it’s better to support [Gaia]” after hearing his words?

Many of the audience's eyes gradually softened down.

Of course, there were members of the audience who mocked nastily. After all, Ye Jiaquan's words had the tone of humbling himself. It was easily considered a sign of weakness.

Heartless' cold eyes turned colder, as cold as a snowstorm in the middle of winter.

Sunless' eyes seemed to melt as she gently gave an undetectable sigh.

Some people were pleased with Ye Jiaquan's declaration and felt like he was countering hardness with softness. Others were displeased with Ye Jiaquan's announcement and felt like it was an act of a coward.

And the person who was most displeased was the host. His face had turned black as he began to worry that the other half of the bonus promised to him at the end of the battle exchange had gone up in flames. He quickly snatched the microphone in Ye Jiaquan's hand and passed it over to the rookie beside him.

The rookie appeared to be overly nervous. He spoke with a stutter, and did not seem like he was mad at all. The audience immediately laughed at him.

The host turned anxious and snatched the microphone to pass to

the third rookie beside him. That rookie had a flair for acting and said a sentence, “I want to ask, are there any rich guys on our side? If there’s a rich guy, take out a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to reward the person who lasts the longest. We will definitely do our best to last till the end!”

His words sounded quite interesting and if this was a live broadcast variety show, the screen would probably be filled with “666” that resembled thumbs-up . However, using those words at such an occasion was simply being worse than a coward. The audience immediately burst into laughter, but their disdain towards the [Gaia] rookies grew stronger once again.

The host nearly fainted as he snatched the microphone and struggled to say with a laugh, “Ha...ha. Wasn’t that a very interesting declaration? The trash talking before the battle exchange shall end here. Let’s immediately begin the first match of the battle exchange. Contestants, please go to your respective resting areas. Three minutes later, please send out your first combatant! I’ll repeat the rules. Today, there will be seven battles, winning four rounds wins the match, but all seven battles have to be fought. The goal of this battle exchange is to learn from one another, so please do not use a Tianji horse-racing strategy [1](#)!”

The host put an abrupt end to the pre-battle declaration segment.

The [Zeus] delegation, who could not wait for the beginning of the battle exchange, immediately turned to head to their respective resting rooms. As for the [Gaia] contestants, they slowly walked to the passage on their end.

At this moment, there were three people on [Gaia]'s side that were feeling terrible. In his panic, the idiotic host had not chosen any one of the three of them to make the declaration. Regardless of how incapable they were, they would definitely have said something to regain their morale.

However, the trio simultaneously had a thought. That thought hovered in their minds and took a long time before they dissipated away.

Mozzie thought, if Lord Shi Xiaobai were here...

Kevin thought, if that bastard Shi Xiaobai were here...

Mu Yuesheng thought, if that darn hooligan Shi Xiaobai were here...

If Shi Xiaobai were here, in a smack talking segment, then the people who would blow their tops in fury would definitely be the bunch of bastards across them.

Ah, the sudden pining for Shi Xiaobai.

...

...

After the rookies from both sides entered the resting areas, One-

Pun and the elderly God of Swords suddenly appeared in the stadium. Every member in the audience stared widely as their hearts beat like thunder.

Was the sudden appearance of the two men a result of them planning on crossing swords that had happened every decade in the past twenty years?

The audience started to look forward to it.

However, the host quickly stood forward to explain. One-Pun and the elderly God of Swords were to serve as the competition's referees. As this battle exchange permitted the use of weapons, the two mighty experts were to hold down the situation. They would fairly determine the outcome of the battle and save the person in need of urgent rescue if the time came.

This sort of competition typically needed a mighty warrior as a referee, but for One-Pun and the elderly God of Swords to personally take up the roles as referees was surprising.

This was too damn grandiose. It was just a few kids fooling around, but they actually used an S Class hero and one of the world-famous God of Swords as referees?

Chapter 194: Who Should Receive The Academy Award For Best Actor

The audience was stunned, but they immediately responded with the greatest of enthusiasm. They could already count their lucky stars for being able to see the two godlike people in person, but to watch them be referees, they could boast about this for a year. That's not right, a decade wouldn't even be too much!

However, if the audience were to learn the reason why the duo became referees, they would probably break out into chaos. That was because the elderly God of Swords had pestered One-Pun to witness the impressiveness of his two disciples up close.

With his first time ever (of being a referee) being robbed away from him through such a lame reason, One-Pun was rendered speechless. However, he did want to properly witness how impressive the Ye siblings were.

Three minutes was a very short period of time. As the audience cheered, the passage of time passed without anyone realizing it. Only when the two contestants appeared from their respective passages did the audience gradually calm down.

The first combatant from [Zeus] came out from the right passageway. He had a burly figure and he was a youth with bulging muscles. He was startled the moment he saw the elderly God of Swords and One-Pun. Following that, he immediately thickened his face to ask One-Pun for his autograph.

After One-Pun responded that he never gives autographs, the burly youth grinned at the elderly God of Swords, who immediately scolded out loudly with a chuckle, “Get lost”. As a result, the burly youth hurriedly left them in a dejected manner. The audience could not help but break out into laughter.

After the burly youth ran away, he directly ran towards the host by the side. After passing the host a stopwatch, he said loudly, “Make sure to do a good job timing. If this bro gets a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills, I will give you three!”

The members of the audience who were pouting finally could not resist the ridiculousness of the situation and burst out into laughter. Many of them took out their cellphones and found the stopwatch function and said jokingly, “We will time it together. Don’t you try to bribe the judge!”

The atmosphere and nature of the battle exchange were instantly twisted by the burly youth. Nearly everyone in the audience felt completely relaxed as they began to engage in private discussion as to how fast the burly youth would take to finish the battle.

And in stark contrast with the burly youth was the blond youth, Kevin, who came out from the left passageway. Kevin’s expression looked extremely distraught as though he was feeling very nervous. His eyes were burning with fury, and he did not appear as relaxed as the burly youth.

Kevin had gotten his wish of being the first to battle. In fact, this did not comply with the rules as the rules stipulated that they could not use Tianji’s horse-racing strategy. They had to go in

order of weakest to strongest for the battle. Regardless of how bad Kevin was, he should have been stronger than Ye Jiaquan and the three rookies that were randomly roped in.

However, [Zeus] clearly did not mind if [Gaia] used a Tianji horse-racing strategy. This was because in their opinion, their weakest horse could beat [Gaia]'s strongest horse.

The elderly God of Swords walked to the middle of the arena as the noisy audience slowly quietened down. The match was about to begin.

Kevin and the burly youth walked to their ready positions under the God of Swords' indication and stood a hundred meters apart.

And this battle exchange was somewhat special because the both of them did not bring any weapons. To not bring any weapons in a battle exchange that permitted weapons meant that the both of them were Psionites that relied on physical techniques.

Such Psionites were already rare in an era of “systematic weapon heritage”. Offensive skills had slowly developed from an “era of punches and kicks” to an “era of weapons”. There was even a trend of going from an “era of hot and cold weapons” to an “era of purely cold weapons”.

And there were only two likely reasons why the two of them only used their limbs.

Firstly, either the families they came from held on to the tradition that was the “era of punches and kicks”, or, secondly, they both had superpowers suitable for “fist and leg-based offensive skills”!

Be it the former or latter, this battle was bound to be extraordinarily exciting because this was a competition of punches meeting flesh, as long as...both sides were nearly equal.

“3, 2, 1...”

The God of Swords shouted for them to prepare themselves as everyone in the audience concentrated. Quite a number of people were already ready to press their stopwatch buttons.

The burly youth put his frivolous attitude away as his eyes turned fierce, as though he was a tiger that had gotten serious.

Kevin took a deep breath. He had vowed to win this battle and smack [Zeus] heavily in the face. He wanted to make Mozzie think of him in a different light.

“Begin!”

The God of Swords’ voice finally boomed as his figure instantly appeared outside the arena. The battle had officially begun!

At that instant, the burly youth rushed out. The frequency of his paces did not seem too fast, but his footsteps were surprisingly

wide. He looked extremely fast as every step on the ground caused a loud reverberation that quaked the ground gently.

He was a Strength-based Psionite!

The audience and Kevin arrived at the same judgment simultaneously. In fact, it was enough to come up with this judgment from the burly youth's appearance. However, the tumultuous way he ran had confirmed their speculations.

Compared to the burly youth's vigorous charge forward, Kevin remained motionless. He did not move, but only slowly stretched out his hands, in a posture ready to face the upcoming blow.

The audience was stunned.

The skinny blond teenager wanted to clash head-on with a Strength-based Psionite, especially after he had the immense momentum from running a hundred meters?

A few experienced audience laughed because they realized the inkling behind the matter.

From the looks of it, the blond youth was an Agility-based Psionite, and this fake move of his was meant to dodge the burly youth's charge at the last moment before launching a counteroffensive.

This was a common tactic used by Agility-based Psionites against

Strength-based Psionites. It was a tried and tested method!

The burly youth was about to fall for it!

The corner of Kevin's lips gradually turned into a cold smile. Yes, the fool that was charging at him had fallen into his trap, but it was different from the audience's guess. He was not waiting to attack after dodging. In fact, it was the opposite, he wanted to clash head on!

Why did Kevin use his limbs? There were two reasons. Firstly, his superpower was suitable for fist and leg-based offensive skills.

He possessed a superpower called [Price of Might]!

By using a portion of his psionic power and stamina, he could temporarily increase his physical strength. However, when using the [Price of Might], he would be left immobile.

This superpower was sacrificing mobility to exchange for an explosive power!

As a result, the true side of Kevin was—a Strength-based Psyker!

Secondly, the offensive skill he grasped was a single-target offensive skill with extremely destructive power—Black Bear Dominating Palm!

Through such a combination, his destructive power was immeasurable!

If the burly youth faced his palm strike head on, he would definitely be instantly defeated!

Kevin slowly raised up his palm and watched as his opponent rushed at him. At the same time, the burly youth who had already raised up his fist had a more intense smile on his face.

Approaching!

Approaching!

The moment was about to come!

Everyone watched in gaped silence. This made Mozzie's eyes emit sparkles as the palm strike that would make the burly youth regret terribly was about to be struck out!

This palm strike was named Black Bear Dominating Palm!

It was a slap Kevin had prepared to slap [Zeus] heavily in the face!

The burly youth rushed in front of Kevin with an angry bellow. With a powerful frontal impulse, he raised his fist and smashed it forward!

The fist winds whistled in a way that sounded like the crack of thunder!

“Ha!”

Kevin roared out and struck out his right palm towards that fist!

“Black Bear Dominating Palm!”

It appeared as though Kevin’s body was burning with a blackish-red flame. The blackish-red flame seemed like sparkling waves that formed blackish-red ripples, but also looked like a flame that was about to crack and burst out.

“Boom!”

Kevin struck out with his palm as the air surrounding him instantly exploded. A layer of the steel surface in front of him peeled off as the steel plates began boiling as a result of his palm wind.

However, the burly youth who was clearly rushing towards his palm had vanished at the instant Kevin struck out!

No, that was not true disappearance. He only disappeared from Kevin’s vision!

The audience stared with widened eyes because they clearly saw

the burly youth's speed suddenly become as fast as lightning when he came in front of Kevin. Rounding about Kevin, he appeared behind him and his tightly clenched fist turned into a hand chop at that instant!

It was too late for Kevin to respond. Even if he could react, the tremendous inertia after striking out "Black Bear Dominating Palm" had completely frozen his body.

The burly youth's hand chop had landed on Kevin's neck without any suspense.

"Putong!"

This hand chop was done without going overboard, but it was just the perfect amount of strength to knock Kevin unconscious. As his eyes rolled back, he plopped down to the metallic ground with a thud.

"Zeus wins!"

The elderly God of Swords declared the outcome of the battle in a deadpan manner.

The burly youth revealed a nasty smile and looked at the dumbfounded audience and loudly said, "I'm actually an Agility-based assassin. Hahahaha..."

The burly youth's blatant laughter echoed throughout the

stadium.

Life is like a theater.

But one could not jump to a conclusion as to who would clinch the title of Academy Award for Best Actor till the very last moment!

Chapter 195: Why Must A Fatso Make Things Difficult For A Former Fatso

The burly youth guffawed and after a moment of stunned silence, the audience exploded, hooting and hollering.

This was all the same old fashioned outcome!

The blond teenager looked scrawny but was extremely powerful.

As for the burly youth, he looked stout, but his speed was stunning.

Yet, they had used the same strategy of tricking each other, with the outcome of having the audience fooled!

However, the final result was a proof that the burly youth's skills were better—skills being acting skills.

The audience erupted into applause and screams. Regardless of what methods were used, there was no doubt that the outcome of the battle happened very fast!

The audience began reporting the outcome of their time tracking. Most people reported times of approximately seven seconds, while the host's time was seven and a half seconds, which the audience finally agreed as to be the standard timing.

The burly youth looked extremely displeased. He shook his head and said with a sigh that there was no chance for him to obtain first place before walking off.

The audience were collectively rendered speechless, but they could not help but begin to feel a sense of anticipation.

If seven seconds was not enough to obtain first place, what sort of monsters were the [Zeus] rookies? Or to put it in other words, how weak were the [Gaia] rookies in their eyes?

...

In the three matches that followed, it sufficiently showcased the differences in strength. The extreme levels of posturing could be considered perverse and sick.

For the second match, the [Gaia] rookie, who was chosen just to make the numbers and did not even have any stage lines, suffered defeat in six seconds.

For the third match, the rookie that did not dare say anything domineering during the pre-battle declaration suffered defeat in five seconds.

For the fourth match, the rookie that showcased his acting skills during the pre-battle declaration suffered defeat in four seconds.

With that, [Gaia]'s battle exchange delegation lost the entire

exchange with four matches lost. If the times of the posturing before the match began was added up, the [Zeus] rookie delegation had obtained victory in just twenty-two seconds!

Even though the audience were aware of this likely outcome, they were still dumbfounded by such a development.

For a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills, the [Zeus] rookies gave all they had at the onset. Every move they used was nearly an instant kill technique they kept secret. If not for One-Pun and the elderly God of Swords being the referees, the [Gaia] rookies that were there just to make up the numbers would probably have been killed.

However, it could not be denied that all the instant kill techniques used were extremely showy. It made the audience give their kudos, and the cheering immediately biased itself, as though this was no longer [Gaia]'s home ground.

The members of the audience who truly supported [Gaia] sunk their faces and remained silent. There were three rounds left, but the highlight of the remaining three rounds was if the [Zeus] rookies were able to break the four-second record.

Furthermore, in the last three rounds, the two super rookies, the Ye siblings, would be fighting!

In a blink of an eye, the fifth match was about to begin. The combatants walked in from their respective passageways from both ends.

The audience was stunned seeing the two people who walked out, but they revealed gleeful smiles.

On the right, there was a female whopper about two meters in height and was so fat that she looked like a ball.

And on the left, it was a petite and charming girl with cute looks and orange-red pigtails.

This battle exchange was going to be interesting.

...

When Mozzie appeared, the audience began whistling and exclaimed in amazement “how cute” she was. The [Gaia] rookies in the spectator stands were also asking each other if they knew of the cute girl’s identity, but none of them knew the answer.

Without a doubt, Mozzie’s cuteness made her extremely likable.

And the female whopper stood in stark contrast against the cute Mozzie. Just her footsteps alone caused the ground to rumble, and her stance seemed quite formidable.

There was no doubt that this female whopper was a Strength-based Psionite.

The moment the female whopper appeared, she pointed at Mozzie and said, “I’ll squash you flat!”

The audience broke out into a cold sweat for Mozzie. Clearly, the female whopper felt great resentment over Mozzie’s cute image.

Mozzie giggled and said, “This Mosquito shall look forward to it. Hehe, let me tell you a secret. This Mosquito was just as fat as you the day before yesterday!”

The audience were amused when they heard this. It was clearly a joke for such a cute girl to say that she was very fat two days ago. No, based on the circumstances, this was a taunt!

The audience immediately gave Mozzie a big thumbs up.

This cute chick’s courage was commendable.

The female whopper immediately stared at her and said with an explosive temper, “Are you mocking me? Fine, I’ll forget about the hundred Psionic Condensing Pills. I want to slowly squash you to death!”

“Sigh, no one believes the truth anymore in this age.”

Mozzie cutely stuck out her tongue. What she said was indeed the truth, and there was no mockery in her words, but she definitely would not mention Shi Xiaobai’s massaging skill.

What a joke! Not everyone was worthy to enjoy Lord Shi Xiaobai's massaging skills!

The female whopper's nostrils flared with hot gasses as her face turned red with anger. However, she no longer spoke but began cracking her knuckles that sounded loudly like explosions while staring furiously at Mozzie.

The audience drew a gasp and began to worry for Mozzie. Due to the great difference in looks, the members of the audience who were supporting [Zeus] immediately changed sides and began supporting Mozzie.

The God of Swords noticed that the duo who were standing a hundred meters away from each other did not bring any weapons with them, which clearly meant that a battle of flesh meeting flesh would occur. However, the great difference in body size meant that the bodily battle would pain his eyes.

The elderly God of Swords coughed and shouted, "Begin".

The moment he said this, the two girls simultaneously began running. The female whopper moved extraordinarily slowly, as though she was walking, but every step she took quaked the ground.

And what made everyone at a loss whether to laugh or cry was that the petite Mozzie was running equally slowly as well.

The audience found it amusing.

Such a cute chick wants to show off her acting as well?

“I’ll squash you flat!”

As the female whopper ran, all the fat on her body began quivering. Her eyes were burning with fury as though she was trying her best to run faster, but her heavy body had already limited her. Her face was completely red in color, making her look frightening.

“Come on, This Mosquito is waiting!”

Mozzie was also running and her speed was very slow as well, but her posture was extremely cute. When she ran, her hands seemed to move like a duck’s waddle. In addition to her cute face, the cuteness overload made some people bleed from their noses.

Although they were moving like molasses, their momentum was staggering. In the eyes of the audience, it was as if two knights were charging at each other.

Finally, the distance between the two was reduced to ten meters.

The female whopper shocked everyone with an action. With an angry bellow, she lifted her humongous belly and slammed it at

Mozzie.

Mozzie's actions were equally astounding. She turned to her side and used her shoulder to slam heavily into the female whopper's belly!

Suddenly, both the female whopper's stomach and Mozzie's shoulder flashed a metallic sheen!

“Psionic Hardening!”

The keen-eyed audience immediately screamed.

Chapter 196: King's Beginner Sword

The defense system was divided into four forms, Psionic Hardening, Psionic Shield, Psionic Barrier and Psionic Domain. Psionic Hardening was considered core out of all the forms. By using Psionic Power to harden and strengthen one's body, it would result in one's bodily defense to greatly increase.

And at this moment, Mozzie and Whopper had both used Psionic Hardening. They were planning on using their own bodies to clash head on!

“Mt. Tai Crush!”

The female whopper shouted as she came crashing downwards at Mozzie with her hardened stomach.

“Patron Landslide!”

Mozzie's eyes stared as she slammed her hardened shoulder at the fat girl!

“Peng!”

The two of them had crashed head on resulting in an ear-splitting blast from the collision. It was as if two gigantic boulders had struck each other, but there was the sound of bones shattering immediately following that.

Mozzie had only lasted a second before she was sent flying backward. Her body flew up into the sky as though she had been struck by a speeding train!

The audience held their breaths as they felt their hearts being tugged. They shouted in their minds, why didn't you dodge!

Mozzie spun a few times in mid-air as she spat out a mouthful of blood. As the blood splattered through the air, it was as if a beautiful red lotus had bloomed under the sunlight. However, she slowly revealed a smile by the corner of her lips.

Why did she not dodge?

Because if it were Lord Shi Xiaobai, he would definitely not dodge!

Besides, didn't Lord Shi Xiaobai once say that the only failure was failing after giving your all?

Although she had suddenly slimmed down, she could not immediately change her combat style. Hence, her combat style was still the same style as when she was a fat girl. Clashing head on was her giving her best!

Mozzie crashed to the ground but remained conscious. However, she no longer had the strength to stand up.

At this moment, a loud boom resounded not far from her as the ground quaked suddenly.

The female whopper had wobbled a few times before losing her balance. She had stumbled to the ground!

The audience stared at the arena with widened eyes. Mozzie's Patron Landslide had knocked down the whopper!

Although the whopper quickly regained her footing, while Mozzie could no longer fight, the scene was still unbelievable to many. After the audience were left in shock, they suddenly crazily applauded the fallen Mozzie with hearts filled with respect. This courageous collision had crashed into the hearts of the crowd.

As the darn host did not introduce them, the audience still did not know Mozzie's name, but all of them shouted one word in unison

“Gaia! Gaia! Gaia!”

Despite the elderly God of Swords announcing that Zeus had won in a deadpan manner, the word “Gaia” echoed into the sky!

It was as though the extremely fearless collision had dispersed the gloomy clouds of the four consecutive losses from before!

The female whopper's expression was extremely ugly. She never expected that a scrawny girl was able to engage in a head-on

collision with her to the point of making her lose her balance. She had spent seven seconds to win the battle, but the scene was as though she had lost.

The female whopper glanced at Mozzie, who was receiving treatment from medical personnel, and felt disgusted, as though she had eaten a fly. With a cold grunt, she left the venue.

The medical personnel produced a pale yellow glow from his hand as it covered Mozzie's shoulder. Although Mozzie felt a tinge of pain, she could not help but laugh out when she heard the stadium shouting "Gaia". Her delightful laughter was like pearly bells.

...

...

Riko's apartment, Shi Xiaobai's room.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly opened his eyes. Numerous beams of golden light flashed in his black pupils, as though they were two stars that had suddenly lit up.

Moments later, the golden light in his eyes dimmed as he slowly regained consciousness.

"Phew..."

Shi Xiaobai exhaled a long breath as his eyes blinked a few times. The corner of his mouth slowly cracked into a smile.

“From today onwards, This King shall add on another title to the billions of titles he has—King of Sword Kings, The Power of One Strike, Heaven and Earth Succumbing!”

Shi Xiaobai looked up and guffawed, “Wahaha...”

The back of Shi Xiaobai’s right hand flashed twice as a golden beam bloomed. As a golden blob of light floated out, the fair loli landed lightly on its feet.

The loli rolled her eyes when she saw Shi Xiaobai’s high-spirited looks. She was rendered rather speechless because Beginner Sword only had five basic motions—slash, stab, uppercut, sweep, cleave. Shi Xiaobai had spent nearly a day’s time to understand the basics. This meant he was a super sword art retard not seen once in ten thousand years.

The tiny sword spirit could not bear telling Shi Xiaobai the brutal truth.

Sigh, it’s best to cut him some slack.

Shi Xiaobai stopped laughing and looked eagerly at the loli and said, “Hey, it’s time for the next move!”

Shi Xiaobai had savored the sweetness gained from comprehending sword techniques.

The loli felt rather helpless as she faked a cute loli image and said, “Big Brother, it has been twenty-three hours since you began comprehending Beginner Sword. If Little Black did not remember wrongly, doesn’t Big Brother have something important today?”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this he was taken aback as he said in disbelief, “Twenty-three hours? Are you telling This King that he spent twenty-three hours to gain insight into Beginner Sword!?”

Shi Xiaobai remembered that the tiny sword spirit in front of him had mentioned that it would take normal people half an hour to comprehend Beginner Sword. Those with better talent in sword arts would comprehend it faster, but if he had spent twenty-three hours, didn’t that mean...

The loli hesitated for a moment before nodding and said, “Yup, Big Brother took twenty-three hours.”

Shi Xiaobai drew a cold gasp as the light in his eyes wavered.

The loli’s eyes looked as though they could not bear the truth, but the truth was just too cruel.

“That’s truly great!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes flashed with burning excitement as he roared

with laughter and said, “How can this Beginner Sword be any ordinary Beginner Sword when even This King, who is the King of Sword Kings, has to spend twenty-three hours to comprehend? Yes, this must be the legendary King’s Beginner Sword.”

The loli stared dumbfounded.

Heavens, the legendary King’s Beginner Sword? How can your ability at misunderstanding matters be so amazing?

The loli quickly realized that the excitement in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes was not faked. It was as though he had comprehended a technique that didn’t exist, the King’s Beginner Sword.

The loli could only lament in her heart that the narcissism Shi Xiaobai suffered was invincible. His ability at understanding matters was a rare wonder in the world.

The loli pouted and with a slight sigh, she transformed into a golden light before entering Shi Xiaobai’s right hand.

Shi Xiaobai felt a prolonged excitement before he recalled that twenty-three hours had passed. The battle exchange might have already begun, or it might have already ended.

With that, Shi Xiaobai could no longer sit back. He had agreed to Riko’s request of “smacking faces”. Although he did not know whose faces he needed to smack, how could he go back on a King’s Promise that was worth its weight in gold?

Shi Xiaobai immediately pushed the door open and walked into the living room. There, he saw Riko sitting on a sofa, with a notebook computer on the table.

Riko was tapping heavily on the keyboard at an extremely rapid pace, as though she was venting her tempestuous wrath.

Chapter 197: The King's Fury

Despite Shi Xiaobai standing behind Riko, Riko was so engrossed in her furious typing that she failed to notice him standing behind her.

Shi Xiaobai stared at the screen out of curiosity, and soon, the excitement from learning the King's Beginner Sword gradually vanished. Slowly, a cold chill appeared in his black pair of eyes.

Riko was replying on a discussion board.

She would open every thread and in each of them, she would rapidly type a response to the comments.

Shi Xiaobai slowly came to an understanding from the threads Riko had opened, and he also finally understood what the “face-smacking” task Riko had entrusted him was.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned cold as though cold flames of anger burned in his eyes.

He did not disturb Riko but silently turned around and left the apartment. Going at full speed with Crab Steps, he charged down Steel City's roads as though he was a ravaging beast!

“Four consecutive losses in twenty-two seconds for the battle exchange. This year's Gaia rookies are the weakest in history.”

“The cute chick collapsed to the ground after spitting out blood. Gaia is doomed sooner or later.”

“Heartless declared that if he can’t finish his battle in three seconds, he would feed a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to the pigs.”

“I’m waiting for the Ye siblings to astound the audience, and for the Gaia rookie delegation to win best-supporting actors.”

“Today, I will be ashamed for Gaia, tomorrow Gaia will use me to hide from shame.”

“Gaia’s rookie delegation is all trash. I won’t be able to do anything if it were me, but I’ll still flame. Even if you can’t accept it, hold it in for me.”

“ ... ”

Line after line of thread titles flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes. He sneered as he ran at full speed ahead while clenching his fists.

Well done, all of you have succeeded in infuriating This King.

Then prepare to face The King’s fury!

...

...

The sixth battle exchange was about to begin as the combatants on both sides were walking into the arena. The atmosphere felt roused up, and describing it as an explosive atmosphere was not one bit an exaggeration.

Sunless, who wore an azure-colored dress and had a silver sword lodged by her waist, slowly entered the arena. She was very beautiful, and her fair skin surpassed the whiteness of snow. Her face was like a blooming flower, and her bearing was even more distinguished. That pureness that rivaled water, the cold as ice temperament made people only dare to watch from a distance, but they could not bear to remove her from their sights.

Sunless was not one bit less popular than Heartless in China because she too was a super rookie. Furthermore, she was a famous ice-beauty. In addition, it was well known that the level of her sword attainment was on par with Heartless.

How sexually provocative would this young girl be in a few more years?

The audience offered her the warmest cheers and screams.

And the girl with brown short hair on the other side of the arena similarly was met with ear-splitting cheers.

Compared to Sunless, Mu Yuesheng was not considered pretty, but her delicate and refined face was like a refreshing wind on a hot summer day. Her silent composure was not like Sunless' coldness that distanced people from her, but it was a stubborn determination one would feel affectionate towards.

Nearly every Gaia rookie knew this girl with short brown hair. Some called her the "most hard working rookie king", and there were others who called her the "dandelion who inexplicably landed in Gaia", but the rookies would always be in a state of admiration when they mentioned her name.

Amongst the current batch of rookies, she was the rookie who won nearly every commendation. This was because while she possessed a certain degree of talent, she had used her heart touching diligence to become the best rookie in all of Gaia.

To be at the ninth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm at the age of fourteen, it would have been quite an impressive achievement even at a well-known higher institute of learning. It was hard to imagine that a "cultivation cripple" who had an E-Class Mind Expanse could achieve such results.

No one questioned her future because she was a Psyker with a rare A class superpower. At higher psionic cultivation realms, the effects of one's Mind Expanse would also decrease.

However, no one could be sure of the present her. Regardless of the case, there was a gulf between the ninth and tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. First-tier rookies had to be at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. They would have to wait for this

year's "Psionic Soul Sanctuary" to open and vie for Heaven Earth Psionic Souls to enter the Psionic Soul Realm.

And if she did not reach the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm before this year's "Psionic Soul Sanctuary" opened, she would have to wait another year.

The Gaia rookies applauded Mu Yuesheng. The residents of Steel City would occasionally also hear of Mu Yuesheng's name, so they too were enlightened when they heard from the rookies

sitting beside them. Immediately, they joined the applauding ranks.

She was the strongest rookie in Gaia, and also the hope of the battle exchange.

If her opponent was not Sunless, the audience even believed that Mu Yuesheng had the chance to win one precious victory.

However, there were no 'ifs' in this world. Mu Yuesheng's opponent was the super rookie, Sunless.

...

The two young girls who exuded their own unique charms stood opposite each other. Both of them were people of few words, so none of them spoke to each other.

Mu Yuesheng stared at Sunless, who stood a hundred meters away from her. She felt slightly nervous, but she was mostly feeling the excitement as well as...anger.

She was furious over Heartless' declaration about the hundred Psionic Condensing Pills as well as the no holds barred manner of fighting the Zeus rookies had engaged in.

As a result, she was determined to let everyone know that the Gaia rookie delegation was not trash. Be it Kevin or Mozzie, they had done their best, and she would also...redeem Gaia's reputation.

“Begin!”

The moment the elderly God of Swords' voice resounded, icy-blue electric bolts crackled around Mu Yuesheng, like they were maniacal icy-blue snakes. The audience exclaimed while the elderly God of Swords flashed a look of surprise in his eyes.

Sunless remained calm but she did not unsheathe her sword, nor did she move. Compared to the other five Zeus rookies who were eager to finish the battle, the hundred Psionic Condensing Pills did not entice her at all. She was in no hurry to end the match as she quietly watched the dancing electric bolts.

Her eyes flashed a look of helplessness, but it was undetectable, nor did anyone realize it.

Mu Yuesheng raised her right hand as electric beams gathered into a ball. She focused her eyes at Sunless and noticed her inaction. She felt somewhat puzzled but also felt slightly exasperated.

“Electro-Cannon!”

Mu Yuesheng did not hesitate as an icy-blue electric beam the width of a water bucket shot out from her right hand!

The audience stared at the electro-cannon with widened eyes as it traversed a hundred meters in a blink of an eye and arrived in front of Sunless. The surging energy caused the ground to boil as the air ruptured. If one was struck by this electro-cannon, the consequences would be disastrous. Even if they were hit by the peripherals of the wave, it was likely to be quite a terrible outcome.

However, Sunless did not dodge or conjure a Psionic Barrier. Instead, she quietly watched as the electro-cannon shot towards her.

“Pu!”

Suddenly in an indiscernible flash, the bolt filled with tremendous amounts of destructive power abruptly dissipated with a poof at the moment it was about to strike Sunless. It turned into a light blue mist.

It was unknown when Sunless had unsheathed her silver sword, but the shimmering cold light from the silver sword was as cold as her eyes.

There was an uproar from the audience while Mu Yuesheng's expression changed.

The audience had failed to discern what had happened, but they knew that Sunless must have unsheathed her sword in an instant and slashed out once.

However, that strike had directly dissipated the high voltage electric bolt into a mist. It did not cut through the electro-cannon but had instead decimated it completely. Even the explosive force was extinguished.

How could sword techniques achieve this?

How could such a sword technique exist in this world?

Chapter 198: Since The Heavens Made The Moon, Why Did They Make The Sun Too

Mu Yuesheng found it unbelievable as she gave a deep bellow and shot out another electro-cannon beam!

This time, everyone's focus was on Sunless. They finally managed to see her motion. She did not slash out with her sword and instead trembled gently. Just this gentle tremble was enough to instantly extinguish the electro-cannon!

Everyone was appalled, but Sunless finally moved. She began running at Mu Yuesheng, but the way she ran was not like an otherworldly fairy in everyone's imagination. Instead, she kept her body low, and her hands were held to her rear, as though she was an astute sprinter.

Sunless' eyes were cold, but she was extremely fast. In a blink of an eye, she had arrived in front of Mu Yuesheng.

Mu Yuesheng had faltered for a moment since she had yet to recover from the jolt of her electro-cannon being dissipated, but upon seeing Sunless streaking towards her, she was delighted rather than alarmed.

When Sunless reached a distance ten meters away, the sparking electric bolts that were like testy pixies formed a barrier around her.

“Heavenly Lightning Summoning!”

The electro-barrier which had a resplendent goldenness amidst the icy-blue suddenly blasted outwards! It formed a circular current of gold and blue electric currents that diffused out, and instantly enveloped Sunless within it!

Despite the bluish-golden electric currents surging at her like a wave, there was no hint of panic in Sunless’ eyes. She flicked her wrist and with a gentle twist of the silver sword in her hand, all the electric bolts extinguished. She raised her sword and stabbed straight at Mu Yuesheng, as though her sword had merged with her as one.

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes violently constricted as lightning bolts engulfed her before she teleported to a distance a hundred meters away. At that critical moment, she had breathtakingly used Lightning Flashstep to dodge the simple stab of the sword.

When Sunless’ strike missed, she stopped and did not continue her pursuit. She was just as the Sun Tzu’s Art of War described, she waited for an opening and acted like a streaking rabbit.

“Wow, interesting!”

A frenzy swept the audience, just a short exchange of moves was truly enthralling!

Mu Yuesheng took a deep breath and began to knit her brows

gently. Although she had not received any damage from the exchange of blows, she had been disadvantaged in every way possible. Sunless could dissipate her electric bolts instantly in an effortless manner. This had taken her by surprise and had overturned all that she knew.

“I will have to use that move.”

Mu Yuesheng looked at Sunless. The distant girl that appeared like a fairy astounded her greatly, as though she could not stir up the tiniest of waves in front of her, but similarly, it kindled an intense fighting spirit in her.

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes focused as she transformed into a bolt of lightning before charging forward!

“Paramount Electro Field!”

Mu Yuesheng disappeared. As she vanished from the audience’s vision, an icy-blue electric bolt whizzed through the area simultaneously. Mu Yuesheng’s figure would only appear at the instant the electric bolt turned directions. It whizzed around in a chaotic manner that made it difficult for the naked eye to capture.

“Buzz!”

The electric currents generated buzzing sounds, as though that was the only sound in the world.

At that instant, nearly everyone in the audience stood up. This sort of motion was nearly instantaneous. There was no way anyone could react if she suddenly attacked.

There was no way to dodge such a move, so one could only rely on a Psionic Barrier's defense. However, could a Psionic Barrier be able to defend against the attack Mu Yuesheng was about to strike out?

However, Sunless remained calm despite having the threat of being attacked at any moment. It was an adverse situation with no means for parrying. Even though Mu Yuesheng had brushed past her once, she stood there silent and she did not even frown even when the resulting strong wind blew up her long hair.

The audience stared at the arena with widened eyes and held their breath, afraid that they would miss the upcoming moment. When would Mu Yuesheng make her sudden strike, and how was Sunless going to deal with it?

At this moment, Sunless suddenly took a quick step to the right and raised her silver sword in her right hand.

“Buzz, buzz, buzz... Poof!”

The sounds of the electric vibrations dissipated with a poof when Sunless raised her sword. As for the icy-blue electric current that was moving in a chaotic fashion, it suddenly dissipated like it never existed from the very beginning.

Mu Yuesheng's motion came to an abrupt halt. When she came to a stop, she did not dare make the slightest movement, because Sunless had raised her sword to a point right in front of Mu Yuesheng's neck.

Sunless did not turn her body. She did not even turn her head. Raising her sword, her expression was calm, as though she was an ancient well that never saw a ripple.

“Zeus wins.”

The elderly God of Swords declared the outcome of the battle.

The audience fell silent for a few seconds before they broke out into raucous applause and screams. It was an indescribable and stunning scene. Against the lightning fast electric current that could not be discerned with the naked eye, Sunless had only taken a single step and used her sword to disintegrate Mu Yuesheng's attack that had yet to strike. She had directly ended the battle!

Sunless slowly sheathed her sword and turned around to leave. She did not like scenes with deafening cheers.

“What...sort of sword technique was that!?” Mu Yuesheng inquired softly.

She had a somewhat dejected expression. She had done her best but she was still thoroughly defeated. She did not even know what her opponent had done. She believed that even if she was not

considered a super rookie, she should have been able to last for a period of time, but she never expected to be so easily steamrolled.

Was there such a large ravine that existed between her and a super rookie that prevented them from seeing each other?

Mu Yuesheng's voice was nearly inaudible in the earsplitting cheers, but Sunless heard her. Her footsteps came to a halt and she slowly shook her head and said, "Did not...use sword techniques."

Sunless' voice was completely different from one's imagination. It did not sound cold and aloof but sounded like she was an introverted girl. She resembled a girl who seldom spoke. It was tender, indifferent and very pleasing to the ears.

However, this pleasant voice sounded like a thunderbolt in Mu Yuesheng's ears. She turned her head with great difficulty at Sunless and gaped her mouth, unsure of what to say.

Had she been completely defeated without the use of sword techniques?

Mu Yuesheng suddenly felt an instinctive oddity. She subconsciously tried to take a deep breath as her eyes nearly popped out...

Where was the air?

Sunless turned to look into Mu Yuesheng's eyes. She remained

expressionless, but this did not mean she barred people from her shell, she was just inept at producing any expressions. Just like her voice, it was clear that she was just inept at speaking when one heard her.

“Super...power.”

Sunless softly said the word before turning to leave. She did not even look back.

Mu Yuesheng pondered for a few moments before realizing what had happened. A wry smile hung across the corner of her lips. This girl...was a nemesis she was helpless against.

...

By the side of the arena, the elderly God of Swords and One-Pun were standing side by side. The God of Swords shook his head and sighed. His expression looked as though he felt a tinge of pity.

“This child is very good and is a talent that can be molded. However, meeting Sunless is like a mouse meeting a cat. She had no means of resisting. Unfortunately, you won’t have the chance to witness Sunless’ sword techniques for now.”

Although the elderly God of Swords sighed, the smile on his face was filled with pride and smugness.

One-Pun was silent before saying moments later, “If I’m not

wrong, Sunless' superpower...has something to do with air?"

The elderly God of Swords immediately grinned and said with a laugh, "Vacuum!"

One-Pun shook his head with a wry smile and was unsure of his words.

A vacuum's resistance was nearly infinitely large. Extremely high voltage was needed to cause a dielectric breakdown. With Mu Yuesheng's present strength, how was it possible for her electric bolts to traverse a vacuum?

It was no wonder that in front of Sunless, Mu Yuesheng's electric bolts would instantly dissipate. She was a natural nemesis of Mu Yuesheng.

...

The audience discussed the short but exciting fight amidst warm applause. There was no lack of speculations, and the members of the audience who were in the dark had deified Sunless' sword technique. They believed Sunless could slash apart electric beams, and they placed her on a divine pedestal.

The three-minute interval in between the battles quickly ended the lively discussion.

When Heartless walked into the arena, the audience

spontaneously quietened down. The seventh battle of the battle exchange was about to begin, and it was also the final battle.

Similarly, this was also the battle the audience looked forward to the most.

It was not because the battle would be greatly fascinating, but because Heartless had declared that he would finish the battle within three seconds. This meant that they had a chance of seeing Heartless using his full strength.

At this moment, a burly figure walked out from the other passageway. That savage face was still as frightening as ever, but after the pre-battle declaration segment, the audience had confused thoughts over the blockhead's aggressive looks but kind personality.

Ye Jiaquan walked into the arena and faced Heartless from afar.

“Long time no see.”

Ye Jiaquan looked at Heartless and scratched his head, as though he was a bashful large kid.

Heartless remained expressionless, but his eyes were cold. He said coldly, “I never expected that after so many years, you are still trash.”

When the audience heard this sentence, they immediately

quietened down.

What was the situation? The two of them knew each other from before?

At this moment, a cold beam of light flashed past. It was a silver sword that emitted a clangorous sound when it struck the ground in front of Ye Jiaquan.

As the audience looked at the silver sword, their eyes widened.

This sword...

Wasn't this Sunless' sword?

...

Outside the stadium, a hurtling figure came to a halt just before it hit the stadium walls.

He took a few steps back. His expression looked calm, but his eyes looked cold.

“This King is here.”

...

Chapter 199: The Former Child Prodigy

The silver sword vibrated for a moment after it stabbed into the steel floor before slowly coming to a stop. The clear, loud hum reverberated before dulling.

Everyone was shocked when they saw this sword because the silver sword had a purplish-gold hilt. Its blade was carved with dragon patterns and it was identified at a single glance that this was Sunless' purplish-gold silver dragon sword.

And the sword had darted over and stabbed into the ground directly in front of Ye Jiaquan.

Everyone quickly turned their heads to the origin of the flying sword and saw an azure-dressed person standing at the entrance to a passageway, in the intersection of shadows and light. It was none other than Sunless. However, the shadows were masking her looks, so it was unknown what her expression was. There was no way to guess at her intentions as to why she sent her beloved sword darting over.

Suddenly, while everyone was still steeped in shocked, a gentle voice resounded. The voice was delicate, as though it was a winter's sunlight which was soft and non-glaring. It was not cold, but it wasn't entirely warm. It was if it had a tiny bit of cautious desire.

“Brother, are you using a sword?”

This voice was very soft, but with every member of the audience turning silent, there were still many people who heard this.

Everyone who heard this revealed surprised looks because the voice came from the passageway and was evidently Sunless' voice. However, her question was puzzling. Sunless' purplish-gold silver dragon sword was right in front of the blockhead's body, but she had asked Heartless if he was using a sword?

And at this moment, Heartless suddenly spoke. His voice was cold like a sword's blade. "Pull the sword out, Ye Youtian."

Heartless said those words apparently to the simpleton with ruthless looks but a kind heart. And Heartless had called him "Ye Youtian"?

Who was Ye Youtian?

Why did this name sound somewhat familiar?

Many members of the audience seemed to have doubts in their minds flash when they heard this name.

"Ye Youtian...Could it be that Ye Youtian?" Suddenly said with an exclamation.

The audience stands quickly burst into a flurry of discussions.

“Ah, I remember. Isn’t Ye Youtian...the eldest son of the Ye family?”

“Oh...Ye Youtian from a decade ago?”

“Heavens, this blockhead is that Ye Youtian?”

“That’s right. That Ye Youtian is Heartless and Sunless’ elder brother. Since Sunless called the blockhead ‘Ye Youtian’, this Ye Youtian must be that Ye Youtian.”

“ ... ”

All sorts of gasps and startled voices resounded as the audience stands immediately turned into a cacophony.

At a particular seat, a seven-year-old boy tugged at the sleeves of a man beside him and asked curiously, “Daddy, Daddy, who is the Ye Youtian they are talking about?”

The man turned his head and stroked the boy’s head and said, “This Ye Youtian was a child prodigy known throughout the country a decade ago. At a young age, he had attained a certain level of sword arts. At the age of six, he was invited to Heroes Central’s Spring Festival Gala to perform his swordplay. It had caused quite a sensation.”

The boy exclaimed loudly, “Wow, that’s amazing!”

That man used a tone with slight regretfulness as he said, "But unfortunately, for some reason, the child prodigy suddenly turned average after the age of seven. Not only was his sword arts gradually surpassed by his younger brother and sister, who were one year younger than him, even his psionic cultivation was gradually surpassed by his peers. Back then, people said that Ye Youtian was being placed on too high a pedestal that he became overly conceited and became lazy towards cultivation. This resulted in him becoming mediocre. Many people would use Ye Youtian's story to warn their children against being too carried away because of a momentary lead. Therefore, Ye Youtian's story became well known. Later on, it was said that Ye Youtian left the Ye family and his whereabouts were left unknown. Only then did everyone slowly forget this name."

The boy's eyes were filled with confusion.

The man rubbed the boy on the head and said, "Child, a child prodigy who doesn't work hard will become mediocre. So, you must remember that hard work is most important."

Most of the audience present had heard of Ye Youtian's story. After all, this story had happened in the past decade and had profound educative value. A child prodigy like Ye Youtian was like a fleeting comet and was like a short-lived epiphyllum. As for the reason, it was likely an intriguing and thought-provoking story.

As the audience discussed amongst themselves, they finally untangled the situation that had happened.

The reason why Heartless had suddenly offered to “feeding a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to the pigs” for personal reasons was because he had seen Ye Youtian.

The reason why Sunless threw her sword over and said, “Brother, are you using a sword” was because she was addressing her other brother, Ye Youtian.

However, from her affectionate form of address, it appeared as though his younger sister, Sunless, still had deep affections for Ye Youtian. However, the younger brother, Heartless, had a cold attitude. His tone was as sharp as a blade, as though he detested Ye Youtian greatly. What was going on?

And why did the former child prodigy, Ye Youtian, look like this? And why did he appear in Gaia?

The Annihilation division rookies who knew Ye Jiaquan were taken aback. They never expected that Ye Jiaquan, the honest and silly simpleton was previously one of the three sons of the Ye family, the famous child prodigy, Ye Youtian.

As the audience broke out into a flurry of discussion, all their attention was focused on the savage looking but honest sounding simpleton, Ye Jiaquan.

...

...

Sunless asked, “Brother, are you using a sword?”

Heartless said, “Pull the sword out, Ye Youtian.”

Ye Jiaquan’s honest looking expression slowly disappeared. As he looked at the purplish-golden silver dragon sword in front of him, his eyes glazed over, as though he was immersed in distant thoughts.

Heartless’ eyebrows gradually knitted together. It was unknown if it was because of the unkind chatter or it was because his patience had worn out.

Heartless coldly said, “Ye Youtian, do you not even have the courage to pull the sword out?”

Ye Jiaquan turned his head to look at Heartless and had a gloomy expression. He said, “Me is not named Ye Youtian, Me is named... Ye Jiaquan.”

Heartless’ face turned even colder when he heard this as he sneered, “Ye Jiaquan, what a nice Ye Jiaquan. Is this the excuse you are using to escape from reality?”

Ye Jiaquan gaped his mouth and met him with silence.

Heartless coldly snorted and said, “It looks like you have

completely lost the courage to hold a sword. Fine, since you have changed your name to Ye Jiaquan, let me see to what extent your cultivation in the fist technique that the Ye family has long abandoned has reached.”

The Ye family were like other family clans that adhered to the tradition of the “era of punches and kicks”, and was famous for it’s Ye family fist techniques. However, now with the society having progressed into the “era of weapons”, the Ye family was gradually replacing fist techniques with sword arts.

Hence, from Heartless’ point of view, Ye Youtian had changed his name to Ye Jiaquan and was using the Ye Family Fist technique as a shield for him to escape from reality.

However, in order to escape from his former shell as a sword prodigy, he had gradually disappeared into the crowd, resulting in the brutal reality of being slowly surpassed by his younger brother and sister.

“Let us begin.”

Heartless looked at the elderly God of Swords and said, “There is nothing more to say between us.”

Chapter 200: A Crush From A Single Sword Strike

Heartless requested for the elderly God of Swords to begin the match, while Ye Jiaquan remained silent.

This intriguing dialogue thus came to an end. Most of the audience could read in between the lines, but they found it incomprehensible why Heartless was so repulsed by his elder brother.

There was a story unknown to all that had presumably happened?

The audience failed to guess at the truth, so they could only focus their attention on the battle that was about to proceed.

Super rookie, Heartless against the former child prodigy, Ye Youtian. It was both a competition between former and present geniuses, and also a showdown between brothers.

Regardless of the case, this was a battle not to be missed.

Before the battle even begun, Heartless had pulled out the black sword behind his back.

The black sword was jet black, but it had a metallic luster to it. Its hilt was similarly black in color, hence, the sword did not possess

any color except black. The black blade appeared somewhat odd, as though it was a heavy blunt sword, but appeared to be extremely sharp that led to instant death.

Heartless had already drawn his sword, but Ye Jiaquan did not pull out the purplish-gold silver dragon sword in front of him. Instead, he took a step past the sword and clenched his fists.

At the passageway, Sunless' bright eyes gradually lost their luster. That beautiful face with a deadpan expression revealed an undetectable hint of melancholy.

The elderly God of Swords glanced at Ye Jiaquan and felt somewhat regretful. He had previously heard of the former sword arts prodigy as well, and had even thought of taking him in as a disciple. But before he managed to do so, he heard of news that the child prodigy was no more.

The matter was very sudden, and it was unimaginable how a talented prodigy would suddenly become like a normal child. The elderly God of Swords did not believe it was a result of laziness, but he did not have the mind to investigate the mystery behind the matter back then. And now, it was already a little too late to consider it.

“Three, two, one...”

The elderly God of Swords sighed. There were numerous geniuses in the world, but the ones who could eventually dazzle were few in number. However, everything in life depended not on

the heavens but on people.

“Begin!”

The elderly God of Swords retreated and the battle began!

The audience held their breaths. They did not even dare blink because Heartless had previously declared before the match that he would end the battle within three seconds.

In that case, the battle would hardly last more than three seconds!

The moment the elderly God of Swords’ declared the commencement of the battle, Heartless raised his black sword high into the sky. Black mists suddenly rose up from the ground. They were not dense, but they crawled up from the ground like vines, and rapidly reached the black sword’s blade.

The audience was astonished. Heartless was planning to end the battle with a single strike a hundred meters away?

Even more surprising was Ye Jiaquan. At this moment, he was in a hunched stance and he had curled his right arm, as though he was planning to punch out.

He was planning on using a fist to meet a sword?

Heartless' eyes were cold, as a cold sneer suffused across his lips.

“Heaven Shrouding Eclipse!”

Heartless slashed out.

A humongous black sword projection fell from the sky as it shrouded the heavens. The sword projected exuded a terrifying aura as it crushed down at Ye Jiaquan. It was as if a gigantic black mountain came crashing down from the sky!

The audience gasped. From a distance, the audience could sense the immense sword energy and terrifying power from the gigantic sword projection. This strike exceeded the Psionic Mortal Realm, so was Heartless putting all his strength into this strike?

Against the sword projection that seemed to crush down like a mountain, Ye Jiaquan did not dodge, nor did he raise a psionic defense. Instead, with a bellow, he punched out at the black sword projection!

His punch was simple, and when it punched out, there were only a few air ripples. Compared to the Heaven Shrouding Eclipse's expansive power, it was like a drop in the bucket.

Was Ye Jiaquan using such a “weak” punch to withstand such a terrifying sword projection?

Some people stared at the arena widely, afraid of missing the

upcoming instant. There were also others who closed their eyes as they could not bear witnessing this scene that resembled an egg striking a rock.

Ye Jiaquan's punch struck that towering sword projection that contained immense sword energy!

“Boom!”

A deafening explosion thundered as the punch struck the black sword projection and dissipated immediately. The crushing black sword projection instantly engulfed Ye Jiaquan, as the black sword projection hit the ground like a waterfall at its end. Black water petals splashed upwards, each containing razor-sharp sword energy. They lacerated the ground with sword scars of varying depths.

“Ah!”

The audience exclaimed!

This sword projection was like surging sword energy. Wouldn't Ye Youtian be mashed into meat pulp after being engulfed by such a sword projection?

The audience held their breaths as they stared at the fading black sword projection, afraid that they would see a mess of flesh and blood.

Slowly, the black shadow dissipated and revealed the true situation under the black shadow. The audience gradually heaved a sigh of relief.

His Excellency One-Pun had already appeared in the sword shadow, while Ye Youtian had his eyes tightly closed. His clothes were completely tattered, and there were a few light lacerations on his arm. However, he had been knocked unconscious by the suppressive power of the sword projection. Under His Excellency One-Pun's protection, he escaped the blade energy without serious injuries.

Thankfully, the referee for this match was His Excellency One-Pun!

“Zeus wins.”

The elderly God of Swords declared the outcome of the battle.

Only then did the audience come round. It was over. Heartless had won. Although it was something to be expected, they were still astonished by the terror of that one strike!

That strike was crushing!

The audience fell silent for a moment before they boiled over!

“Heartless is the strongest! Heartless is the strongest! Heartless is the strongest!”

A cacophony of cheers erupted throughout the stadium!

Heartless lifted his black sword high in the sky with an overbearing expression. As he glanced at the unconscious Ye Jiaquan coldly, he turned to face the crowd and revealed a smile.

Sunless stood by the passageway as she looked at the unconscious Ye Jiaquan. Just as she took a step forward, she retracted her foot. She quietly stood on the spot in a dilemma.

One-Pun quietly carried Ye Jiaquan out of the arena, while the medical staff rushed over.

The elderly God of Swords sighed silently. With his abilities, how could he not tell that Ye Youtian was only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm? This battle was meant to end in a crushing defeat from the beginning. However, he thought that something surprising would happen after Ye Youtian's sudden appearance, but Ye Youtian had still lost without any suspense.

Maybe, Ye Youtian was here to suffer an abject defeat from the beginning?

With this thought in mind, the elderly God of Swords shook his head with a laugh. The sudden degeneration of the former child prodigy probably had an amazing story behind it. However, such past matters were not something an influential outsider like him should intervene.

At this moment, Heartless suddenly gestured for the audience to quieten down. In response, the audience slowly settled down.

Moments later, the deafening cheers fell into silence.

“Everyone, I have an important matter to announce!” Heartless looked at the quietened audience and said.